Yours Truly,

Jno. N. Waddell.

HELIOTYPE PRINTING CO. BOSTON.

627
Waddell, John Newton
Memorials of a Christian Life
28

To my Wife,

WHO, AFTER MY LONG YEARS OF ALTERNATE TRIAL AND RELIEF, WAS SENT TO ME BY A GRACIOUS PROVIDENCE, AT A TIME OF DEEP EARTHLY GLOOM, AS A LIGHT AND A JOY; AND AMID THE CHANGES OF A BUSY LIFE, A SYMPATHISING FRIEND, A WISE COUNSELLOR, AND UNSELFISH SHARER IN JOY AND SORROW; AN EARNEST HELP-MEET IN ALL MY WORK, FOR A QUARTER CENTURY,

This Volume of Reminiscences

IS MOST AFFECTIONATELY DEDICATED,

BY A DEVOTED HUSBAND,

THE AUTHOR.

LA2317
.W3A2

PREFACE.

THE greater portion of a life, now protracted beyond the limit assigned to man, having been spent in close connection with the practical work of education in the South and Southwest, and my individual labors having been devoted, to a far greater extent, to the public institutions of the land of my birth than to any private enterprises of my own, some of my most intimate and judicious friends, in whose candor and sincerity I repose the utmost confidence, have, more than once, suggested the propriety of my committing to permanent record the reminiscences connected with educational history familiar to me. In addition to these suggestions from private sources, I have been applied to by gentlemen sustaining important relations to the Bureau of Education, Department of the Interior, to aid those engaged in collecting the annals of the educational history of South Carolina. These annals have reference, so far as I am concerned, especially to "Willington Academy," founded by Dr. Moses Waddel, where so many distinguished men of South Carolina and Georgia were trained under his superintendence.

This work has been undertaken by me not without a profound sense of my inadequacy to the successful accomplishment of the task and a consciousness of my deficiency in the great qualities essential to authorship.

Let it be kept in view, however, that in such a work as is here contemplated, much of the private life of my father

must necessarily be included, and its details may furnish little of interest to the mass of readers. His contemporaries have long since passed away in the vast majority. Besides, "the short and simple annals" of a teacher's life hold out a small attraction for any but his immediate descendants. There are readers, however, who will feel interested in the biography of men whose labors were given, as his were, always to unselfish public work. I offer no apology for accompanying this publication with some account of his life and labors, inasmuch as the results of his labors, being matters of history, will naturally awaken some desire, even in the present generation of readers, to know somewhat of the life and character of the man himself.

This, then, in part, will serve to explain my purpose in undertaking to furnish this narrative. But it will be conceded that it would fall short very far of a record of the entire history of Southern and Southwestern education were it to comprise only a notice of its progress under one of its earlier agents, however important his labors may have been. Each age has its own workers, and each can furnish only its individual contribution to the history of the whole.

As some small part of this history, showing the successive advance of this great cause, so as to bring the present generation into personal association with its progress, I venture to incorporate in the work the amount of my personal knowledge and identity with the history. It may furnish future writers, so far as it is presented, a foundation for its continuance. I propose to cover this second era in the record with a narrative of my personal connection with the cause. It will extend over a period of some sixty years, embracing reminiscences of private work, as well as that of those public institutions of which I formed part of the corps of instructors.

In this case, as in the case of Rev. Dr. Moses Waddel, it

is impossible to avoid statements of fact that will be entirely personal, inasmuch as the work done by me during my manhood, and within the half century now near its close, has been almost solely the work of education. Consequently, if I write on that subject, I must write, more or less, of myself. I trust, however, that though these statements of details of private life might prove to my readers somewhat dry and unattractive taken alone, they may, nevertheless, be somewhat tolerated upon the ground that, interspersed through the narrative will be found, of necessity, allusions to and sketches of eminent and distinguished characters with whom I was incidentally associated, and of many of my own contemporaries and classmates, who afterwards reached distinction in their several pursuits and professions.

The period covered by this record embraces much of momentous interest and importance to our country and to the world, exerting more or less of influence upon the history of education, in not only intellectual training, but in the events of the political world, as well as in scientific and Christian civilization. A bare allusion to these facts will serve to recall them to many now living and acting. When we mention the Nullification ordinance of 1832 in South Carolina, and the compromise of 1833; the Abolition movement; the Kansas and Nebraska excitement; the Mexican war and the annexation of Texas; the civil war between the States; and the emancipation of the slaves of the South; then turning from this political crowd of grand events, and thinking of the advance of this land and all others in all imaginable and unimaginable forms of invention and discovery in science, and lastly, the progress made in the victories of the Christian religion, the conclusion is inevitable, that never in any previous three-quarter century has the world made progress so illustrious as the present era has exhibited in such rapid succession.

CONTENTS.

REV. MOSES WADDEL, D. D.

CHAPTER I.

Sketch of Parents.—Emigration to America.—Birth of Moses Waddel.—Schools of his Childhood to his Fourteenth Year, ... 25

CHAPTER II.

Invitation to Teach Declined.—Father's Reasons.—Views of the Son then and in after Life.—First Engagements as Teacher.—Filial Disobedience.—Results.—Reflections, ... 30

CHAPTER III.

Resumes Teaching.—Dancing Parties.—Wavering Resolutions.—Final Decision.—Religious Impressions.—Public Profession of Religion, ... 33

CHAPTER IV.

Spiritual Conflicts.—Tenderness of Conscience.—Methods of Relief.—Final Victory, ... 36

CHAPTER V.

Resolution to Enter the Ministry, and to Complete the Preliminary Education.—Enters Hampden-Sidney College.—Candidate, Under Care of Presbytery of Hanover.—Licensure and Dismissal to Presbytery of South Carolina, ... 41

CHAPTER VI.

Removals.—First and Second Marriages.—First and Second Locations.—Pupils, Calhoun and Crawford, ... 44

CHAPTER VII.

Willington Academy.—Building and Character of the Institution.—Methods of Instruction and Discipline, ... 49

CHAPTER VIII.

Improvement in the Building.—Organization of the Church.—Revival in the Academy and Neighborhood.—Results, ... 53

CHAPTER IX.

Further Notice of the Government and Discipline of the Willington Academy.—Domestic History of Dr. Waddel and his Family, ... 56

CHAPTER X.

Conferring of the Degree of D. D.—Foreigners Receiving Instruction from him in English.—An Incident.—Style of Old-Fashioned Church Building.—Mode of Conducting the Music and of Administering the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, ... 61

CHAPTER XI.

Work Accomplished as a Teacher.—Men Trained by him who Became Distinguished.—Correction of a Statement in Parton's Life of Andrew Jackson.—Arrangements for Retiring from Teaching, ... 67

CHAPTER XII.

Memoir of Caroline Elizabeth Smelt.—Removal to Athens.—Previous History of the University.—Condition of Buildings and Endowment Prospects, ... 71

CHAPTER XIII.

Sketches of Dr. Waddel's Colleagues of the Faculty from 1819 to 1820, ... 77

CHAPTER XIV.

University Administration During Dr. Waddel's Presidency.—His Life in Athens.—His Services to the Cause of Christian Education, ... 92

CHAPTER XV.

Dr. Waddel's Objects in View in Accepting the Presidency of the University.—Successful Results.—Close of his Term of Service.—Resignation, ... 100

CHAPTER XVI.

Death of Mrs. Waddel.—Manner of Life in Retirement.—Churches he Served.—His Associates Among His Ministerial Brethren. Last Sickness and Death, ... 119

WILLIAM HENRY WADDEL.

Memorial Record of the Life, Labors, and Character of William Henry Waddel, Professor of Ancient Languages in the University of Georgia, ---- 129

APPENDIX.

I. Mural Tablet in Willington Church, ---- 138
II. Mural Tablet in Athens Church, ---- 138
III. Inscription on Pillar at Cemetery ---- 139

AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

CHAPTER I.
Birth and Some Reminiscences of My First Seven Years, ---- 143

CHAPTER II.
My Preparatory School-Days in Athens, Ga., ---- 150

CHAPTER III.
College Life in the University of Georgia, ---- 167

CHAPTER IV.
Reflections.—Sketch of Athens Life After Graduation.—Removal to South Carolina, and Prospects of Beginning the Life of a Teacher, ---- 181

CHAPTER V.
First School. Death of My Mother.—Life in the Country.—A College Associate.—My Habits, ---- 186

CHAPTER VI.
Feelings and Views on the Subject of Religion.—My Father's Preaching, and my Estimate of it at that Time.—Some Notice of George McDuffie and Others, ---- 193

CHAPTER VII.
Courtship and First Marriage, ---- 202

CHAPTER VIII.

Incidents, Public and Private, in 1832-'33.—Sketch of J. C. Calhoun.—Nullification, ... 206

CHAPTER IX.

Purchase of Land in Alabama.—Removal.—Signal Providential Interference in My Behalf, ... 218

CHAPTER X.

Four Years' Residence in Alabama, with its Consequences, and Another Removal, ... 223

CHAPTER XI.

A Visit to South Carolina, and Removal of Family to Mississippi.—Business Settlements in Mobile, and Incident There.—New Home, ... 232

CHAPTER XII.

Prosecution of Ministerial Studies.—Licensure by the Presbytery of Mississippi.—Places of my First Year's Preaching, ... 237

CHAPTER XIII.

Establishment and Organization of Montrose Academy.—Its Progress and Influence.—Supply of Religious Destitutions.—Difficulties, ... 241

CHAPTER XIV.

More Sorrow.—Incorporation of Board of Trustees of University of the State.—Proceedings of the Board.—Coming Events Foreshadowed, ... 246

CHAPTER XV.

Election of Faculty of the University.—Initiatory Difficulties.—Farewell Sermons.—Removal to Oxford, and Formal Opening, ... 251

CHAPTER XVI.

General Educational History of Mississippi, ... 257

CHAPTER XVII.

Preparatory Steps for the Opening of the University.—Erection of Buildings and Inauguration Ceremonies, ... 260

CHAPTER XVIII.

General View of Matters Connected with the First Session of the University, ---------- 266

CHAPTER XIX.

Annual Meeting of the Board of Trustees.—Election of President.—Some Statistics.—Sketch of President Longstreet and Others, ---------- 273

CHAPTER XX.

Brief Sketches of the Chartered Board, ---------- 287

CHAPTER XXI.

Financial History, ---------- 292

CHAPTER XXII.

Statistical Statements, ---------- 298

CHAPTER XXIII.

Changes and Additions in the Faculty from Time to Time.—Danville Theological Seminary.—Other Changes in the Course of Study, and Other Facts, ---------- 301

CHAPTER XXIV.

Review of Private and Domestic History from 1848 to 1857, ---------- 309

CHAPTER XXV.

Establishment of a Church College by the Synod of Memphis.—Election of a Faculty.—Discussion in Relation to the Location.—Choice of La Grange, Tennessee, ---------- 319

CHAPTER XXVI.

Reluctance on my Part to Leaving Mississippi.—Inducements Held Out.—Resignation and Removal to La Grange.—Action of Faculty and Studer ts on my Resignation, ---------- 324

CHAPTER XXVII.

Visit to the North, and Opening Prospects of the College in 1857. General Train of Work, ---------- 328

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Sketches of the Faculty.—Rev. John H. Gray, D. D.—Professor J. R. Blake. - Professor James L. Meigs, ---------- 334

CHAPTER XXIX.

Second Session.—General Character of the Work.—Mode of Discipline.—Progress of the Endowment, ... 345

CHAPTER XXX.

Resignation of Dr. Gray.—Election of his Successor.—Correspondence with Davidson College Authorities, ... 348

CHAPTER XXXI.

Routine of College Work.—Boarding System.—Dormitory Plan Discussed, ... 356

CHAPTER XXXII.

Meeting of the Synod in 1860, and Final Decision of the Question.—The Election of Lincoln.—Close of the Fourth Session of the College.—The End, ... 360

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Further Notes of War Experience in La Grange, and My Escape from the Lines, ... 366

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Effect of the War Upon the Presbyteries of the South.—Dr. Spring's Resolutions.—Atlanta Convention.—Organization of the General Assembly, December 4, 1861, ... 372

CHAPTER XXXV.

Return to La Grange.—Continuation of War Record.—Personal Incidents, ... 381

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Resumption of the Narrative of the Escape.—Mode of Life in Mississippi.—Occupation and Service until the Spring of 1863, 389

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Appointed Commissioner of Army Missions in the Mississippi Army.—Two Sad Events of the Year.—Arrival of my Children from La Grange, ... 395

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

More Perils and Escapes.—Residence at Meridian and at Montgomery.—Wanderings.—Change of Work.—In Danger of Capture, ... 403

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Finale of the Sherman-Smith Raid.—Return to Mississippi with my Children.—Marriage of My Youngest Daughter.—Fourth Meeting of the General Assembly.—Change of Location in Army Work, ... 415

CHAPTER XL.

Sojourn in Atlanta and in Camp.—General Johnson Relieved.—Evacuation of Atlanta.—Stay in Eufaula.—Death of my Son at Jonesboro.—Army Movement Toward Nashville, ... 422

CHAPTER XLI.

Appointment to a New Service, and Last Days of the Confederacy.—Gloom and Despondency.—Destitution of the South, 428

CHAPTER XLII.

Incidents of Personal History.—Release from all Official Duties Growing Out of the War.—Visits to Old Homes, ... 433

CHAPTER XLIII.

Private History.—Attendance at the Meeting of the Presbytery of Memphis.—Meeting at Holly Springs.—Return to Oxford and Settlement there, ... 441

CHAPTER XLIV.

Governor Sharkey's Term of Service.—Oxford my Home.—Election to the Chancellorship of the University.—Marriage.—Care of Oxford Church.—Address before the Legislature, ... 445

CHAPTER XLV.

Advance of University Work.—Additions to the Faculty.—Annoyances Threatening Disturbance.—Close of First Session.—Sketches of Some Professors.—Changes of State Government.—Political Trouble in Prospect, ... 456

CHAPTER XLVI.

Under a New Regime.—Signs of Diminished Patronage.—Judge Hudson's Letter and Answer to It.—Governor Alcorn.—New Board Appointed.—A Sketch.—Small Attendance, ... 464

CHAPTER XLVII.

Return of Confidence in the University on the Part of the People of the State.—Governor Alcorn.—Respect Shown the Board.—Two Unpleasant Incidents.—The Dormitory System.—Change of the System of the University, ... 472

CHAPTER XLVIII.

Burden of Responsibility.—Church and State Institutions.—Attitude of the University Toward Christianity.—Free Tuition.—Work Done by its Graduates.—Historical Address.—Degree of LL. D. Conferred by University of Georgia, ... 481

CHAPTER XLIX.

General Assembly of 1868.—Elected Moderator.—Proceedings.—Educational Convention.—Director of Church University.—Results of Two Meetings —General Assembly of 1874.—Elected Secretary of Education.—Resignation, ... 488

CHAPTER L.

Maturing my Views as to Accepting the Office of Secretary of Education,—Advised Against it.—Formal Acceptance.—A Difference.—The Question Settled by the Assembly.—Epidemic of Yellow-Fever of 1878.—Joined Presbytery of Memphis. 497

CHAPTER LI.

Résumé of Matters.—Correspondence with Dr. Palmer in 1878-'79.—Conflict of Feeling.—Attendance on Meetings of the Directory.—Re-organization of Stewart College and Election of the Faculty, ... 507

CHAPTER LII.

Attendance on Assembly May 15, 1879.—Return to Memphis and Preparation to Remove.—Resignation of the Secretaryship and Election of Successor.—Farewell Sermon.—Arrival at Clarksville and Address to the Six Synods, ... 515

CHAPTER LIII.

The Epidemic Again.—Number of Students.—The Public School.—The Free Feature of the University.—Character of the Faculty.—The Student Body Before and After the New Organization.—Discipline and Christian Influence, ... 524

CHAPTER LIV.

Proceedings and Action of the Board.—Resignation of Professor Dinwiddie.—Election of Professor Massie.—Resignation of Professor Hemphill.—Election of Professor Nicolassen.—Establishment of a Chair and its Endowment—Election of Dr. Welch.—Refusal of Presbytery to Dissolve Pastoral Relation.—Dr. Price Elected and Accepting, ... 531

CHAPTER LV.

Divinity School Established.—Election of Professor and the Chair Endowed.—Dr. Caldwell's Resignation, ... 537

CHAPTER LVI.

Divinity School and First Class.—Sketch of Vice-President Welch, 542

CHAPTER LVII.

Filling Vacancies.—Withdrawal of Synod of Texas.—Sketches.—Failing Health and Resignation of Chancellor.—Election of Successor and Inauguration Exercises, ... 547

CHAPTER LVIII.

General Review.—What is a Christian Institution.—Closing Reflections on the Subject of Education, ... 553

APPENDIX.

I. Correspondence on Danville Seminary, ... 565
II. Correspondence on Resignation of Chancellorship of University of Mississippi, ... 569
III. Correspondence on Resignation of Chancellorship of Southwestern Presbyterian University, ... 572
IV. Closing Exercises of Ninth Commencement, ... 581

MEMORIALS

OF

THE WADDEL FAMILY.

MEMORIALS

OF

THE WADDEL FAMILY.

REV. MOSES WADDEL, D. D.,

FORMERLY PRESIDENT OF THE UNIVERSITY OF GEORGIA.

CHAPTER I.

SKETCH OF PARENTS.—EMIGRATION TO AMERICA.—BIRTH OF MOSES WADDEL.—SCHOOLS AND TEACHERS.—OF HIS CHILDHOOD TO HIS FOURTEENTH YEAR.

THE father of the subject of these memoirs was William Waddel, and the maiden name of his mother was Sarah Morrow. They were natives of the north of Ireland, and, at the time of their emigration to North America, resided in the county of Down, near Belfast. Their removal took place in the year 1766, when they left their native land in order to seek a new home in the Western World, accompanied by five daughters, the eldest being too young to render much assistance to her parents. The immediate cause of this removal seems to have been the loss of a daughter and only son, both of whom had fallen victims to small-pox. Like the very large majority of the people of their oppressed native country, they were by no means wealthy. After paying all debts, procuring needed supplies for the voyage, and defraying the necessary expenses of passage, Mr. Waddel found that he had left fifty guineas and a few shillings—truly an inconsiderable capital wherewith to meet the heavy responsibilities of a new settlement in a strange land, with a

family so helpless and dependent as his. His original design seems to have been to settle himself in Georgia; but the unusual roughness of the voyage and the severity of the weather induced a change in the direction of the vessel, which resulted in its landing at Charleston, S. C. This occurred on January 25, 1767. Here he received many invitations and offers of employment to induce him to settle in different parts of South Carolina; but meeting with a man from the upper part of North Carolina, who was then in Charleston with his wagon, and who represented the advantages of that part of the country so favorably, and who proposed so generously to assist in removing his family with his wagon, which had discharged its freight of agricultural produce in the city, and was on the eve of returning, he decided to seek his fortune in the newly-settled parts of that State.

Having arrived in Rowan county, he purchased a tract of land on easy terms (as land was then very cheap), and effected a settlement on the margin of the South Yadkin river. Here, then, he found himself almost literally beginning the world again. The cost of stocking his farm with the necessary cattle, hogs, and horses; the indispensable implements and utensils for farming purposes, and the purchase of provisions for the first year's support, all combined, deeply drained the small resources of the new settler. But frugality, industry, and perseverance, with unshaken trust in Providence, enabled him to go on safely and close the year in comfort.

Here it was that Moses Waddel was born, on the 29th of July, 1770. He received his name from the extreme improbability of his surviving his birth many hours.

At the age of six years he was entered as a pupil in a neighborhood school taught by a gentleman, a Mr. McKown, an excellent teacher. Although the school-house was distant three miles from his father's house, and from the feeble-

ness of his health, it was supposed that he would not continue to attend during the entire period of the session, yet he did attend rather more than half the time. During this time he learned to read with accuracy and to write a tolerably fair hand. His progress, all things considered, was regarded as exceeding that of any child in the school.

During the year 1778 the Rev. James Hall, who had been ordained and installed in the congregations of Concord, Fourth Creek, and Bethany, conceived the design of establishing a grammar school within the bounds of these congregations, for the benefit and improvement of the young people in his charge. Dr. Hall was not the teacher of this school, which was six or seven miles distant from his residence; he was only its principal patron and general superintendent. It was projected and commenced during the revolutionary war. Situated in a high and healthful part of North Carolina, remote from the sea coast, the people were not wealthy nor luxurious. The population was rather sparse. Commerce at that time was almost entirely annihilated in every part of the United States. Independence had been declared, and a most rigorous war was then in actual progress for its establishment, but the active military operations during that year were confined chiefly to the northern States, and the seat of war was in that region. Under such unfavorable circumstances this grammar school was projected by Dr. Hall. Owing to the scarcity of money and the difficulty of disposing of any property or produce that would command it, the prospect of securing a sufficient number of pupils to form a school was by no means encouraging. Some gentlemen in the neighborhood of Mr. Waddel, who were zealous for the promotion of the school, having heard of the rapid progress made by his youngest son in learning to read and write the English language, proposed to him to enter Moses as a scholar to learn Latin. The proposition at first was regarded by the father as absurd, on

account of the difficulty of procuring money to buy books and meet the expenses of tuition, etc.; but, urged by the advice and importunity of Robert King, Esq., a near neighbor of great prudence and piety, as well as by James King and several other judicious neighbors, he at length, confiding in the providence of that God who had always provided for him in his difficulties, consented to enter Moses on the list of pupils.

Accordingly, a sufficient number of pupils having been engaged, the school was opened on the north side of the South Yadkin river on the 27th or 28th of October, 1778, under the instruction of Mr. James McEwen. The name of the seminary, which had probably been selected by Dr. Hall, was "Clio's Nursery."

On the day above mentioned the subject of these memoirs entered on the study of the Latin grammar, in the teaching of which he spent so many of the succeeding years of his life. At that time he was only eight years and three months old. Mr. McEwen conducted "Clio's Nursery" successfully for the first year of its existence, and proved himself to the entire satisfaction of his patrons and pupils to be an accurate, diligent, and excellent instructor. At the close of the year, having been a student of divinity and a candidate for the gospel ministry, he was licensed to preach, and, after having furnished promise of much usefulness as a minister, he died within little more than a year thereafter.

The classmates of Moses Waddel in this school were five in number, viz.: Edward Harris, who held the office of judge of the superior court of North Carolina during life; David Purviance and Richard King, who became useful and honored ministers of the gospel; James Nisbet and Joseph Guy, who were successful physicians, and yet served their country as representatives in the State Legislature.

"Clio's Nursery" was placed, in the year 1779, under the instruction of Mr. Francis Cummins, a student of divinity

and a candidate for the ministry with Rev. Dr. Hall. The seminary continued under the care of Mr. Cummins and was prosperous until the news reached the neighborhood that Charleston had surrendered to the British army, on May 12th, 1780, and that the enemy had penetrated the country within fifty miles of the settlement. By reason of the disturbance resulting from their incursions, the operations of the seminary were suspended until April, 1782, when they were resumed under the superintendence of Mr. John Newton, who was an excellent and successful instructor, afterwards also a minister of the gospel. With Mr. Newton Moses Waddel continued his studies with profit, and learned to enjoy his association with so kind and faithful an instructor. The next teacher under whose instruction he was placed was Mr. Samuel Young, subsequently a minister of the gospel in Winnsborough, South Carolina. With this teacher his connection with "Clio's Nursery" as pupil was brought to a close; so that, in the summer of 1784, he had completed the study of the Latin and Greek languages, arithmetic, Euclid's Elements, geography, moral philosophy, and criticism. This course of study he had accomplished under the above-named teachers during about five or six years' attendance, and before he had completed his fourteenth year.

CHAPTER II.

Invitation to Teach.—Declined.—Father's Reasons.—Views of the Son then and in After Life.—First Engagements as a Teacher.—Filial Disobedience.—Results.—His Reflections.

ABOUT this period of his life an application was made by a gentleman of Camden, S. C., Dr. Robert Alexander, addressed to Dr. Hall, requesting him to procure an usher for the academy which had been established at that place shortly after the close of the revolutionary war. Dr. Alexander was an active trustee of the academy, and having heard a favorable report of "Clio's Nursery," he expressed a special preference for some one of the best linguists who had been educated at that school. Dr. Hall immediately applied to the father of Moses Waddel, expressing a desire that he would accept the position for his son, and permit him to go and teach in Camden. The proposal was very gratifying to the youth himself, and he was very anxious to go; but the father, although grateful to his pastor for the kindness of this proposition, and fully appreciating the compliment implied in it, could not consent to his going. His only ground of objection was the extreme youth and inexperience of his son. He could not consider it his duty as a parent to expose his morals at that indiscreet age to the temptations of a town life and among entire strangers. In later years, and after maturer judgment, formed upon greater experience and more widely-extended observation, the son has often been heard to remark that his father in that decision had evinced a degree of parental discretion and sound sense for which he felt bound to be thankful to him, under God, to the end of his life.

In the month of July, 1784, Moses completed his fourteenth year. It was only a short time after this that some gentlemen in a neighborhood at a distance of some fifteen miles from the residence of his father desired to establish a school in that locality, at which the Latin language could be taught. Having learned that he was considered capable of teaching it, they requested his father to allow him to take charge of such a school, consisting of English scholars mainly, with a few pursuing the study of Latin. To this he consented, and the arrangement was accordingly made.

It will not be without interest to the reader to note the fact here, that the stipulated remuneration for services rendered by him consisted of his board and the sum of *seventy dollars* per annum, inasmuch as it was the compensation of a teacher who, in his subsequent career, received for many years an annual income of thousands. In this, his first field of educational work, he had seven pupils studying Latin, and twenty or more in the ordinary English branches. The location of this school was near a considerable stream, called "Hunting Creek," in the northeastern part of what is now called Iredell county, N. C. In his year's work he gave great satisfaction, and was regarded as wonderfully successful. Unfortunately he lost his health, and was compelled to abandon the care and superintendence of the school and return to his father's house to recuperate.

On his recovery he resumed his occupation, not, however, in the same neighborhood, but first nearer home and then in an adjacent settlement, and thus he was chiefly employed in teaching until the latter part of the year 1786, when he went on a prospective tour to Green county, Ga., then a newly-settled frontier county. Here he soon engaged in his teaching work again, but, in consequence of Indian troubles on this frontier, he relinquished his school in the summer and returned to North Carolina to visit his friends. Here he remained about two months, but became very anxious to

return to Georgia. As his parents had decided to remove in the autumn of that year to Georgia, then considered the land of agricultural promise, they were very desirous that he should remain with them until they should be ready to remove and accompany them on their journey. With this request, so entirely reasonable, he was altogether unwilling to comply, and very undutifully departed for Georgia a month in advance of his father and family. This was the first material point in which he had ever ventured to disobey them or to counteract their wishes. The consequences resulting to him were such as might have been expected from an act of filial disobedience.

On his arrival in Georgia he found that the people among whom he had resided and taught had been forced to abandon their habitations, and to take refuge in forts, from the cruelties of the Indians, who had crossed the Oconee river, burned Greensborough, and murdered several persons farther within the interior of the country. After remaining unemployed about a month he visited Augusta to seek employment, and, after being tantalized four weeks with the hope of being employed as an assistant in the Richmond Academy, he left the the place and returned to Green county. Here he found his parents and the family safely arrived and all fears of further incursions of the savages entirely subsided. His experience from the time of his leaving his parents in a disobedient manner until his meeting with them in their new home having yielded him neither much peace of mind nor any personal success, he accepted it as the frown of Providence and as a gentle chastisement, warning him against acting contrary to the advice of his parents in future. His resolution was then formed to that effect and from it he never again deviated during their lives.

CHAPTER III.

Resumes Teaching.—Attendance on Dancing Parties.—Wavering Resolutions.—Final Decision.—Religious Impressions.—Public Profession of Religion.

IN 1788, in the same part of the country, he commenced another school. The state of morals there among the young men was by no means such as to exert a favorable influence upon him. He had been thrown into association with them and had been exposed to their society during the previous years from the time of his first departure from his father's house, and he found himself now surrounded by this state of society. In addition to this fact, it is stated that in that neighborhood there had been no preaching regularly enjoyed for a length of time. The young people were fond of dancing parties, which were kept up weekly, and to these entertainments he was always sure of an invitation, because he was pursuing the occupation of a man while he was very young, and was supposed, from his mode of occupation, to possess the attributes of one far in advance of his age. He thus acquired a fondness for that amusement, which he indulged until he, from his own reflections, began to doubt the innocence of dancing as an amusement, and often, after having attended one of these meetings, his thoughts were so unpleasant as to lead him to resolve that this should be the last one of the kind he should ever attend. He would disclose his views to these young people, and state to them that they need never to invite him again to such meetings. But he found, in his own experience, that unrenewed human nature was weak indeed, as, on a repetition of the temptation, he had no power of resistance. Such was the vacil-

lating state of his mind until, by a change of his place of board to the pious home of a gentleman in the same neighborhood, and by his entering upon a nightly review of his classical studies, which he was enabled rigidly to continue, he overcame the fondness for this amusement, and found, to his great satisfaction, that he had courage to decline all further invitations extended to him.

The arrival and frequent preaching of several distinguished ministers of the gospel in that region of country during the year resulted in the excitement of a considerable interest in religion. By frequent interviews with Rev. Mr. Thacher, one of these ministers, sent as a missionary to that part of Georgia from Orange Presbytery, North Carolina, and by attendance on his preaching and that of others of different denominations, the mind of the young teacher was more and more impressed with the sense of the necessity and importance of his soul's interests. From this time he devoted most of his leisure hours, mornings and evenings, to reading the Scriptures, and books of religious character treating of experimental religion. His attention to secret prayer at stated times became regular, and his serious impressions deepened and his religious exercises increased. Thus he continued in his habits of thought and action until a certain Fast day in 1789, which was observed by him, when the plan of salvation, he believed, was suddenly revealed to his mind more clearly than ever before. He believed that God was as willing to save him as he himself was to be saved through Jesus Christ. He also felt a willingness to bow to the sceptre of divine grace, and, with humble gratitude and resignation, to embrace, receive, and rest upon the Saviour for the whole of his salvation. At the church of Bethany, about the middle of April, 1789, an appointment for administration of the sacrament of the Lord's supper was filled by the preacher in charge, and feeling bound, both by duty and inclination, to attach himself by an

open profession, he presented himself before the session, and, after the usual examination and other steps preparatory to his reception had been conducted satisfactorily, he was admitted a member of the church. On the morning of the communion he realized unusual comfort in the prospect of the duty he was about to discharge and the privilege he was hoping to enjoy. The communion sermon was preached, and the ordinance was explained. The sacred table was spread and surrounded by communicants, and among them Moses Waddel took his seat for the first time.

A state of mind ensued which he could never afterwards fully describe. Before he approached the communion table he had expected to experience the evidences of his Saviour's love and the enrapturing tokens of God's favor in degree far superior to any feeling ever before experienced by him, when lo! during the time of his sitting there he could see nothing but bread and wine, and felt nothing but an awful and comfortless sense of his own unworthiness to occupy a seat at that holy feast of love.

CHAPTER IV.

Spiritual Conflicts.—Tenderness of Conscience.—Methods of Relief Adopted.—Final Victory.

FROM this time and for months afterwards Moses Waddel was the victim of great mental distress and spiritual gloom, which, with occasional relief, at last increased to such a degree as to reduce him almost to despair. In this state of mind he attended another communion meeting at Bethany church, in Green county. There he met with an elderly gentleman from a church in Wilkes county, who had ridden, on purpose to attend this meeting, some twenty or twenty-five miles. This gentleman was Mr. Robert Creswell, and, although not a preacher, he was a man of extraordinary scriptural knowledge and experience. With this gentleman he engaged, as was natural in his state of mind, in a conversation with perfect freedom upon the subject of experimental religion. The result was that Moses Waddel decided to spend the evening and night with him; and as the greater part of the time was occupied in talking on practical religion, he found his views greatly enlarged and enlightened by this interview, and from Mr. Creswell's kind and pious counsel he hoped that he had derived great encouragement and satisfaction.

Subsequently he enjoyed the same privilege of personal association with Mr. Creswell and others, and found additional comfort from their conversation. After this, continuing his occupation in school in the neighborhood of Bethany church, of which he was a member, he so fully shared the confidence of all who knew him that he was occasionally asked to lead in family worship and in public prayer. This

led to a resolution adopted by the minister and the church session, that the congregation should assemble on vacant Sabbaths, and that he should be invited to lead in singing, prayer, and reading a sermon by some approved orthodox divine, to which he gave his assent, and the practice continued for some length of time. It was, however, on the evening of a certain day which had been employed in this manner that he engaged in a train of self-examination, which embodied a series of questions and reflections of the following nature:

"I have made a profession of religion, and I have been turning my attention to this subject for a year or more past. I have read my Bible and works of pious authors considerably. My external conduct, I know, is greatly altered. I have conducted myself in a much more serious and orderly manner than formerly. I have reason to believe that my acquaintances do generally regard me as a *Christian*. But do *I know* that I am one? Is it true that I have been *born again*, and that I am *a child of God?* How do I know but that these very people who have seen me to-day in the church, and heard me pray and sing and read, may yet see me in hell, and upbraid me with hyprocrisy for this day's work?"

These thoughts made a most solemn and awful impression on his mind, and excited a determination that he would "not give sleep to his eyes nor slumber to his eyelids" until he should obtain an assurance that he was a child of God and a real Christian.

Now began a time of spiritual gloom and distress never before experienced by him, and the intensity of which has rarely had its parallel in the experience of others. He lost his sleep and appetite, spent his nights in reading God's word and poring over Doddridge's *Rise and Progress*, confining his attention to those parts of the book treating of the exercises of the convicted sinner and avoid-

ing the parts which treat of the character and exercises of the true Christian, as he felt no assurance that he was a child of God, and therefore he thought that those more advanced parts of the book were not for him to claim as applicable to his case. This state of mind increased in its depth of suffering until it resulted in rendering him supremely wretched. His conscience lost its calmness of judgment, and, feeling that he was so ungrateful, guilty, and utterly unworthy in the sight of God, he became afraid to quench his thirst as being too great a blessing for such a sinner, and even carried his tenderness of conscience to the point of doubting his authority to administer to his pupils who transgressed any penalty of their offences, since he would raise the question at once, "If God, your great Master, should punish you for your faults, what would become of you?" Indeed, such was the view of the depravity of his whole nature at that period that he regarded himself a mere compound of unbelief, pride, and hyprocrisy, and this, too, while most of his time was occupied in reading the Scriptures and books of practical piety and in secret prayer.

Not only was he thus exercised in self-condemnation, but about this very period he was assailed by the fiery darts of the wicked one. He was tempted to doubt the existence of God, the truth of the Bible, or that there is any heaven, hell, or devil. This state of mental exercise continued for months, without inducing any relaxation of the duty of secret prayer.

An incident is related of his experience in his school which merits notice. It seems that, although he had been a professing Christian for a length of time, he had never assumed courage to open and close his school with prayer, although his mind had for some time been impressed with the conviction that he ought to do this daily to secure the blessing of God. On occasion of a very frightful thunder-storm

which came on during school hours, not only were the pupils of the school struck with the most dreadful terror by the vivid glare of the lightning and the crashing sound of the thunder, but it is believed that none of them were so horror-stricken as their self-condemned instructor. During the raging of the storm he did not know, but felt awful apprehensions that the next flash of lightning would be the messenger of an angry God to send him to hell. Many solemn ejaculations of prayer went up, and many a silent resolution was formed, that if God would spare his life he would neglect this duty no longer. But the storm passed, and he was spared, yet his resolution was broken, and, through sinful shame and fear of man, the school was dismissed without prayer, as it had been formerly. A repetition of the storm occurred, even more terrific than the first, on the next afternoon. Fearful were the lashes of his violated conscience at the time, and again he prayed, and promised that if God would withhold the visitation of His just and righteous wrath, and spare him again, he would no more neglect this duty of prayer at opening and closing his school. Once more God heard him and spared his life, whereupon, at the subsidence of the storm, he was enabled to address his lately-affrighted pupils as follows: "We have been preserved this afternoon from great danger. We ought to thank God for His goodness; therefore let us pray." Thus this school was dismissed that afternoon with prayer, and ever afterward, not only this school, but every institution with which he was connected during his life, was opened and closed with prayer.

The mental distress, however, continued to give him such anxiety as to render him unfit for the discharge of his daily duty. So he determined to suspend the exercises of the school for a few days, in order that he might visit some experienced Christian who could furnish him the advice he so greatly needed. This he did accordingly, and paid a visit

to his old friends, Mr. Creswell and others; and having conferred freely with them, he felt that he had gained light on his path, and was enabled to engage in his duties with composure and comfort, to which he had long been a stranger.

Still he struggled on, in alternate light and shadow, until, at a communion meeting held by Rev. Mr. Thatcher in Bethany church, he was at last led into "the light and liberty of the gospel," under the instrumentality of this able and godly minister, who in a sermon on Romans v. 6, made the plan of salvation and the Saviour's love and grace clearer and more comforting to his view than ever he had before experienced. He was enabled to hope and feel "at peace with God, the world, and himself," and from this time he began to indulge "a good hope, through grace," that he had "passed from death unto life," and was assured of his pardon, peace, and reconciliation with God through Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER V.

Resolution to Enter the Ministry and to Complete the Preliminary Education.—Enters Hampden-Sidney College.—Candidate Under Care of Presbytery of Hanover.—Licensure and Dismissal to the Presbytery of South Carolina.

FROM that day his mind was greatly exercised in regard to the solemn subject of the gospel ministry. Convinced that he had received a divine call to this great work, he was equally impressed with the conviction of his own want of the necessary mental training and the acquisition of additional literary education, in order to the proper discharge of the high and holy functions of that exalted calling. There was another consideration suggested to his mind at the same time, and that was that he must use every proper method to acquire the means whereby he might defray the expenses of a collegiate education. It is to be borne in mind that at that time and in that new settlement there had never been established such benevolent institutions among the churches as Boards or Committees of Ministerial Education, or Education Societies to train poor and promising candidates for the ministry. He seems not to have thought of such a thing as receiving assistance from any outside source; so he resumed teaching, and thus, by his own efforts and God's blessing, he succeeded in this object, and found himself in possession of the required funds.

At that early period he knew of no institution of learning in the Carolinas or Georgia which held out to him inducements of the proper kind to attract his interest. Accordingly he paid a visit to a venerable and valued friend, Rev. John Springer, at Cambridge (formerly called Ninety-six), in Abbeville District, South Carolina. This minister had inspired

into all the churches where he had become known the fullest confidence in his piety as a Christian and his character as a scholar and a gentleman. To him, therefore, he applied for advice as to the college he would recommend him to attend in order to complete his literary studies. Mr. Springer unhesitatingly advised him to prepare himself at once for the College of Hampden-Sidney, in Prince Edward county, Va. This institution, after its founding and organization, had enjoyed the privilege and advantage of the presidency, first, of Rev. Dr. Samuel Stanhope Smith, afterwards president for many years of the College of New Jersey. He was succeeded by his brother, Rev. John B. Smith, who presided over the College for several years with great credit to himself and advantage to the public, and was afterwards president of Union College, Schenectady, N. Y., and died of yellow fever in Philadelphia in 1799.

After having prepared himself for this college, Moses Waddel left his home in Green county, Ga., for a long ride on horseback to the distant point in Virginia at which some of his years were to be spent, and where he should lay the foundation of his future professional and social life. Having arrived in Prince Edward county, in September, 1790, his first care was to apply himself to the study of certain branches necessary to his admission into the senior class of Hampden-Sidney College. This being done, he entered the senior class on the 3d of January, 1791. The institution was under the presidency of Rev. Drury Lacy at that time, and the studies of Moses Waddel were pursued under him until the time of his graduation, on the 29th of September, 1791, having been associated during this time with the following as classmates, who afterwards became very prominent and useful men, viz.: Rev. John McKemie Wilson, D. D., of North Carolina; Dr. James Jones, of Dinwiddie, repeatedly a member of Congress, and Hon. George M. Bibb, judge, and senator from Kentucky.

About two months previous to his graduation he attended the meeting of the Presbytery of Hanover, in Upper Concord church, in Campbell county, Va., and presented himself to the Presbytery as a candidate for the gospel ministry; was examined, in company with Mr. William Calhoun and Mr. Samuel Brown, on the subjects usual on such occasions. The examinations of these three were all sustained, and they were all admitted under care of the Presbytery on August 1, 1791. The Presbytery adjourned, to meet again on October 28th ensuing, at which time he was ordered to present as his first parts of trial an essay on the freedom of the human will, and a Presbyterial exercise on Phil. ii. 12, 13, if he could possibly prepare these exercises. As these appointments were made nearly two months before commencement, and during that time nearly all his attention would be occupied with the exercises necessary to be prepared for such public occasions, he found that by close application during the vacation which ensued after the Commencement he was enabled to prepare only the essay. This was presented at the meeting of Presbytery, on October 28th, read, and approved, and an additional part of his trial for licensure was assigned him, being a lecture on 1 Pet., iv. 1–7, to be presented at the spring meeting of Presbytery in May next after this meeting. Accordingly, his trials having all been sustained, he was licensed by the Presbytery of Hanover on May 11, 1792. The record of the stated clerk on the minutes is that on the 6th of October, 1792, he was "dismissed *at discretion;*" the explanation of this phraseology being, doubtless, that as he was uncertain as to his future location, the Presbytery could not do otherwise. The next fact related of the subject of this narrative is that, on the 11th of April, 1793, he was received by the Presbytery of South Carolina as a licentiate, bearing letters of dismission from the Presbytery of Hanover.

CHAPTER VI.

Removal.—First and Second Marriages.—First and Second Locations.—Pupils.—Calhoun.—Crawford.

AFTER his licensure he remained in Virginia for some months, and returned to South Carolina, making his temporary home in the family of Mr. Thomas Legaré, a devout elder of the church. In September, 1793, being still a licentiate under care of the Presbytery of South Carolina, he was appointed to visit and preach to the people on James Island, John's Island, Wadmalaw, and Dorchester, once at each point. The remainder of his time he spent in Georgia, as the jurisdiction of the Presbytery covered that part of the State also. In April, 1794, at a meeting of Presbytery, the Carmel church, in Georgia, forwarded a call for one half of his time, which he accepted. In this church, at a special meeting of Presbytery in June following, he was solemnly ordained to the full work of the gospel ministry. Rev. Dr. Cummins, who had been one of his teachers at "Clio's Nursery," in North Carolina, preached on that occasion the ordination sermon.

Not long after this, perhaps in 1794, he became satisfied, from his experience and observation of the destitutions of the surrounding country, that he could extend his usefulness by adding to his ministerial services the important and useful occupation of teaching. He selected, as the location of the school, a country place about two miles east of the village of Appling, which was the county site of Columbia county, Ga. At this place he continued to teach for several years, and then, for some reason, he decided that it would be best to remove to the village. Among the pupils of this

school was the celebrated William H. Crawford, afterwards one of Georgia's most distinguished statesmen, and who filled some of the most important positions in the service of the national government. Mr. Crawford, it should be stated, was an assistant to Mr. Waddel in this school; and it is a well-known fact that in this school, under the direct instruction of Mr. Waddel, he received the whole of his scholastic training, never having attended any other institution of learning subsequently. While residing at this place the young licentiate missionary filled an appointment to preach beyond the Savannah river, in Abbeville district, South Carolina, in a neighborhood known then, and even now, as the "Calhoun Settlement," so called from the fact that the family of Calhouns, descendants of Scotch-Irish parentage, finding themselves compelled to remove from their second settlement in Virginia on account of the incursions of the Indians consequent upon Braddock's defeat, resolved to turn their course southward; and in 1756 they selected the upper part of South Carolina, near the Savannah river, in Abbeville district, and there they established what became known ever afterwards as "Calhoun Settlement." This settlement, although beset with many dangers and difficulties, continued to grow in many important respects, and at the time of Rev. Mr. Waddel's visit it was a strong Presbyterian region, with a place for preaching known as Brewer's school-house. Patrick Calhoun (father of John C. Calhoun) was the head of the settlement and an elder of the church. After the preaching of the young minister (then in the twenty-fifth year of his age), Mr. Calhoun invited him to his house, and he accepted the invitation and spent the night very agreeably with the family. He here met for the first time the lady who afterwards became his first wife, Miss Catherine Calhoun, the only daughter of Mr. Patrick Calhoun. She is described as having been a very attractive lady, and it seems the young

minister was at once struck with admiration of her many charming qualities. Not long after this visit, in the following year, 1795, he was married to her while still residing in Columbia county, Ga. She survived the marriage but little more than a year, and she left an infant daughter, who soon followed the mother. John C. Calhoun, her young brother, had been placed under the care of Mr. Waddel, to prosecute his education. He remained with him altogether about two years, during which time he was prepared for the junior class in Yale College, and in due course of time he graduated there with highest distinction. Upon the death of his wife and her father Mr. Waddel suspended the active operations of his teaching for several years. But as he surveyed the destitutions of the country around him, demanding laborers in the plenteous harvest, he felt that he was under a pressing call from the Master to go to work in His vineyard. Under the pressure of such influences he gave himself to the active work of the ministry, as an evangelist in the wide field extending all around him. It was just at this time that, after he had been again appointed by the Presbytery of South Carolina to preach at John's Island and Wadmalaw, we learn from the *History of the Presbyterian Church in South Carolina*, by Dr. Howe, that "on November 3, 1796, the Synod of the Carolinas separated the territory southwest of the Savannah river, and detached the Rev. John Newton, Rev. John Springer, Rev. Robert M. Cunningham, Rev. Moses Waddel, and Rev. William Montgomery, from the Presbytery of South Carolina. These brethren, meeting at Liberty church (now Woodstock) on the 16th of March, 1797, under the order of Synod, held the first meeting of Hopewell Presbytery. Rev. Mr. Springer was elected moderator and Rev. Mr. Waddel clerk."

Mr. Waddel resided in Columbia county, Ga., during the remaining years of that century. In 1801 he removed to the village of Vienna, Abbeville District, S. C., where he

opened a school again, continuing his labors as a minister at the same time. In addition to this village there were in existence, and in quite a flourishing condition of commercial activity, two others in the same neighborhood, all within a circle of about one mile in extent. These were Petersburg, on the point of land made by the confluence of the Savannah and Broad rivers; Lisbon, on the west bank of the Broad, while Vienna stood upon the high hill, making up from the Savannah river on the east side. These three small towns are easily within the writer's recollection brought into review at the time when they all enjoyed a very considerable degree of prosperity in a business point of view, and the population was to some extent refined and intelligent. A visit to the spot once occupied by these towns at a later period of his life filled him with melancholy emotions, as all that once made them so flourishing and pleasant is obliterated by the resistless sweep of time and change, and buried by desolation and ruin. Yet it was to Vienna, one of these *now "buried cities,"* that, in the year 1801, Mr. Waddel removed, and established himself as a teacher and preacher. The prosperity of these towns, and their life and active rivalry in competition for the patronage of the neighboring country around them, and the wealth and refinement of the population, imparted to the school the fair prospect of satisfactory success.

It is perhaps best, just at this point, that we retrace the history somewhat, in order to bring forward the narrative of certain events of much interest in the life of the subject of this memoir which have thus far been passed over in silence on account of the necessity of recording important public events. In this way all the parts of this record may be made to move on more evenly and connectedly in the future. The reader may possibly remember that Mr. Waddel had spent several years in Virginia, beginning with the year 1790, when he arrived in Prince Edward county, at Hampden Sidney College, and ending in 1793, during which time

he graduated, was received under care of Presbytery of Hanover, and licensed. It was during these years that he formed the acquaintance of a young lady—Miss Eliza Woodson Pleasants—who was visiting friends in Prince Edward county near the college. In due time an attachment grew up between them, and perhaps an engagement was entered into. But when the case came before the parents they declined to consent to the proposal, solely upon the ground that the home of the young licentiate was located in the remote wilds of the State of Georgia, which was then considered a frontier State, and exposed to the incursions of the Indians. They were unwilling that their daughter should encounter the perils of such a residence. The affair was terminated then and there, as such a thing as filial disobedience formed no part of the domestic training of the young people of that country at that time. They parted, and within the ensuing years from 1793 to 1800 the marriage of Mr. Waddel to Miss Calhoun, and all the events of this history in his public and private life as they occurred, have been related in previous pages. He remained a widower for about four years, when, having learned that Miss Pleasants was still unmarried, he renewed his suit. As by this time all obstacles to their union had been removed providentially, they were united in marriage in the year 1800. After his second marriage they resided in Georgia until 1801, when, as already recorded, he removed to Vienna, in South Carolina.

There he continued about four years, teaching and preaching, and while there still a petition for his services as a preacher was presented to the Presbytery of South Carolina by Hopewell church, in Abbeville District, which Presbytery granted. He was at that time a member of the Presbytery of Hopewell, but on the 7th of April, 1802, he was received as a member of the South Carolina Presbytery, and Hopewell church was gratified by enjoying his ministerial services

CHAPTER VII.

WILLINGTON ACADEMY.—BUILDING.—CHARACTER OF THE INSTITUTION.—METHODS OF INSTRUCTION AND DISCIPLINE.

IN 1804 he removed from Vienna to Willington, a country residence which he had acquired, distant about six miles south of Vienna. Here he laid the foundation of that academy which was destined to become so celebrated as the training place of so many eminently useful men, distinguished in all professions and pursuits in life, in South Carolina and Georgia. Here begins the history of education in connection with his labors as an educator in South Carolina. The location was on a high and healthful ridge opening up from the Savannah river. The population was composed of the Scotch-Irish and the noble and warm-hearted Huguenots who had fled from France to escape persecution, and who had formed a settlement in this neighborhood, where they could worship God according to the dictates of an enlightened conscience, "with none to molest or to make them afraid." These were his neighbors and his friends and patrons. They were high-toned Calvinistic Presbyterians, both the Scotch-Irish and the French Huguenots.

No more accurate and reliable description can be presented of this school in its earlier history than that which is found in Volume II. of the *History of South Carolina*, by Dr David Ramsay, of Charleston. The reliableness of this description will be assured by the fact that Dr. Ramsay wrote from personal knowledge, as he had patronized the academy by sending two sons to be taught and trained by Dr. Waddel. The entire passage, which fills pp. 369–371 of the second volume of the History, is as follows:

"Besides what has been done by the State and by religious sects and private societies for the advancement of learning and the diffusion of religious knowledge among the inhabitants, there are several private schools, both in Charleston and the country, for teaching classical and mathematical learning. Among these, one, under the care of the Rev. Dr. Waddel, of Abbeville District, deserves particular notice. In it from seventy to eighty students* are instructed in the Latin, Greek, and French languages, and in such of the arts and sciences as are necessary to prepare a candidate for admission into the higher classes of the Northern Colleges. The school-house is a plain log building in the midst of the woods, in a high and healthy country, and too small to accommodate all the scholars in the hours of study. To obviate this inconvenience, they are permitted and encouraged to build huts in the vicinity. These are the rough carpentry of the pupils, or constructed by workmen for about four dollars. In these, when the weather is cold, and under the trees when it is warm, the different classes study. To the common school or recitation room they instantly repair when called for, by the name of the Homer, the Xenophon, the Cicero, the Horace, or Virgil class, or by the name of the author whose writings they are reading. In a moment they appear before their preceptor, and, with order and decorum, recite their lessons; are critically examined in grammar and syntax, the construction of sentences, the formation of verbs, the antiquities of Greece and Rome, the history and geography of the ancients, illustrative of the author whose works they recite; and are taught to relish his beauties and to enter into his spirit. Thus class succeeds to class, without the formality of definite hours for study or recreation, till all have recited. In the presence of the students assembled a solemn and appropriate prayer, imploring the Eternal in their behalf, begins and ends the exercises of

* The number grew afterwards to 180.

each day. In this manner the classics are taught one hundred and ninety miles from the sea coast. The glowing periods of Cicero are read and admired. The melody and majesty of Homer delight the ear and charm the understanding in the very spot and under the identical trees which, sixty years ago, resounded with the war-whoop and horrid yellings of savage Indians.

"Of the large number that attend this school nine in ten are as studious as their health will permit, and as orderly in their conduct as their friends could wish. Far removed from the dissipation of cities, and among sober, industrious, and religious people, they must be studious, or lose all character, and be pointed at by the finger of scorn. If disposed to be idle or vicious, they cannot be so otherwise than by themselves; for the place will not furnish them with associates. Monitors are appointed to superintend each sub-division of the students; and such as transgress the rules of the school are reported once in every week. Over them a court is held. They are allowed to justify or extenuate. A summary decision is made. Though corporal punishment is not excluded, it is rarely inflicted. The discipline of the school respects the pride of youth, and is chiefly calculated to repress irregular conduct by attaching to it shame and dishonor. The sagacious preceptor quickly finds out the temper and disposition of each student, and is the first to discover aberrations from the straight line of propriety. By nipping mischief in the bud, he prevents its coming to any serious height. By patience in teaching and minutely explaining what is difficult, he secures the affections of his pupils and smooths their labors; while at the same time judicious praise rouses ambition and kindles in their breasts an ardent love for improvement and an eagerness to deserve and gain applause."

The History from which the above extract is made is now almost out of print, or, if extant, can be found only in some

of the public libraries of the State, or in the possession of some of the older residents of South Carolina. The copy from which the foregoing extract is taken is a handsomely-bound copy, in two volumes, presented to Dr. Waddel by the author, Dr. Ramsay, himself, published in 1809.

CHAPTER VIII.

Improvement in the Building.—Organization of the Church.—Revival in the Academy and Neighborhood and Its Results.

THE unexampled prosperity of the academy, and the increase in the population of the neighborhood, rendered it a necessity, in the judgment of all concerned, that larger accommodations should be provided both for the academy and the congregation. Accordingly an arrangement was entered into between the leading citizens of the neighborhood and the trustees of the Vienna Academy, whereby the building was removed to Willington, and converted into a most excellent and convenient house of worship and academy building, all under one roof. The writer readily recalls this establishment in memory, then the largest and most imposing structure that had up to that time ever stood before his admiring view. The building was composed of four convenient rooms for recitation, and, in addition, a chapel, which latter room served the two-fold purpose of the place of assembly for instructors and students for morning and evening worship and for divine service on the Sabbath.

In the year 1809 the congregation worshipping in this house was regularly organized as a Presbyterian church. Three of the male members were chosen by the people to the office of ruling elder, and the result manifested the wisdom of their selection. The French descendants of the Huguenots were represented in this session by Pierre Gibert, a model Christian man of extensive influence; the Scotch-Irish by William Noble, long known and loved in the surrounding country, and Moses W. Dobbins, one of the former students of the academy, who had taught also as an

assistant under Dr. Waddel. This gentleman afterwards became one of the teachers in the University Grammar School at Athens, Ga.

But it is a pleasing fact of great interest and importance to the history of the Willington Academy to notice that about this time it pleased God to manifest his gracious approval of the work of the church and academy by the outpouring of his Spirit and grace upon the students and the neighborhood. The result of this revival was the hopeful conversion of not a few of the students, a goodly proportion of whom became distinguished for eminent usefulness in the ministry. Others, who never became ministers of the gospel, but were pious and devoted members of the church, dated their first religious impressions from that period. In a communication prepared by Dr. Waddel himself, and published in a periodical well known at that time as the *Panoplist*, he states that nearly half the students then in attendance were under deep conviction, and more than twenty of the number were hopefully converted.

It may be a matter of some interest to state that not only then, but subsequently, some of the prominent ministers known in the south and southwest were students of Willington Academy, or under his instruction as "students of divinity." These were not all from Presbyterian churches, but a few of them belonged to other denominations, reading theology under his direction. One at least, Rev. Daniel Campbell, was an Episcopalian, and another, Rev. John Wilson, was a Baptist, and these, with Presbyterian candidates, were associated with him either in the academy or in private instruction.

Some of the results of this awakening, which are not of public record, were communicated to the writer long after the suspension of the active operations of Willington Academy by one who was acquainted with the facts. The statement referred to gives evidence of the depth of the work

wrought in the spirit of some of the students who were subjects of the revival. So deeply were they affected as to threaten at one time the loss of both physical and mental health. There were four especially thus operated upon, one of whom afterwards was an eminent, eloquent, and successful minister of the gospel, two others elders of high standing in the church, and the fourth a quiet, unassuming member of the church, all having been relieved of their depression. But the result upon one of the elders was that he became painfully and morbidly sensitive in his conscience. The fourth person mentioned became afterwards utterly absorbed, apparently, in his devotional life, so as to render him absent-minded in company, his lips incessantly moving in secret (though inaudible) prayer. It is to be noted that all these persons were consistent Christians in all their lives, notwithstanding these peculiarities These cases illustrate the nature and character of the revival that occurred at the period mentioned. It was the deep and earnest work of solemn presentations of divine truth from the pulpit. The conversion of the sinner was not set forth as a human, but a divine work. Should any regard this form of dealing with sinners as extreme and as beyond measure stern and forbidding (which is not admitted), surely it is far preferable to the opposite method of presenting the whole matter of salvation as a work of such facility as to bring it into ridicule, and almost into contempt.

CHAPTER IX.

Further Notice of the Government and Discipline of Willington Academy.—Domestic History of Dr. Waddel and his Family.

IT is well known that within a few years past a theory has been growing in favor among prominent educators in some parts of our country that the student body should share with the Faculty in the government and discipline of the institution. The experiment has been tried, to some extent, in several colleges, and favorable reports of the success of the effort to reduce the theory to practice have been published. It is too early in the history of this experiment to decide the result, and doubtless there may be found occasionally some friction in its actual working. But if it prove to be a success in these late days of greater freedom of action among the youth of the "rising generation," it will certainly confirm Dr. Ramsay's judgment, as announced in the eulogistic statement of the character of Willington Academy, wherein he attributes to Dr. Waddel great sagacity in his discernment of the best mode of government for students. The germ of this very principle of a division of responsibility between teacher and pupil was in actual existence in that academy more than sixty years ago. In this co-operative system of government, while Dr. Waddel should hold the position of final arbiter in all cases brought up for trial in the academic court, a jury of the peers of the accused was always present, who were allowed to decide upon the guilt or innocence of the party on trial. The system of monitorial supervision to which Dr. Ramsay refers was not of the secret, detective class, but having been appointed by their instructor for the various classes or sub-divisions of

the school, the monitors were known publicly, and were expected by the students themselves to report all violations of law. On every Monday the court was assembled, all the pupils being present. The tribunal was composed of the presiding teacher, the jury of five, the accused, and the witnesses. To every law was annexed a suitable penalty for infraction, varying in its extent with the nature of the offence. After all the testimony had been heard, in case the guilt of the accused was established, the jury rendered a verdict in accordance with law. The penalty was then inflicted by the presiding teacher himself, and the court adjourned.

The writer recalls a scene of this kind related by Dr. Waddel himself. He prefaced it by stating that at one time he experienced great difficulty in his efforts to break up a prevalent habit among the students of settling all personal disputes by fighting. On every successive Monday's court cases would be found upon the calendar, tried, and disposed of; yet the infliction of the penalty of ordinary corporal chastisement had failed to check the evil. He therefore announced publicly that, in case this offence were repeated and reported at any future time, the aggressor should be sentenced "to take off his coat!" Accordingly, at the next meeting of the court, a case of fighting was reported. The trial was conducted regularly through all the forms prescribed by law, and the proof was made clear that the accused party was the aggressor. The order was then issued by Dr. Waddel to him to take off his coat; but instead of promptly obeying, the student, rising from his seat, addressed him as follows: "Dr. Waddel, my father never made me take off my coat, and I shall never take it off for any man!" The order was issued a second and a third time, with the repetition, on the part of the student, of the same defiance. On the third issuance of the order, however, the young hero was informed that if the coat was not

removed by himself, the Dr. would divest him of his coat with his own hands. Suiting the action to the word, he stepped toward the youth, who had repeated the speech entire; but when he perceived that the coat was doomed to come off, whether he would or would not, he added to the expression, "I shall never take it off for any man" the words, "You, sir, excepted!" This closed the unpleasant scene, and when the order was obeyed by the lad, Dr. Waddel proceeded to chastise him with a few strokes of the rod *upon the lower limbs*, as usual, never having designed from the beginning to lay the rod upon the shoulders. The penalty of removing the outer garment was regarded as sufficiently severe, and the result was that no more fights occurred among the students.

Other instances in evidence and illustration of his mode of discipline might be adduced, and they would all confirm a remark made by the historian, Dr. Ramsay: "The discipline of the institution respects the pride of the youth, and is chiefly designed to repress irregular conduct by attaching to it shame and dishonor."

It is perhaps proper at this time that the reader should be admitted to a view of the private history and the domestic life of Dr. Waddel. To the outside world, knowing him only as a public man, there could be but an imperfect appreciation of certain traits and elements of his real personality, which could only be known in the privacy and retirement of his own family circle. He was, no doubt, a representative of a class now almost, if not entirely, extinct. His views of right and wrong were sharply cut, and were drawn from and based upon a Bible standard entirely, and were deeply tinged with Scotch-Irish notions of rigidness to the letter. Future generations, descendants of his former pupils, have the conception of him, handed down by tradition, as of a stern and rigid disciplinarian; but his own children know that the proper word to express that sternness is *firmness*

in the enforcement of what he knew to be right; for whatever may have been the light in which his course of home rule was regarded by his children, under the influence of the impatience of control natural to youth, it is the matured and deliberate opinion of the writer, formed in subsequent review of the circumstances, that all that was apparently so rigid in his discipline resulted from his great anxiety to train his household to obedience and to the abhorrence of evil. It did not deserve the name of unfeeling sternness so much as wise firmness. In after years, when his life was graciously prolonged to witness the outcome of his system of family training in the respectability and usefulness of all his children, and the highly honorable positions attained by some of them, he manifested great enjoyment in their society, and maintained, by correspondence with them, the most unreserved interchange of thought. It is confidently added that, with all his adherence to strict government in his family, there never throbbed in human bosom a more kindly and tender heart. The rule thus truthfully described never lost its power to inspire reverence toward him, but it certainly, in riper years, was softened into affectionate respect for him and confidential intercourse with him.

Mrs. E. W. Waddel, who was the mother of all the children who survived him, presents in the record of her life a picture the reverse of all this in some important points, and yet coöperating harmoniously in all her husband's views of wise and proper government. Yet the contrast between the two was indeed striking. He, all firmness; she, all mildness; he, commanding obedience; she, winning it by gentleness; his course, while not forbidding, at the same time not encouraging, familiarity; hers, always attracting her children to her as companions. This rare combination of opposite elements was doubtless designed by a kind Providence to constitute the best possible agency for establishing such a system of family training as would tend most

wisely to the formation of the character of children. Taken alone, the firm and strict rule of the father might have engendered discontent and aversion; but the loving sway of the mother exerted a conservative power by its wise gentleness. On the contrary, the tenderness of this last method might have produced a disregard and forgetfulness of legitimate authority but for the exaction of implicit obedience on the part of the father. It is only necessary to state the facts very briefly respecting the children of these parents. They were six in number, four of whom were sons, and two daughters, viz.: James Pleasants, Isaac Watts, William Woodson, Sarah Elizabeth, Mary Anna, and John Newton. They all survived their parents, and the last two were still living in 1891.

CHAPTER X.

Conferring of the Degree of D. D.—Foreigners Receiving Instruction From Him in English.—An Incident.—Style of Old-Fashioned Church Building.—Mode of Conducting the Music and of Administering the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.

THE reputation of Dr. Waddel was acknowledged throughout the State, and in the year 1807 he was honored with the degree of Doctor of Divinity by the College of South Carolina during the presidency of Dr. Maxcy. The writer remembers to have seen a small parchment diploma, on which was inscribed the fact that the degree had been conferred, and duly certified by the college authorities. This honor was not so easily obtained, and consequently not so cheap as it has become in the lapse of time. The institutions which felt at that time justified in bestowing it were of the highest rank in the world of letters, and were far more cautious than many of them are in this age as to the individuals upon whom they should confer this honor. But in the case of Dr. Waddel there was excited no surprise that the South Carolina College should have honored him in this way.

It is true, perhaps, as is generally supposed, that his name is more widely known and associated with the cause of education than with the ministry of the gospel; yet in the earliest years of his ministerial life he was much sought after, and he was greatly beloved by the more solid and substantial portions of his congregations, from the fact that he drew all his inspiration from the pure fountain of God's word, of which he was always a close student. There assuredly never entered into his sermons, as an element, the

slightest touch of sensationalism. His delivery was earnest and animated, but by no means boisterous or violent. His sermons were never written out in full. He always prepared skeletons on very small-sized leaves of paper and in a handwriting so diminutive, and with certain hieroglyphics of his own adoption so obscure, as to be almost illegible to any beside himself. He also had Bibles bound of duodecimo size with blank leaves inserted between the pages, on which he wrote these skeletons in this infinitesimal style. There are still in the possession of some of his surviving friends many of these briefs, serving only as relics of him, but not answering any further purpose by reason of their illegible chirography. Yet from these notes he was never at the slightest loss for language, but being a fluent speaker, his habit was to preach rarely ever less than one hour. His distribution of the matter of a sermon was exhaustive, and the peroration, or summing up, of the discourse left the entire sermon clearly and distinctly impressed upon the mind of any attentive listener. The writer, when a student of the University of Georgia, enjoyed the great privilege of sitting as a pupil under the instruction of the eminent and eloquent Rev. Dr. Stephen Olin, at that time professor of Belles Lettres, etc., in the faculty. The text-book which he used was *Blair's Lectures* (University edition). In discussing the lecture on the division of a discourse, the remark was made by Dr. Olin to the class that Dr. Waddel was a perfect example of a preacher who successfully illustrated Dr. Blair's method in this point.

Dr. Waddel's work as a teacher was not all performed in the school-room. He was accustomed to give private instruction occasionally to persons who, coming especially from France, were desirous of learning to speak the English language. Being himself a master of the French language, and very fluent in speaking it, he was prepared to teach such foreigners the use of our tongue. One of these men

having heard of Dr. Waddel as a French teacher, came, on his landing on our shores, applied, and was received as a pupil under his care and as a member of his family. The name of this Frenchman was L'André. On a certain Sabbath day in wintry weather, finding his fire getting low, he went to the wood-pile and began to cut fire-wood. The sound of the axe on the Sabbath being something so extraordinary on those premises (being a violation of positive orders well-known to all the household), fell sharply upon the ear of Dr. Waddel as he sat in his study. He walked out immediately, and, discovering that it was the Frenchman thus engaged, he approached him and explained to him that this work was not allowed to be done on his place on the Sabbath, and showed him the reason for the prohibition. Whereupon Monsieur L'André, being at once convinced of the impropriety of his conduct, and in order to manifest his regret that he had unintentionally violated the rule, seizing the axe, hurled it with his utmost strength and buried it in the trunk of a neighboring tree! Two things are illustrated by this incident: First, the rigid observance of the Sabbath exacted of all the members of that family, and second, the influence of Dr. Waddel in controlling his family, including even "the stranger within his gates." L'André, after a considerable period spent pleasantly with Dr. Waddel, left him and settled permanently in Louisiana.

To return to some matters of more public nature, it may probably interest the reader to have presented some of the peculiarities of public worship as conducted in the Presbyterian churches of the period under consideration. The contrast between the methods then observed and those prevalent in the present time may be worthy of study and observation. To begin with the inside finish of the house of worship itself, it was of plain construction of wooden material, and nothing of ornament, but solid and comfortable. The pews were ordinary benches with backs to them, and

though not invariably rented, yet were generally distributed upon some equitable principle, so that each family occupied its own pew, and the children, as a rule, sat with the parents. The pulpit of the Willington church was a very high, hexagonal, box-like arrangement of panel work, closed on all sides, and entered by a door, which was closed during worship. This pulpit entirely concealed the preacher from view except while engaged in conducting service, and even then his bust only was visible. Some pulpits were furnished with a structure called a sounding board, a flat surface placed behind the preacher and over his head to give distinctness to the voice. At the base of the pulpit, and in front of it, was generally found a little inclosure large enough to contain two persons, and furnished with an ordinary bench. This was assigned to the precentor, or clerk, whose office it was to raise the tune, parceling out the lines after the hymn had been selected and read by the minister. In those primitive days there was a necessity for the clerk to parcel out the lines of the hymn, as scarcely any one was supposed to have a hymn-book in hand.

In these days, when everything, even among our churches, is on the march onward and upward, all this is changed. The old-fashioned high, closed pulpit is banished, and a small desk, just large enough to hold the pulpit Bible and hymn-book, has taken its place. Ornamental pews, or chairs, appear now, instead of the old-fashioned hard benches. The trained choir and a grand organ have been substituted for the solitary clerk and his assistant, with no parceling out of lines, as every one is supposed to have a hymn-book, if, indeed, they are allowed by some choirs to sing at all. But the mode of administering the sacrament of the Lord's supper presented then an equally striking contrast to the same solemn part of public worship as conducted now in our churches. The minister was expected to preach what was technically called "The Action Sermon."

This was understood to be a sermon peculiarly appropriate to the solemn occasion, being an exposition of a passage of Scripture calculated and designed to impress the audience with the great subject of the death and sufferings of our Lord and Saviour, and their purpose in the plan of salvation. At the close of the sermon he proceeded to explain the nature of the sacrament of the Lord's supper, and, after pointing out the qualifications of those who proposed to commune, which exercise was also known by the name of "Fencing the Tables," *i. e.*, guarding them against the intrusion of unworthy characters, the invitation was cordially extended to all who were in good standing in their own churches to come forward and join in partaking of the sacrament. On communion occasions, instead of a public assignment of special pews to be occupied by communicants, pointed out by the minister, and only one service for all, a long table, reaching down the centre aisle, was placed at the time of the communion. At the head of this long table was placed a smaller table, on which the elements were arranged, and covered with snow-white cloth. Over the full length of the long centre table a similar covering was spread. The elders were in the habit of distributing to the communicants little leaden medals, or tokens, as a recognition of their right to a seat. This was done previous to the taking of their seats at the long table, and as they, at the proper time, filed up the aisle and seated themselves at the table, these tokens were collected again by the elders. All being seated, the minister, at the head of the small table, proceeded to administer the ordinance according to forms prescribed. More frequently than otherwise, it was necessary to serve the table more than once, as the number of communicants was often so large that they could not be all seated at one table. As communion meetings were generally largely attended, and the interest was sometimes very great, the minister in charge, almost invariably, secured the assist-

ance of a neighboring brother or brothers to aid him in preaching and serving with him in administering the sacrament, and very often from three to four or five tables were spread and served on one such occasion. Doubtless there are advantages in the changes introduced in modern times in *some* of these customs of public worship; but to those who were actors in those early days of our church life they were all invested with the deepest solemnity, and the influence exerted upon the devout church members was decidedly favorable to their growth in the divine life.

CHAPTER XI.

Work Accomplished as a Teacher.—Men Trained by Him Who Became Distinguished.—Correction of a Statement in Parton's Life of General Jackson.—Arrangements for Retiring from Teaching.

IT is impossible even to name the individuals composing the long list of his pupils, even were it proper to occupy the needed space in this record, or to impose upon the time and patience of the reader to such an extent. For a true and fair estimate of his life work, however, this enumeration is not by any means necessary. It may be sufficient to state that such a catalogue, if presented, would be found to cover all spheres of honorable and useful effort. Of ministers who attained high standing for devoted piety, zeal, and eloquence in the south and southwest a goodly proportion received both their literary and their theological training under his instruction. Such were the Rev. Richard B. Cater, D. D., Rev. John H. Gray, D. D., Rev. David Humphreys, Rev. James Gamble, Rev. James C. Patterson, D. D., Rev. Thomas D. Baird, D. D., Rev. John Wilson, Rev. Daniel Campbell, and many others who have gone long since to their reward. They have left behind them their works, and their influence is still felt by thousands who never knew them on this earth. In public and political life may be found, in addition to John C. Calhoun and to William H. Crawford, both of whom have already been mentioned, George McDuffie, Hugh S. Legaré, James L. Pettigru, Pickens Butler, this last having served in the United States Senate, colleague of Calhoun; all South Carolinians, with others of "less note, but not less gifted," as Noble, Bull,

Dawson, Walker, Marshall, Shields, Simpkins, and others who served the State with eminent success. Then of his Georgia pupils we enumerate, besides Crawford, Cobb, Longstreet, Gilmer, Appling, who reflected great credit upon their teacher in the councils and courts of the State and of the nation.

Just here it falls in with the purpose of this record to vindicate the reputation of Dr. Waddel from a charge of ignorance implied in an anecdote, which is found in Parton's *Life of Andrew Jackson*. As an illustration of the General's habit of pronouncing many English words improperly, the author states that on one occasion the word development came into use in the course of conversation, when the General pronounced it with the accent upon the first and third syllables—"dé-vil-ópe-ment." When corrected he retorted with this defiant remark: "I care not how others pronounce that word; my old teacher, Dr. Waddel, always pronounced it this way, and so shall I!" Now, the absurdity of this story will appear at once when it is well known that General Jackson not only never was a pupil of Dr. Waddel, but there is no proof that they ever met, or had the slightest acquaintance with each other. So that whatever credit might have been reflected upon the memory of Dr. Waddel from numbering the great warrior among his pupils, the truth of history demands that this honor (?) shall be respectfully declined! The friends and descendants of Dr. Waddel are satisfied with the following testimony of Judge Longstreet, who was one of his most honored pupils and most devoted friends and admirers. It is found in a most eloquent eulogy pronounced in Athens, Ga., before the alumni of the University of Georgia, and at their request, in August, 1841:

"The fruits of his vineyard are scattered far and wide through the most of the Southern States, and long have they been seen in rich luxuriance in the capitol of the Union. . .

One of his pupils reached the second post in the gift of the people of the United States, and for many years were two of them the favorites of a vast number of that people for the first. It is not too much to say that there were times when they might have obtained it; and yet the time will never come when unbiased history will record that it was above their deserts. For thirty years he has not been without some Ajax in the field of political warfare, where all the champions of the States convene, whom, whatever we may have thought or said of his tactics, we all felt proud to acknowledge as a southron, and prouder still to recognize as a fellow-disciple."

The entire period of Dr. Waddel's residence at Willington covered a space of fourteen or fifteen years, and during nearly all this time he had been assiduously, either personally or by general superintendence, conducting the government and instruction of the academy. But he had long cherished the desire to withdraw from the practical business of teaching at the earliest possible time consistent with his views of duty. For some length of time the daily work was entrusted to the hands of his nephew, Moses Waddel Dobbins, and perhaps another of his former pupils. This only continued during his actual residence there. It was while Dr. Waddel was devoting more of his attention to preaching and to his private interests that he received an urgent and persistent invitation to the presidency of the University of Georgia. This call proceeded from the friends of the institution, among whom were some of his former pupils. That he was for a long time decidedly opposed to the proposition is matter of tradition, coming down from an intimate friend to whom he communicated his views and feelings on the subject. That friend has been heard to say that his mental anxiety, while considering the question, was deep and his sufferings extreme. The idea of undertaking the heavy responsibility involved in resuscitating the institution from a condition of temporary suspension into which it had fallen,

and to impart to it that life and animation which would be naturally expected, and which was so desirable, was viewed with profound reluctance on his part, and was regarded as a Herculean enterprise. His objections were all met and overruled by his friends, and he was even visited by a committee, and urged so strongly to accept the office that he yielded. To this decision he was, doubtless, also led in answer to his own earnest prayers for divine guidance. His election to this high and important position occurred in 1818, and he began the preparations that were needful to his removal from the spot where he had passed so many happy and peaceful years of his life, and where he had so successfully laid the foundation of an enduring fame.

CHAPTER XII.

Memoir of Caroline Elizabeth Smelt.—Removal to Athens.—Previous History of the University.—Condition of Buildings and Endowment.—Prospects.

IT was about this time when he was considering the question of removal, that at the earnest request of some highly-esteemed friends in Augusta, Ga., he consented to "revise, arrange, and prepare for publication the papers containing the memoirs of Miss Caroline Elizabeth Smelt." This task was to him a labor of love, and the book was published in 1819 in New York. It proved to be "a highly-interesting and popular work, which soon reached a third edition in this country and at least two in Great Britain." He remained at Willington until 1819, when, having perfected all his plans for removal, he left Willington with his family, and, pursuing his journey by private conveyance, as it was long before the era of railway travel, he arrived at Athens in May, and at once began the work which he came to perform.

Some preliminary history of the university may not be out of place just at this point, to show the exact condition of things as they existed on the accession of Dr. Waddel to the Presidency. The first notice of the University found in the archives of the State is the act of the Legislature of 1784, in the eleventh section of which act forty thousand acres of land were set apart for the endowment of a college or seminary of learning. This was followed, in 1785, by an act of the Legislature granting a charter for the establishment of an institution which was called "The University of Georgia." This was not carried into a regular organization until the

year 1801. A statement of Dr. Henry Hull, who describes those early times, is to the following effect: "The Governor, the State Senate, and the Board of Trustees of the University of Georgia being stirred to action by public complaints of their neglect of that institution, which had hitherto existed only on paper, met and appointed a committee to select a site for its location." The result of the investigations of this committee was the selection of a spot on the Oconee river (which was the site of the present city of Athens), and a tract of land consisting of six hundred and thirty-three acres of land was purchased there by the munificence of the Governor, John Milledge, and presented as a donation to the trustees. The election of the first president, Josiah Meigs, took place in the same year, 1801, and he resigned in 1811. He was succeeded by Rev. Dr. John Brown, whose term of service ended in 1816. The third president was Rev. Robert Finley, D. D., of New Jersey, whose term of service continued but a few months, and he died in 1817.

The same writer referred to above (Dr. Henry Hull) states: "The prospect of the college grew darker, until for three years, 1817–'18–'19, there was a virtual suspension of work. In 1819 the board elected to the presidency the most popular educator in the south, Rev. Dr. Moses Waddel. Dr. Henry Jackson, Mr. John R. Golding, and Dr. Alonzo Church were elected professors, and Mr. Ebenezer Newton tutor. These constituted the best Faculty the college had ever had, which, together with the new endowment, gave new life to the Institution. The philosophical hall was built and equipped with new apparatus, and the University entered upon a career of usefulness which is unabated to the present day."

On the arrival of Dr. Waddel in Athens he found that the President's house had, after the lapse of some fifteen years or more, fallen into such a condition as to require considerable repairs, and could not on that account be occupied.

While the needed renovation was in progress, he, with his family, consisting of his wife and five children, took boarding at what was then known as "Steward's Hall, or "Commons," for students. This building was located at a distance of two or three hundred yards south of the old college, and it was then in the charge of a lady, described in Dr. Hull's *Sketches of the Early History of Athens* "as the venerable and venerated Mrs. Katherine Newton." In this she was assisted by her son, Colonel Josiah Newton. She was "the relict of the Rev. John Newton, mentioned in Chap. I., page 29, of this Memoir as one of the successive presiding teachers of "Clio's Nursery," while Dr. Waddel was one of its pupils. Mr. Newton was then a candidate for the ministry, but was afterwards licensed and ordained to the full work of the gospel ministry. Dr. Hull states that "he was the first Presbyterian minister, or, at any rate, the first settled pastor in Georgia." Be that as it may, at the time here mentioned Mrs. Newton was a widow, with three sons in Athens. How long this temporary abode at the hall with her continued is not now known, but Dr. Waddel entered the President's house at the earliest possible period. At this time the buildings belonging to the University were but three in number, consisting of the President's house, a story and a-half in height; the old College building, of brick, three stories high, and an old dilapidated framed building on the west side of the campus, which had been used as a chapel, and, after undergoing considerable repairs, was made to serve the purpose of morning and evening prayers. It was also for years afterwards the only house for public worship in the town of Athens. It was afterwards demolished, and a very large and imposing building of brick of modern architecture was erected on the same site, at a cost of fifteen thousand dollars. While these repairs of the old chapel were progressing the first story of the new philosophical hall alluded to above was used for a chapel and house of

worship. This hall was erected after Dr. Waddel's accession to office. But when the old chapel was fully fitted up and furnished with a cupola for the bell, it was used as the place for college prayers again. The college bell, previous to this arrangement, had been suspended between two huge oaks in front of the President's house, which grew close enough to each other to admit of placing a cross-axle between them, on which the bell could be fastened, and near enough to the ground to admit of being reached by the venerable colored sexton, old Dick Cary, as he was called, well described by Dr. Hull as being "a tall, fine-looking old negro, wearing his white hair very long—that is to say, very bushy. He was always well-dressed, and deported himself as if he considered his office in the college second only to Dr. Waddel's, and from no other would he take orders."

The buildings erected on the campus during Dr. Waddel's administration were as follows: A four-story brick college dormitory on the west side of the campus, which was burned down in 1830, with the fine library and all the furniture contained in it, after his resignation. Halls for the accommodation of the two literary societies were also erected by the students and their friends. The first hall of the Demosthenian Society was of wooden material, and was located just south of the Philosophical Hall, on the east side of the campus. This building was afterwards sold and removed to North street, where it was converted into a dwelling. This society then erected a large brick hall, two stories in height, on the north side of the chapel, which remains to this day. The first room used for the accommodation of the Phi Kappa Society was in the garret of the old chapel, which was fitted up comfortably and adapted to the work of the society. This was not used very long; but the students of that society next built a hall of wood, being a long building of a single story in height, and was located just north of the second dormitory. This hall, in its internal arrange-

ment, consisted of one spacious room for the duties of the society, with ante-rooms in front, one of which was used as a library. This building was afterwards turned over to the authorities of the University, and used for a time as a recitation-room. The society then had a fine brick hall built, located north of the site of the first president's house, on the east side of the campus. This remains still the Phi-Kappa Hall. The only additional building put up during Dr. Waddel's administration was a two-story framed building for the accommodation of the Grammar School. This house was afterwards removed entirely from the campus, and a brick building erected on the site, used for a library and other University purposes. This house stood north of the Demosthenian Hall, and on the west side of the campus.

Before leaving the subject of buildings which belonged to the University during the term of Dr Waddel's presidency, it is proper to state that in 1819, except the house of the President, the Board had provided no residences for the other members of the Faculty. When Dr. Church was elected he at once proceeded to build a very excellent two-story framed dwelling on a beautiful and large lot in the northern part of the town. Before, however, it was completed he accepted a proposition from Dr. Waddel to exchange places with him; that is, that Dr. Church should sell his house and lot to Dr. Waddel and occupy the President's house as his residence. Not long after this the house into which Dr. Church removed was greatly improved, a second story being added, with other comfortable arrangements. Dr. Waddel continued to reside in the house bought of Dr. Church until he resigned and left the town of Athens. The other buildings, now the property of the University, will be pointed out in the narrative as it progresses.

The condition of the endowment at the time of Dr. Waddel's election was about as follows, according to the most authentic information accessible: By an act of the Legis-

lature of 1815, the arrangement of the income from the lands of the University having proved to be unsatisfactory, it was agreed that the State should assume $100,000 of the amount for which the lands had been sold, on which eight per cent. interest should be paid to the trustees for the support of the University. "This sum has been annually paid to the institution by the State regularly down to the present day." This was the income of the Institution in 1819 from public sources at the beginning of Dr. Waddel's presidency. There was a fee for tuition charged to each student, which, of course, increased this amount. But all other appropriations from the State were donations made to replace losses, and they were only temporary, and after the year 1841, "until 1875, a period of thirty-four years, nothing was done for the University by the State." With a single brief extract from the eulogy of Judge Longstreet, in reference to the effect of Dr. Waddel's entrance upon the office of the Presidency, this chapter may be closed: "The effect of his coming to this Institution was magical. It rose instantly to a rank which it had never held before, and which, I am happy to add, it has maintained ever since."

CHAPTER XIII.

Sketches of Dr. Waddel's Colleagues of the Faculty from 1819 to

John R. Golding, A. M.

IT has already been mentioned that three Professors were associated with Dr. Waddel at the time of his election to the Presidency, in 1819. Of these, the record of two of them, Dr. Henry Jackson and Mr. John R. Golding, as found in the Centennial Catalogue of the university, is that they were elected in 1811, and that Professor Golding resigned in 1819, and Dr. Jackson resigned in 1820. No further mention is made of the former, yet a brief sketch of his life may not be without interest, as he remained a citizen of Athens, and was an esteemed and intimate friend of the President. It is not probable that he performed any active service as professor after Dr. Waddel's accession, but he had been in the service of the institution during Dr. Brown's administration, and the probability is that, being called to the same chair by the Board on the reörganization, he declined the office, as his resignation took place in 1819. Of his professional career, this writer is in possession of no reliable data, as he does not seem to have been identified officially with the Faculty in 1819; but in regard to his character and reputation as a gentleman and a citizen of Athens, he was highly esteemed. He had at some previous period married a daughter of President Brown, but at the time now under consideration he was a widower, with only one child, a son, who bore his father's name, John Reid Golding. Mr. Golding was a gentleman of great personal dignity and scholarly attainments, and was admired for his

courteous demeanor and easy address in intercourse with his friends and neighbors. Subsequently he married again, and the lady who became his second wife was a daughter of Judge Nott, of Columbia, S. C. Not very long after his second marriage he died suddenly of apoplexy. Although not a colleague, he was an esteemed and intimate friend of Dr. Waddel.

HENRY JACKSON, LL. D.

Dr. Henry Jackson, whose name is mentioned in connection with the foregoing as a member of the Faculty in 1819, seems also to have held office with President Brown, having been elected Professor of Natural Philosophy in 1811. But referring again to the Centennial Catalogue, it is found that Dr. Jackson's election to the chair of Natural Philosophy took place in 1822, and his resignation in 1825; that he was reëlected in 1826, serving only one session, on account of failing health. Dr. Jackson was a man of fine traits of character, not only in social life, but in every capacity or sphere in which he was known. He was a gentleman of great scientific attainments, and was repeatedly appointed to office in the service of the University, until he was forced to retire from loss of health. He had been associated with Hon. William H. Crawford, Minister to France in 1813, as secretary of legation. After his resignation, in 1827, he retired to his country seat near Athens. He was very much beloved and admired by the students who were his pupils while he was a member of the Faculty, and they frequently rode out to pay their respects to him after his retirement, and they always found him ready to receive them with that true cordiality characteristic of the perfect gentleman that he was. On such occasions he was wont, in animated conversation, to impart to them the rich fruits of his life of study and experience. His retirement from the service of the University was regarded at the time as well-nigh irre-

parable. He was a brother of James Jackson, Governor of Georgia. He died at his country seat near Athens, leaving a son, Hon. Henry R. Jackson, a citizen of Georgia, distinguished as a jurist and a statesman.

Dr. James Tinsley.

This gentleman is mentioned as having been elected, in 1820, Professor of Chemistry and Natural Philosophy. The description of this erratic man, as we find it in Dr. Hull's interesting *Sketches*, to which the writer is already indebted for passages preceding, will give a life-like picture which many now living will at once recognize. Dr. Hull's narrative is as follows:

"Dr. James Tinsley, a native of Columbia county, Ga., was a cotemporary of Judge Longstreet at Dr. Waddel's school in Willington, S. C. He studied medicine with Dr. Abbot, in Washington, Ga., and attended lectures in Philadelphia, where his extraordinary talents began to be developed. He was a distinguished member of a large class, and in their debating clubs, composed of Professors and students, attracted the notice and admiration of the Professors of that celebrated school. He returned to Washington after his graduation and commenced the practice with Dr. Abbott, who held him in the highest estimation, and made unusual efforts to introduce him into his own extensive practice. But Tinsley was erratic, and defied the conventional rules of practice of medicine and of society, and in a year or two, in 1820, Dr. Abbot, who was an influential member of the Board of Trustees, procured for him the Professorship of Chemistry and Natural Philosophy in *Franklin College*." (This name was given to the University of Georgia at the origin of the State system of education, and by this name it was known as generally and called as frequently as by the name of "University of Georgia" in those days.) Dr. Hull goes on to say: "He was totally unqualified for the chair,

but his friends thought that the wonderful power of his intellect would overcome his want of training and enable him to sustain himself. Dr. Tinsley, however, could not endure the quiet routine of College life, and, after two years of irksome restraint, resigned." It is not necessary to follow the career of this singular character in minute detail, and it may be dismissed by simply adding that, after a life spent in almost every conceivable variety of pursuits, exposing himself, "without overcoat, umbrella, or any protection to the most inclement weather, with his shirt-collar and bosom open, and often without a hat," although "subject to violent and alarming hemorrhages from the lungs," from being comfortably wealthy he became poor; was a contractor, and made brick and built houses; practiced medicine and surgery without any of the needful instruments; and while he affected great contempt for etiquette in his intercourse with others, whenever he chose "he could act the courteous gentleman with charming grace." In Dr. Hull's expressive words, "thus he frittered quite away the richest endowments of intellectual wealth, which, if properly directed, would have made him eminently useful in his day." Thus he lived, and, removing from Georgia to Alabama, he shortly afterwards died in comparative obscurity.

REV. JOSEPH WALLACE, A. M.

The name which stands next on the roll after Professor Golding's, as Professor of Ancient Languages, is that of Rev. Joseph Wallace, who was elected to that chair in 1820. He was a minister of the Associate Reformed Presbytery of Philadelphia, having taken his divinity course in the Theological school established by the Rev. John M. Mason in the city of New York.

The most obvious feature of Professor Wallace as a man that invariably impressed, not only strangers, but all who knew him only partially, was his unbending stiffness of man-

ner. This appeared in his conversational style, in his imperturbable gravity, in the absence of anything like a smile to irradiate his countenance; and yet the equal freedom from every symptom of passion, or excitement of ill-temper. There is no reason to doubt his possession of full qualification for the Professorship he was called to fill. Yet there is no traditional history of his traits as a scholar or teacher, either favorable or unfavorable. In the pulpit, which he occasionally occupied, he carried the same precise and lofty manner, approaching stiffness; and his voice, while sufficiently loud and sonorous, was not remarkable for its variety, but was rather monotonous. While he remained in office he was unmarried, but becoming acquainted with a lady from the lower part of South Carolina, a widow of reputed wealth, a summer visitor at Athens, he addressed her and they were married. This closed his professional career, and he left the University in 1822, and lived after his marriage on the fine plantation in the neighborhood of Beaufort, S. C., of which he became master by this marriage. In 1836 he is reported by Dr. Howe to have been "received as a member of the Charleston Union Presbytery, and his name is entered on the Minutes of the General Assembly as 'W. C.' *i. e.*, without charge. What labors soever he may have performed were devoted to the colored people among whom he resided." He died in 1852, or 1853.

It is noteworthy that, after the resignation of Professor Wallace, in 1822, there is no record of any incumbent being appointed to the chair he had filled until 1830. This was not occasioned by the fact that the Ancient Languages had been stricken from the course of study, but for some reason not now known the instruction in the Classics was placed in the hands of tutors, and a part of the duties of that chair were distributed among the other members of the Faculty until 1830.

REV. ALONZO CHURCH, D. D.

Dr. Church was elected Professor of Mathematics and Astronomy in 1819, as already stated, and began his connection as Professor with the University simultaneously with the Presidency of Dr. Waddel. He filled this chair for ten years, and on the resignation of Dr. Waddel, in 1829, he was called immediately to the vacant Presidency. He presided to the great advantage of the University for thirty years, and in 1859 resigned the office and retired to private life.

The only records of his life previous to his entrance upon the professorship are drawn from Dr. Howe's *History of the Presbyterian Church in South Carolina*, as found, first, in Vol. II., page 369. It is there briefly stated that, "at a meeting of the Presbytery (of Hopewell) in September, 1817, Alonzo Church, a graduate of Middlebury College (Vermont), was received as a candidate for the ministry." We learn from the same volume, on page 772, that "he was first a teacher in the academy at Eatonton," Putnam county, Ga. He came from that place to the University at Athens.

The writer retains a very distinct recollection of Dr. Church, as he was a student under his instruction from 1826 to 1829. He was a tall and finely-proportioned man, graceful and dignified in his carriage, of dark and bloodless complexion, and of very black eyes and hair. His eyes were remarkable for their bright and piercing lustre. He was quick of temper, and respected by all orderly and correct students, but by the negligent and disorderly he was feared and avoided more than any other Professor. A rigid disciplinarian, he was prompt to correct and rebuke the slightest indication of disorder or inattention in his class-room. He acted as librarian at one time, and the library was then kept in the third story of the second dormitory. This room he occupied as his study during day-time, as it opened into his class or lecture room. The preservation of order during

study hours at night was entrusted to tutors, who used rooms in the dormitories, both as studies and sleeping rooms. Their duties were also aided in this respect by professors in daylight.

An incident that occurred during the attendance of the writer as a student will illustrate the promptness of Dr. Church in quelling disorder, and the fear always excited among the students by any manifestation of his displeasure. A glance at his domestic history will enable the reader more properly to appreciate the circumstances of the case. The Doctor was the father of four daughters before a son was born to him. On the news of the birth of this son being learned by the students, it was suggested at once that a petition should be presented to the Faculty for holiday in compliment to the family, and as a welcome to the advent of the young stranger. Just before eleven o'clock A. M., which was the hour for recitation, the petition was returned, having been granted. It so happened that just then, in the fourth story of the dormitory, were gathered in the room just above Dr. Church's study some half-dozen of the most orderly students, preparing for recitation. On the presentation to them of the decision of the Faculty, it was received by a most boisterous shouting and laughter and stamping upon the floor as a manifestation of the exuberance of their joy. In a very few minutes, to our utter amazement and fright, Dr. Church made his appearance, and, when the door was opened and he discovered that the actors were students of the most orderly character, he lifted his hands and exclaimed: "Why, gentlemen, I am more than astonished!" The students had only time to say to him, "Doctor, we have holiday," when he left them abruptly, and they began to suspect that they had been "badly sold," and that there was no holiday, as Dr. Church seemed not to be aware of it. They anticipated nothing less than a summons before the Faculty upon a charge of disorderly conduct, but

this suspense was soon ended, as Dr. Church, after leaving the room, encountered a student, and on inquiring the reason of the holiday, and learning that it was on the occasion of the birth of his son, returned immediately, explained, and apologized. So all ended happily, and Alonzo Church, Jr., on his arrival, was greeted with a demonstration not usually bestowed upon our boys

The pulpit talents of Dr. Church were held in high estimation by some who enjoyed the privilege of his ministrations. He occasionally filled the pulpit in Athens, but he performed a great deal of missionary and evangelistic preaching for country churches and congregations in reach of Athens. It is a noble tribute to his memory which is found in a memorial adopted by the Synod of Georgia, and recorded in the Minutes of 1870, page 6: "It was his delight and glory to preach the gospel to the poor, nor did he cease to do this to the day of his death."

GAMALIEL S. OLDS, A. M.

This gentleman was appointed Professor of Natural Philosophy in 1825, after Dr. Henry Jackson's first retirement. He resigned in 1826, and as he served but one session, there is nothing of interest on record of his talents, qualities, or his success. His name may, therefore, be dismissed, with the single remark that he possessed no traits of practical usefulness, and that his term of service furnishes nothing affecting the history of the University, whether for good or evil.

PROFESSOR JAMES JACKSON, A. M.

The next full Professor who was a colleague of Dr. Waddel was James Jackson, A. M. He was elected to the chair of Chemistry in 1823, and on the retirement of his uncle, Dr. Henry Jackson, in 1827, he succeeded him as Professor of Natural Philosophy. Taking the two chairs together, his

term of service continued through the Presidency of Dr. Waddel; but in 1842 he was relieved of the duties of the chair of Natural Philosophy, after serving fifteen years in it, by the election of Dr. C. F. McCay. After this change he continued to fill the chair of Chemistry, &c., until 1850, when, after twenty-three years of laborious work, he resigned, and was succeeded by Dr. W. L. Jones. Professor Jackson was a man of more than ordinary attainments in many departments of literature and science. He instructed the classes for some years in Latin and in French. He was a son of Governor James Jackson, and a nephew of Dr. Henry Jackson. He was an elder in the Presbyterian church in Athens, and had a most interesting family. During his residence in Athens he was subject to periodical attacks of sick headache, which interfered not a little with his attendance on class exercises. At the time of these attacks he suffered too intensely to admit of his leaving his room. He was a man of irreproachable character, and his long service of twenty-three years in various departments is of itself an evidence of his merit and a testimonial of the high estimation in which he was held by the Board.

Rev. Stephen Olin, D. D.

This eminent man and minister of the gospel in the Methodist Episcopal Church was a native of Vermont, and graduated at Middebury College, in that State, in 1820. He was a teacher first in South Carolina, and there joined the Conference, and was stationed for two years in Charleston. In 1826 he was elected to the chair of Ethics and Metaphysics in the University of Georgia, and in 1828 resigned in consequence of ill-health. He was a very remarkable man in many respects. Of extraordinary physical size, not fleshy, but tall, and broad and muscular, of large head, and countenance indicative of determined will, one would judge, from his appearance, that when in health he must have pos-

sessed very great physical power. As a Professor, he was unsurpassed in the power of imparting knowledge and of exerting an influence over students. It was considered a great privilege to "sit at his feet" as a teacher and to have been numbered among his pupils. As a preacher, he was grand in thought and eloquent in delivery, and held his audience rapt in admiration and transported by his eloquence. His health was very precarious, and he resigned in 1828, after two years' service. He was recalled in 1831, and served a second term of two years. After his resignation, in 1833, he accepted the Presidency of Randolph-Macon College, in Virginia. He travelled subsequently for some time in Europe, Egypt, and Palestine, and his travels were published in two volumes. In 1842 he was made President of Wesleyan University, at Middletown, Conn., and remained in that office until his death.

The remaining members of the faculty of this period, from 1819 to 1829, were eight in number, and the term of service of these, who were tutors, varied from one to five years, only one of whom served as long as five years. Of the first, J. J. Kilpatrick, so little is known as to require only that he should be named as holding the office one year. The same may be said of C. D. Davis.

REV. ALEXANDER H. WEBSTER, A. M.

With regard to the gentleman whose name stands at the head of this paragraph a much more interesting sketch should be written. He was an earnest and devoted Christian teacher during his term of service in the University, and enjoyed the unqualified friendship of Dr. Waddel and of Dr. Church. He retired, at the close of his tutorship of two years, in 1823, and located himself in Washington, Ga., where he had charge of the church and academy until his death, in 1828.

In addition to his many claims to high esteem and gratitude from the State for his public services, Mr. Webster deserves the credit of being mainly instrumental in securing for Alexander Stevens the academic and collegiate education which fitted that noble Christian statesman for the great services he afterwards rendered to his native State and to the whole government. The exceedingly interesting account of the whole transaction is recorded in the *Life of A. H. Stephens*, by Johnston & Brown, on pages 47–51.

James P. Waddel, A. M.

As this gentleman occupied the tutorship only two years, and subsequently filled the chair of Ancient Languages in the University for a term of twenty years, it is only necessary to say that when he resigned, in 1824, he left the University with an exalted reputation as a scholar and teacher, and retired to prosecute his career as an educator in several prominent places, among which were the Richmond Academy, in Augusta, Ga., which he occupied for six years, and at Willington, S. C., where he revived the academy founded by his father. There he remained until 1836, when he removed to Athens and became Professor of Ancient Languages. Before his settlement in Athens in connection with the University he had been elected to the same chair in the year 1830 at the annual meeting of the trustees of the University in August. It was then the provision of the act by which the University was originally established, in 1785, that "the general superintendence and regulation of the literature of the State should be confided to two bodies—one consisting of the Governor and Council, the Speaker of the house of assembly, and the Chief Justice, and the other consisting of thirteen persons, to be called "the Board of Trustees." These two bodies, united, were to constitute the "Senatus Academicus of the University of Georgia." This "Senatus Academicus" was in existence in 1830, but was

abolished December 14, 1859. It was about the year 1830 that considerable excitement prevailed throughout the State among the various denominations of the Christian church upon the subject of education. Among other feelings that were developed was that of a jealousy of the University, upon the ground that there seemed to have been a monopoly of the offices in the Faculty enjoyed by one denomination to too large an extent. The fact was that the administration of the external and internal affairs of the University had been in the hands of Presbyterian Presidents from its organization in 1801, as a school of the higher learning, to the time of this election of James P. Waddel, in 1830; and it may be added, that Presbyterian Presidency continued to be the order of affairs for twenty-nine years longer. The trustees had not excluded any gentleman and scholar from a Professorship in this long period, but there had been incumbents of the subordinate offices from the other churches whenever the trustees were convinced of the fact that a candidate possessed the requisite qualifications. It is certainly not to be attributed to any partiality on the part of the Board that Presbyterians had been invariably appointed to the Presidency for fifty-nine years. But on the election of Professor Waddel, in 1830, great dissatisfaction was found to exist, and was made known through the journals of the State on the subject of the appointment of another Presbyterian. The ground of complaint was based upon the fact that the University was a State institution, the property of the State, and hence all classes of the people were entitled justly to a representation in its management. The excitement grew in intensity, until, at the meeting of the Senatus Academicus, in December, 1830, at the seat of government, the action of the trustees at their meeting in August preceding was reviewed and reconsidered, and, to allay the dissatisfaction of the malcontent denomination, Professor Waddel (who had not entered upon the duties of the chair to which he had

been elected) was superseded by the appointment of the Rev. James Shannon, pastor of the Baptist church in Augusta, Ga. This gentleman held the office until 1835, and resigned to accept the Presidency of the Missouri University, and not long thereafter he left the Baptist church and entered the Christian (Campbellite) church, and died not long after he had vacated the Presidency of the University of Missouri.

On the retirement of Professor Shannon from the chair of Ancient Languages in the Georgia University, in 1835, the Board of Trustees called Professor Waddel to the vacant chair, in 1836, which he filled with entire acceptance for twenty years. In 1856 a state of dissatisfaction occurred in the Faculty, and it became necessary for him and a large number of his colleagues to resign, in order that the Board might reorganize the Faculty and secure harmony. It is unnecessary to explain this state of things, but it was not the result of any deficiency on his part, or on that of the others who were with him, either as gentlemen or scholars. But it was in consequence of serious differences of judgment on the part of these professors as regarded "the government of young men and the standard of attainment for graduation." Professor Waddel then removed from Athens to Montgomery, Ala., where he was engaged in teaching a select class of young men at high compensation until the war began. He had found his health on the decline, and had resolved that he must abandon teaching. He was then invited by Governor Moore, of Alabama, to accept the position of Secretary in the Governor's office, and on the election to the office of Governor of John Gill Shorter (a favorite pupil of his), he was called to the same office, and subsequently he filled the same office under Governor Watts. This was the last service he was ever to perform of a public nature. At the close of the war, in feeble health, he returned to Athens, and ended his days in the house of his son, William

Henry Waddel, who had filled the chair of Languages from 1860 in the University of Georgia under the Presidency of Chancellor Lipscombe. He died of paralysis on May 27, 1868, after having been a laborious and accomplished teacher for forty-one years, aged sixty-seven years five months and twenty-one days.

I think it will be not without interest to his former pupils, some of whom still survive him, to read the subjoined testimonial, furnished by my friend and former colleague, Professor John R. Blake, at La Grange, Tenn. Professor Blake was a member of the class of 1846, and graduated with high distinction. He has filled several chairs in the educational institutions of the South.

"*Recollections of Professor James P. Waddel.*

"I recall with much pleasure the kind and sympathetic nature, cordial manner, and high-toned Christian bearing of my friend, Professor James P. Waddel, while I was his pupil at Athens, Ga. In the class-room and out of it he always greeted his students with a genial recognition which invited confidence and secured esteem from every generous heart. As a teacher, he exhibited classic taste and accurate scholarship. There was also a poetic vein in his mental composition which gave to his rendition of Greek and Roman authors an elegance peculiar to himself. To his pupils he allowed much liberty in their translations, giving the freest scope to the individuality of each, that every one might develop the most natural and easy forms of thought and expression, reserving to himself the duty of retouching those forms when the work was finished.

"As a disciplinarian, Professor Waddel relied mainly upon the gentlemanly instincts of his pupils. He was always kind and courteous in his bearing towards them, and by his own scrupulous politeness compelled respect from all who had any proper appreciation of moral excellence. When

occasion offered, however, he could rebuke with telling effect, while still maintaining a courtly dignity of demeanor. . . . . On one occasion some unknown hand had cast a handful of shot into the room as the class was entering. The Professor remained silent for a moment, then, looking round upon the rear of the entering class, he broke forth in withering sarcasm upon the unknown offender, pointing out how far he had forgotten the courtesy due from gentlemen and the chivalry to be expected from Southern young men. The offence was never repeated, nor could I ever find one bold enough to confess the authorship of the deed."

Rev. James C. Patterson, D. D.

This gentleman was appointed tutor in 1823, one year after his graduation, and resigned, after a service of two years, in 1825. He was a solid and substantial character, an excellent scholar, with more reality in his merit than many who made more showy appearances. He succeeded afterwards Rev. Joseph C. Stiles as supply of the church in Macon, Ga., in 1828, when that church was in its infancy. He continued to serve that people as their minister "for a period of three years, much interrupted by ill-health. He died on July 18, 1866, in the sixty-third year of his age."

Of Ephraim S. Hopping it may be said that he filled the office of tutor for three years, from 1824 to 1827, giving entire satisfaction to all concerned; was licensed to preach, but was never ordained. On his resignation, he soon after married a lady of wealth and refinement, and became a planter. He was a most genial and kind-hearted gentleman, and was beloved and respected by the students. He was a graduate of Princeton College, N. J., and was a fine classical scholar. He died of a painful affection of his head and face, but it is not known in what year he died.

CHAPTER XIV.

University Administration During Dr. Waddel's Presidency.—His Life in Athens —His Services to the Cause of Christian Education.

THE sketches of Dr. Waddel's colleagues being closed, the narrative will now return to the more special record of his personal history. There can be no doubt that his views and practice upon the subject of discipline were, even in his day, not in perfect accord with those prevalent in many parts of the country. Having been for so many years independent of all outside control or dictation as to the management of his academy, and never having been accustomed to seek counsel of man, he naturally felt that he himself was responsible for the administration of the affairs, external and internal, of the University to the best advantage. Having been so successful in his preceding years as a disciplinarian, and as he had abundant testimony, voluntarily furnished by his former patrons and pupils, that his mode of government had proved to be eminently satisfactory, he perhaps anticipated that the management required in the University would partake of the same essential features by which his former administration had been characterized. Finding himself surrounded by various influences, and that there were others who must, in a measure, control affairs in the University, and that to them he should be held responsible, he very readily adopted and put into practice many modifications of the system to which he had formerly been accustomed. The consequence was that the term of his Presidential rule was eminently successful. The statement that he believed in and practiced *corporal punishment* for

College students is a mistake. This idea was, on one occasion, suggested by a most excellent trustee, of old-fashioned views, that "boys of the Freshman class who needed punishment ought to be whipped." But that such a proposition ever proceeded from Dr. Waddel, or that such a mode of correction was ever put into execution as regards University students, cannot be shown. The basis for the erroneous statement is a single entry in Dr. Waddel's diary, still extant, as follows: "Caught ——— chewing tobacco, and whipped him." The explanation of this entry is that some old friends and pupils had prevailed upon Dr. Waddel to receive into his family their sons, young lads, to be trained exactly as his own children. These boys never entered college while with him; and so he did train them, controlling and correcting them when necessary, as any sons of his own would have been treated.

One other fact may be mentioned as showing the mistaken views entertained by some in regard to college discipline. One of the trustees, not a resident of Athens, became greatly offended by receiving an anonymous letter from some one, supposed to be a student, who ridiculed and insulted him in the communication. Charging it as a gross offence, and considering it the duty of the President to arrest and punish the offender, when it could not be ascertained who the writer was, he visited his wrath upon the President and Faculty, and if he had been a man of influence he might have effected some evil result. But it all passed off in smoke, and nothing ever came of the matter, as it was impossible to institute any proceedings that would lead to a detection of the author of the quiz. Just at this point it is appropriate to introduce the following estimates of Dr. Waddel as a disciplinarian, as they have both been published, as the unbiased judgment of two high-toned gentlemen intimately acquainted with him, and fellow-citizens thoroughly cognizant of his whole career at Athens. The

first of these testimonials is from Dr. Hull's *Sketches of Athens*, to which reference has already been made. Says he: "His administration of the University was singularly successful. From the handful of students he found (mustering seven students at full roll-call), the attendance increased to one hundred or more, and for ten years, with wise counsel and inflexible discipline, he kept the Institution ever advancing." So Dr. Church, who was his associate in the Faculty and his intimate friend for ten years, thus writes of him in this particular in a letter found in the *Annals of the American Pulpit*, by Dr. Sprague, Vol. IV., pp. 68 and 70: "Dr. Waddel was, in the estimation of some, a stern disciplinarian, and yet no man was more mild or conciliatory toward those who were disposed to do their duty, and no one was ever more ready to aid his pupils in their efforts to acquire knowledge. His study was at all times open to those seeking assistance, and he would lay aside the most interesting and important business to answer the inquiries of a student." In another place Dr. Church speaks of him thus: "The circumstances of the university were, when Dr. Waddel was called to preside over it, peculiarly embarrassing. They were such as no one can fully comprehend who was not connected with it; they were such, I am fully persuaded, as few men would have been able to meet, without ultimately abandoning it in despair. And to the wisdom and prudence and reputation of that good man is Georgia very largely indebted for the respectability and usefulness of her State College. The success which attended his efforts in raising the Institution so rapidly as he did to respectability has been to many inexplicable; but to those who well understood his character, the success is by no means surprising." Of the Board of Trustees in office during his Presidency, numbering thirty or more, there were some very distinguished men of the State, such as William H. Crawford, George R. Gilmer, John M. Berrien, George M.

Troup, Thomas W. Cobb, and Duncan G. Campbell, some of whom were old pupils, but none of them residents of Athens. There were, however, three members of the Board who were citizens of Athens, with whom he was associated on terms of warm and intimate friendship and unreserved confidence. These were Hon. Augustine S. Clayton, Dr. James Nisbet, and Dr. Henry Hull. They were all prominent in the town by reason of their intelligence and high social position. They were the esteemed counsellors of Dr. Waddel on all subjects which involved the interests of the University. At the time of his removal to Athens the only place of public worship was the old chapel, and afterwards the Philosophical Hall. The Presbyterian church was organized by Dr. Waddel March 4, 1821, with fourteen members, and afterwards the congregation erected a very excellent framed house of worship, then considered quite a fine-looking building. It was located on the north side of the University campus, on the main street of the town. He served this church as stated supply for nearly ten years, and after his removal the church called to the pastorate Rev. Dr. Nathan Hoyt, who served the people for thirty-seven years.

A prominent trait of Dr. Waddel, as an educator, known to his intimate friends, was his persistent determination to give to all his educational system an impression of Christian character. On this subject the writer prefers, for obvious reasons, to avail himself of the letter of Dr. Church, not only as that of one whose testimony cannot be biased by the partiality of a kinsman, but as of one abundantly fitted by long association with Dr. Waddel to furnish a correct record of his peculiarities:

"The grand object," says Dr. C., "which he had in view while engaged in the business of instruction was the inculcation of truth, which, directly or indirectly, would have an influence upon the great cause of the gospel. The country

was new, the population was rapidly increasing, and the few schools then existing were almost universally under the control of men who were ignorant and vicious, and often infidel. Dr. Waddel saw the necessity for different schools, and resolved that, by the blessing of God upon his labors, he would endeavor to show the practical benefits resulting from those conducted by well-educated and pious men. To accomplish this reformation, he saw the necessity of teachers educated at home, educated in the fear of God, teachers who would carry into the school-room something of the Bible. He accordingly encouraged those who were under his instruction, and especially those who were pious, to prepare themselves for teachers. To those who were unable to bear the expense of their education he opened the doors of his school, and often of his house, leaving them in after life to make such return as they might be able and might think proper to make. The heart of this good man also yearned over the multitudes in the adjacent regions who were 'as sheep having no shepherd.' He ardently desired to see intelligent and pious young men consecrating their talents to the service of God in the ministry of the gospel. His school was, therefore, always 'a school of the prophets.' Every encouragement was given by him to those whose minds were turned to this subject; and, by directing his pupils to the great want of ministers, he was instrumental in diverting many from mere secular pursuits to the sacred office. In this respect, I apprehend, few men have been more useful to the church. Like his divine Master, he was continually saying to many, and apparently with effect, 'Go preach the gospel.' Looking at the condition of the country, and especially of the church, he believed that it was the duty of many who were called to the ministry to engage also in the business of instruction, and he accordingly encouraged many of the young men who studied with him to pursue a course which he had felt it his duty to pursue. By this

means in a short time many feeble churches were partially supplied with Christian ministrations, and a striking change was wrought in the aspect of society."

It should not be forgotten, as has been already recorded of Dr. Waddel, that he was not only a life-long laborer in the field of practical education in the class-room, but the fact, not so well known to many, is that he remained through all his days, until laid aside in the providence of God by disease, a laborious and devoted minister of the gospel. It was a rare occurrence that prevented him from filling the pulpit wherever he made his home. In yielding, as he did, to the pressing call of the Trustees to the Presidency of the institution, it formed only a part of the influential reasons that prevailed with him that the University should be raised "to literary eminence." It ought to be stated that he never entered upon any enterprise to which he was invited without asking of Divine Wisdom to make the path of duty plain before him. The motive which weighed more heavily with him, inducing him to accept the call, was undoubtedly a conviction that in the near future there seemed to be opened before him a new field of that kind of labor that lay nearest his heart, and in which he always most delighted. Nor is it at all probable that he would for a moment have entertained the proposition to remove to Athens had no door of entrance been open before him to preach the gospel. But although a State Institution, the common property of all the citizens of Georgia, it is a blessed fact in the history of the University that no influence was ever attempted from any quarter to prevent the Faculty from preaching. This fact, to the honor and credit of the Board of Trustees, should be recorded, and may be regarded as in striking and gratifying contrast to the course pursued by other bodies of public trust having in charge the interest of State Institutions of learning. He not only preached in person in Athens in the chapel, but he was careful to avail himself of the ser-

vices of his brethren whenever they could be obtained. There occurred within the memory of living alumni even now several remarkable revivals of religion, in the blessed influences of which the students of the University largely shared. Such, if called on to testify, might revive even now, after the lapse of a half century, the recollection of a great work of grace that was enjoyed by the town and University under the powerful preaching of such consecrated men as Rev. Joseph C. Stiles, Rev. S. S. Davis, Rev. A. H. Webster, and others, who were invited to come and spend a season of pulpit labor in Athens. During his Presidency in Athens the prosperity of the University attracted the attention of the entire State, and the population of the town rapidly increased by the removal of many to secure for their sons the advantages of a classical education, and the active business of the community in evevy department grew and extended to a considerable degree. The consequence was that all denominations of Christians were soon enabled to organize their people into churches, and to erect excellent and, some of them, beautiful houses of worship. All this was the natural result of the flourishing and eminently solid condition of the system of College administration, based, as it certainly was, upon Christian principle. This enlargement of church advantages and privileges could not but exert a happy influence upon the students, as they enjoyed the opportunity of sitting under the preaching of ministers of the best class, representing all the various denominations.

Another fact in this connection deserves to be mentioned. Among the large number of young men who flocked to the University a goodly proportion were poor and pious; and while anxious to prepare themselves for the ministry, they were destitute of the means to meet the necessary expenses. Just such youths of promise were urged and invited by Dr. Waddel to become students of the Institution. Quite a number were admitted by the provisions of the University code

to free tuition who were desirous to preach. Says Dr. Church again, "Dr. Waddel induced several families in the town and adjoining county each to board one poor young man who was preparing for the ministry. God poured out his Spirit upon the institution, and many, in a few years, were hopefully converted, and went forth as teachers of academies and preachers of the gospel. At the end of ten years the good man was permitted to see a change in the institution, a change of the moral and religious aspect of the State, a change in the prospects of the feeble branch of it to which he belonged, which more than realized his most sanguine expectations." It is thus seen that he did not err in his interpretation of the indications of Providence in respect to accepting the call to the University.

CHAPTER XV.

Dr. Waddel's Objects in View in Accepting the Presidency of the University.—Successful Results.—Close of his Term of Service.—Resignation.

NO one not intimately associated with Dr. Waddel previous to his removal to Athens, and his entrance upon the untried duties of President of a University, can appreciate the state of his mind, in view of so radical a revolution of all his cherished plans as was involved in this movement. For the space of more than thirty-five years he had been laboriously engaged in the practical business of education, and in connection with this department of labor, for more than a quarter century he had devoted himself, with equal earnestness and consecration, to the solemn service of the gospel ministry. And now he had been contemplating, with pleasing anticipations, a partial release from this long-continued and toilsome double work. It was thus his cherished scheme to withdraw gradually from the school-room, in order that he might have more leisure to devote his mind and his time to the work of the ministry, without the intrusion of other cares upon his attention. It is known to those who were intimately acquainted with his private history that he loved the work of the ministry, and was just as much absorbed in his ministerial office as in that of a teacher. It was just at such a time as that, in 1818, when the call to the State University was pressed so urgently upon him by his friends and pupils in Georgia. The writer has learned from a member of his family, to whom he habitually communicated his most secret thoughts, that the mental conflict through which he passed in the considera-

tion and decision of this question was extremely distressing, and at one time seemed as though it would prove disastrous. As his life-long custom at all times had been to seek light on all subjects involving a question of duty from the only infallible source, which had always made the way clear and the path plain, so on this occasion he obeyed the injunction and realized the promise in the Word of God, "If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally and upbraideth not, and it shall be given him." Convinced, then, that it was clearly his duty to accept the call to this new field, he yielded, with some reluctance, all his private and personal objections, and accepted it as the will of God pointing out to him what he should do. Finding, on full discussion, that no obstacle would ever be made to his exercising his ministry in this sphere of service, he entered with his accustomed zeal and devotion upon his duties as President, with *two motives* operating upon him, which he kept steadily in view during his ten years' term of office. These motives were: *First.* Here he could use his best efforts, relying upon divine aid, to raise the University from the low state to which it had sunk in public estimation, and to give it so much respectability and usefulness as to secure the confidence of the people of the State. But this was not the only nor the chief controlling motive which brought his mind to the decision that he was directed by divine providence to accept the call, for, *secondly*, he felt that before him would be opened a grand opportunity of communicating to the system of public education *the spirit of Christianity* as the animating principle of the whole, not only by preaching, but by prominently holding up the Bible as the source and fountain of all true wisdom and government. He held that the education which only tends to the culture of the intellect by the communication of scientific and literary truth is defective in that it would train the mind in a one-sided method by ignoring his moral nature. For this rea-

son he invariably sought to unite the two great departments of the human subject, and bring them both, the intellectual and the moral, under the influence, not only of science, but of Christianity. It is surely no derogation from these actuating motives, but rather a confirmation of their influence over his own mind, that he placed his four sons in this Institution, where they all, in succession, received their training under his personal inspection. Before he had suspected that he should be ever appointed, as he was, to the superintendence of such an institution of learning, he had placed his eldest son at Princeton College as a student, and although he reposed the utmost confidence in that institution, he felt it his duty to recall him to Athens, where he should be under his own guidance and direction. It is a historical fact, true of all Institutions of learning, that their character, either for weal or woe, depends more upon the influence of the presiding officer than upon that of any other member of the Faculty. It is also noteworthy that this was true of all Presidents of Colleges during the times now under consideration in a greater degree than it is at present. In any given Faculty there may have been more profoundly learned men, who were regarded by the outside world as more gifted in some respects, than the man who filled the chief position; but it cannot be questioned that he was by all expected to shape and systematize the entire policy of the Institution, and thus, by necessary consequence, he was held to a most rigid responsibility for the results of his administration of its affairs, both internal and external. If prosperity attended and success followed his theories when reduced to practice; if his system of discipline should be productive of order, gentlemanly deportment, and obedience to law among the students, and if confidence should be established in the Institution and its management, and this favorable opinion of the public should be manifested in its steadily-increasing patronage from year to year, then the credit would be

almost universally accorded to him who was at the head of affairs. On the other hand, if the administration should be accompanied by the reverse of all these results; if the students should prove to be disorderly and ungentlemanlike, dissipated and idle, and all this should be followed by reports of annually diminished patronage, confidence would be lost and the President would be condemned as incapable and an unworthy incumbent of the office. Strictly speaking, this decision in regard to the head of the Institution might not be just, either in the case of success or failure. In the former he might have been vigorously seconded and sustained by a Faculty whose several members were a unit, presenting an unbroken front to all factious opposition, in which event the credit of success should have been shared with them, because, in this condition, success would be almost assured. Yet in a divided corps of instructors, who had private feelings to gratify opposed to his views, the best presiding officer ever in charge would find that he was weakened, and the institution might be forced into dissolution. Even then the failure observed in the enterprise, in most instances, would be attributed to the president. Of the correctness of this statement we might present abundant illustration in institutions as they existed half a century since. Now, all this was well-known to Dr. Waddel as the state of things in general inseparable from such a position, and which he might expect in assuming the presidency of any institution; and yet, as no man was ever more sensible of the weight of responsibility attached to such an office, so, on the other hand no man was ever less disposed to shrink from the discharge of a well ascertained duty by reason of the consequences. In this it is not the design of the writer to intimate that he was a man of imperious or despotic temperament; that he was so wedded to his own opinions that he was determined to carry them out at all hazards and in despite of all opposition. His habit of asking wisdom from

above was accompanied with the knowledge of the great fact, that the will of God was ordinarily communicated through men as his instruments. So he hearkened respectfully to the opinions of his colleagues and others, and yielded to them all the weight and deference to which they were entitled. But it should be stated that he was highly favored in being connected with a class of wise and conservative counsellors during his administration, both in the Faculty and his more immediate circle of friends in the Board of Trustees. That he occasionally, in obedience to what he believed to be impressions made upon his mind by God's Spirit, acted independently of human counsel, and sometimes even in contravention of the previous action of the Faculty in which he himself had fully concurred, is set forth in another passage of Dr. Church's letter:

"It became necessary, as the Faculty believed, on a certain occasion, to pursue a course which a large portion of the students considered an unjustifiable interference with a society. A committee of the society notified the Faculty that it would be dangerous to attempt to carry out the resolution. This was considered a threat, and at once the Faculty determined to act with energy The action was to be that evening, immediately after prayers, in the chapel. Dr. Waddel was as decided in his opinion as any member of the body, but as he entered the chapel a doubt came into his mind as to the prudence of the course adopted. He prayed most earnestly for both students and Faculty, and especially that the latter might be endowed with wisdom and prudence and grace. But when he closed the exercises, instead of leading the Faculty to carry out their resolution (as he had expected to do), he left the chapel and retired without an intimation to any one concerning his conduct. He afterwards informed me that he became fully convinced that the course which the Faculty had determined to pursue was not prudent, and he had not a doubt that his mind had

undergone this change in consequence of an intimation from the Spirit of God. Subsequent developments clearly proved that, had he persisted in endeavoring to effect the object of the Faculty, most serious, and probably melancholy, consequences would have ensued. A young man of desperate character, excited by intoxication, was pledged to defeat, at any expense, the attempts of the Faculty, and this he could have done under the circumstances without the probability of detection. It was generally acknowledged afterwards, that whatever influence controlled his mind, the result was most propitious."

At this point in the narrative I can introduce, with great propriety, a valued contribution to the subject of my father's general character and administration of the government of the University during the term of service extending over the period from 1819 to 1829. It is furnished by Rev. S. G. Hillyer, D. D., a classmate of mine, and an intimate friend during our University course. Dr. Hillyer is an eminent minister of the Baptist Church of Georgia. He was appointed soon after our graduation to the position of tutor in the University on account of his fine scholarship, and after that was elected to the Professorship of Rhetoric in Mercer University, at Penfield, Ga., where he served with eminent success and ability. He has occupied pulpits of various important churches of the Baptist denomination in Georgia, and has spent a long life of consecrated toil in the great joint fields of mental, moral, and spiritual training and instruction of his generation. Knowing his stores of information, his reliableness as a writer of the narrative of his reminiscences, his impartiality and candor of judgment, his knowledge of human nature, and, above all, his devotion to the memory of my father, I applied to him for a statement of his estimate of his character, and for any facts which he might be able to recall from the review of the period of his connection with him as a student. He very kindly com-

plied by furnishing me promptly and fully with such a contribution as I had asked for, with even more full and satisfactory minuteness than I could have expected. This narrative and estimate I now proceed to transcribe in his own words.

Rev. Dr. S. G. Hillyer's Statement.

"I will now try to give you some reminiscences of your noble father. First of all, let me tell you of his relation to our family. He and my father were nearly of the same age, and they lived for years in the same neighborhood—my father at old Petersburgh, in Elbert county, Ga., and Dr. Waddel over in South Carolina, at Willington. Some business relations furnished opportunity for them to become acquainted with each other. I think also that my mother and grandmother were personally acquainted with Dr. Waddel at that early day. Be this as it may, they knew him by character. Accordingly, when my father died, in 1820, and when it became the all-absorbing question with my mother what could be done for her children, she sought the advice of your father. She consulted him at Athens. His advice was: Give them a Collegiate education at all hazards. He said: 'Give the boys an education, and you give them a possession they can never lose. It will always afford them means of support.' This advice accorded with my mother's wishes, and accordingly arrangements were made at an early day to remove our family to Athens, where we enjoyed those advantages which have shaped our course through life. Your father would sometimes visit my mother and grandmother at our humble home near Athens. He was always kind to me. When I would occasionally go home with you it seemed to give him pleasure to entertain us with his humor and pleasantry; and after my graduation he, of his own good will, put me in correspondence with a prominent citizen of Florida, Colonel Gamble, which proved to be of great advantage to me. So much for his relations to us.

No intelligent man could know your father's life, character, and work without being impressed with the fact that he was indeed a *great* and a good man. He gave an impulse to the cause of education in South Carolina and Georgia which scarcely any other man at that time could have done. His school at Willington was a brilliant success. Such men as John C. Calhoun, George McDuffie, George R. Gilmer, and Augustus B. Longstreet received from him the early training that made them the great men of their generation. In the year 1818 Dr. Waddell was called, and, in 1819, he accepted the call to preside over our State University. I once heard him say that when he first entered upon his duties at Athens he found just seven students playing 'hide and seek' in the rooms of the old college building. In three or four years the attendance had run up to nearly or quite a hundred. In administrative ability he was *preëminently* the central figure in the Faculty. During the time of his Presidency the college sent out a class of alumni whose lives illustrated not only the glory of their Alma Mater, but of the State in which they lived. Not only our own State, but Alabama, Mississippi, and Texas felt the influence for many years of that master spirit which presided over Franklin College from 1819 to 1829. In his domestic relations, his success was but the counterpart, on a more limited scale, of the distinction which crowned his public services. Of his large family, there was not one of whom a father might not be proud. His sons, in exalted moral worth, in high intellectual culture, and most attractive social qualities, had few equals and no superiors; while his daughters, too, were adorned with the loveliness of a noble womanhood. As a theologian, your father was profound and orthodox. As a sermonizer, he was methodical and exhaustive. His style was distinguished for its purity and for its perspicacity. Even the illiterate could understand him. A case in point came under my own knowledge. My grandmother had an

old servant, who was a religious woman, but very ignorant. On a certain Sunday morning she asked my grandmother to let her go to church that day. Grandmother said to her: 'Why, Rachel, there is no place where there is preaching to-day but the College Chapel, and the President of the College will preach. You can't understand Dr. Waddel preaching to all those learned folks in the chapel.' 'Never mind,' said the old woman; 'please let me go?' Consent was given, of course. By and bye she returned from church, full of the sermon she had heard. She said to my grandmother that the sermon had done her good, and that she could understand it all. She seemed to be delighted with what she had heard. Now, a compliment to your father's sermon from such a man as Dr. Olin was what might have been expected, but coming, as it did, from an ignorant old darkey, makes us think of *Him* of whom it was said 'the common people heard him gladly.' As a citizen, Dr. Waddel was ever mindful of the public good. Though exempt by law, as a minister of the gospel, from the duty of serving on juries, yet he waived his privilege, and, when called on, would take his place on the grand jury of the county. When we remember the important functions committed by our laws to that body, we can see that such a man as Dr. Waddel could not fail to be eminently useful on our grand juries. His great intelligence, his love of country, and his high moral rectitude were just the qualities most needed in such bodies. Thus I have given you a very brief statement of my impressions of your father. I only wish I had space and ability to do the subject justice. Still I trust it may afford a few suggestions that may be useful to you in your proposed work. Allow me to give an anecdote of trivial importance, yet none the less illustrative of your father's administrative ability. A student had been guilty of some impropriety. Dr. Waddel sent for him and gave him a private lecture in his room. When he returned to his fellow-

students they were curious to know what had passed between him and the President. He put on quite an air of importance, and gave such an account of the interview as to make the impression that he had pretty successfully 'bullied' the Doctor. Not long afterwards another student was sent for to the President's room. Remembering what the former culprit had said, he concluded to play a similar game. Accordingly, as soon as the President opened the case the young man put on an air of offended surprise, and, in rather a haughty tone, began to ask why he was singled out for reprimand and—; but before he had proceeded farther, the Doctor stopped him with a frown, saying: 'My young friend, if you cannot speak to me in a more becoming manner than you have assumed, there is the door, and the sooner you take it the better.' The student saw at a glance that he was on the wrong *tack*, and promptly changed his course. At once he made apologies, which Dr. Waddel so far accepted as to give the lecture, which was received with becoming meekness. The student told me this story on himself, and then added: 'Granby, when you hear the boys bragging how they have '*bullied*' Dr. Waddel, you just quietly conclude that they are *lying;* for I tell you no student ever did it. It can't be done.' Other incidents, perhaps not so illustrative as the preceding, of his method, might be presented, but not less entertaining to the general reader. But I content myself with the general remark that his mode of discipline was peculiar to himself, and always successful."

The foregoing is, according to the estimate of one of his pupils, who knew and esteemed him well, a truthful presentation of his personal and public character. I am sure that all the records of a man's life who serves the public for many years are rarely ever given to the general reader. But I am equally sure that a biography professing to be true and faithful rests for its value upon a minute detail of

matters of private interest rather than upon eulogistic statements of great qualities, as they are viewed by the partiality of his friends. The interspersing of incidents such as are here mentioned does not detract from, but serves strikingly to illustrate the nature of that practical and faithful administration of discipline which was a marked characteristic of Dr. Waddel.

But the term for which he had originally made his own calculations to serve the University was drawing near its close. He believed that the work appointed by Providence for him to do in the University and in Athens was drawing near its end, and he knew that what remained to be done in the future would be accomplished with comparative ease by those who should come after him. He rejoiced to know the fact that, in God's providence, he had been successful as a pioneer in the great work of preparing the way for others. He was not the man to boast, but surely his was a pardonable satisfaction in the retrospect presented in contemplating his past ten years of successful labor and trial. He had found a fallen Institution lying low in apparently irretrievable desolation. The number of students present on his arrival he found to be only *seven*, all told! He found that the public had become dead to all interest in the institution, and almost hopeless of its resuscitation. He found a straggling little hamlet stretching along the public highway, with no prospect of revival and enlargement. To give a description of the condition of things in Athens we may adopt Dr. Hull's language as the true record by one whose childhood, youth, and honored age had been spent upon the spot: "Prior to 1820 there were no improvements west of Lumpkin street. . . . All that part of the town was in woods, not a stick amiss." Such is a graphic description of what was then the seat of the State University. But a decade had wrought wonders in the condition of the University and of the town of Athens. Dr. Waddel was now looking

forward to his retirement from this scene, in which he had formed a conspicuous figure, and where he had acted a prominent part. He was about to leave the University erect and triumphant over all its disabilities. In its halls he would leave an able and efficient and accomplished Faculty, under the leadership of a tried and approved chief executive. Instead of *seven* students, he had been permitted to witness the annual arrival of multitudes of the youth of Georgia and of the neighboring States, seeking the benefits of its open and ever-flowing fountains of knowledge. Instead of a wrecked vessel, it was now in full sail for the haven of permanent success. It was the pride and hope of a gratified people, and was holding out its attractions to the surrounding States, and rising daily in its reputation as a safe and trustworthy dispensing agent of Christian education. As he contemplated these vast improvements in the University, which had resulted more immediately from his personal connection with it, he could not but be aware of the corresponding changes in the prospects of the town as equally certain and direct results of the prosperity of the University. Dr. Hull's testimony may be adduced again, and it is to this effect. Going back to the history of the University in its earlier progress, he writes:

"For a quarter of a century at least, the interests of Athens and of the University went hand in hand; they rose or fell together. Indeed, one was nothing without the other. At one time the income of the institution was so low as to leave President Meigs alone to instruct all the classes in every department of science. So the College came very near the gates of death, and the town had but little more vitality; so the College sickened and the town languished."

Accordingly, after ten years of unexampled prosperity and success for the University, it was not at all wonderful that the town of Athens should also be increased in population and in the addition to the extent of territory over which

it spread. Every department of business was speedily filled with active workers, and every profession was represented, while many "substantial families" were attracted to the place for its educational advantages. Those who came, not content with coming for that purpose alone, became permanent residents of Athens, and built fine houses, which were ornaments of architecture. The healthfulness of the place also determined many wealthy lower country planters to remove and settle in the town. In this way it became one of the most elegant and attractive places in Georgia, and indeed of the entire South. The contemplation of these remarkable changes, wrought within so short a period, and all tending to the elevation of the country and of the State at large, must naturally have been productive of the purest gratification to the heart and mind of the man whom God in his providence had made his instrument in the work accomplished. But in this review of the past Dr. Waddel's chastened Christian principle did not allow him to indulge the reflection that might have arisen in the mind of one who should contrast the dead past with this hopeful present, "What a grand work have *I performed!*" but he could not lose sight of the true source of all success, and feel, as he did, "What hath God wrought!"

He had also succeeded in an object which lay very near his heart, a private and personal matter, and which entered into the consideration of the question of his acceptance of the call to the Presidency—the superintendence of the collegiate education of his four sons, already mentioned. His eldest son, James P. Waddel, having been recalled by him from Princeton College, New Jersey, after his entrance there as a student, was matriculated in the University of Georgia soon after the institution was reörganized, and was graduated in the third class under Dr. Waddel's administration. The class of 1820, which was the first to graduate under him, consisted of but three. The class of 1821 also

numbered three, and there were nine members in the class of 1822, of which James P. Waddel was one. His standing was among the foremost of a very excellent class, and on Commencement day he delivered the Latin salutatory, the oration always assigned to the second honor-man of the graduating class. It was doubtless very gratifying to Dr. Waddel that his son was thus honored in closing his College course; yet it was still more pleasing to him to find that he was chosen immediately to fill a tutor's place in the Faculty. In this position he served for two years, giving entire satisfaction. It is only to be added at this point in regard to him that teaching was his chosen and life-long employment, thereafter having been subsequently elected Professor of Ancient Languages in the University, in which office he served twenty years. Dr. Waddel's sons, Rev. Isaac W. Waddel and William W. Waddel, M. D., were graduated in the class of 1823. The former entered the ministry of the Presbyterian Church, and labored acceptably and usefully in the States of South Carolina and Georgia. He died in Marietta, Ga., in 1849, in the forty-fifth year of his age. W. W. Waddel, of the same class, embarked in the medical profession, and, after pursuing preliminary studies with Dr. Hull as his preceptor in Athens, he spent about eighteen months in attendance upon medical lectures in Philadelphia. Entering upon the practice of medicine with enthusiasm, he soon reached the highest rank in the profession, and was elected to a chair in the faculty of the Medical College of Augusta, which he declined. In the hope of recovering his own broken health, he removed, in 1833, to Tallahassee, Fla., and after he had established himself in an extensive and lucrative practice, died in 1843, universally lamented, in his thirty-seventh year. The writer, the youngest son, graduated in 1829, in his eighteenth year, and all that may be said of him just here is that he has pursued the same course in pulpit and class-room which was his father's life-

work for so long a time. At this Commencement, being the tenth at which Dr. Waddel had presided, on the 5th of August, 1829, he tendered his resignation, delivering a farewell address to the Board of Trustees in public on the rostrum at the close of the exercises of Commencement. To this address General Edward Harden, of Savannah, responded on the part of the Board. His resignation occurred very soon after he had entered his sixtieth year. It was necessary that he should reside in Athens for some months after his retirement from office, that he might wind up his private affairs and make comfortable provision for his family at his South Carolina home, which he still owned, at the seat of the Willington Academy, now closed, where he proposed to end his days in peace and rest. Accordingly, he continued to make Athens headquarters for six months or more; and in the latter part of February, 1830, he removed with his family to the place he had left more than ten years previously, where he had laboriously spent his earlier and more vigorous years in public work. On the morning of his departure, as his carriage stood at the front gate, and he was about to leave on his journey, a long procession was seen approaching, which proved to be composed of students of the University, their object being to take formal leave of him and to bid him farewell. One of the number, who had been chosen by his fellow-students for the purpose, delivered a suitable address, to which Dr. Waddel responded in appropriate terms. Thus was closed the important work, which he was permitted to round up in a manner so agreeable, leaving the scene of his labors, followed only by the truest sentiments of loving reverence and the most exalted appreciation of the services he had rendered to those with whom he had been associated.

On a review of his term of service, so pleasantly closed, there come up in memory other points of interest, some of them worthy of record. They have reference to the Chris-

tian influence brought to bear upon the university, the town, the country, the State, during his administration. At the time under consideration there was clearly observable a sentiment beginning to prevail that the church at large should inaugurate more direct and active efforts to introduce a more decided and aggressive influence of a Christian character into the system of public education. This, however, could be effected only in an indirect method as to the University in the interval between 1819 and 1829. It is only necessary to refer the reader to the establishment of Mercer University, at Penfield; Oglethorpe University, at Midway, and Emory College, at Oxford, as the result of this principle of action on the part of several churches. These institutions, nearly all of them, still survive, after triumphing over all their early difficulties, and are now accomplishing a grand work for church and State in their several spheres. Nor let it be regarded as claiming more than is due to the old University to assert that these noble institutions are all of them indebted to some extent to her for the training of some of their best and wisest presidents and professors. So that, in the absence of such colleges and universities as those above mentioned under denominational control, the University of Georgia was enabled to accomplish a great work in this direction by having laid down clearly that, in its course of instruction, even in literature and science, and in the system of discipline adopted, no principle would be tolerated or suggested that could alienate the student from the system of Christian truth. It was furthermore distinctly understood of the policy of the governing Board that, in the character and example of every instructor, there should be a living and practical illustration of what has been happily called unconscious Christian tuition. This fundamental system characterized the whole policy of the institution, without the slightest attempt to introduce or obtrude any element of discord that might

awaken the prejudice of any section of the church. In more recent times, other incidental movements have been developed and brought into active exercise, which have exerted a wholesome moral power over the minds and morals of students, so wisely constituted as to be admissible as readily into the State institutions as into the church colleges. Among these, and more prominent than all others, we may mention the "Young Men's Christian Association," which is found everywhere in successful career. At the time under consideration this voluntary association was unknown in the region from which the University drew its students; yet who can read its history and fail to recognize the fact, that even without the numerous adjuncts of a moral and Christian character to aid in controlling and influencing the students, without those means and appliances now so common and effective, that there was then a pervasive power of Christian influence felt through the entire student body? It held a conservative restraint over even those who had no religious predilections, preventing all violent manifestations of vice and disorder, and frowning effectually upon all forms of infidelity. This was not the full effect of this indirect Christian power; it was not confined in its results to the student community, but extended over the town of Athens and the neighboring country. True, we had no regularly organized Christian association among the students, but there was in every class a goodly number of pious young men, some having in view the Christian ministry, others members of the churches, consistent in their walk and standing, who held prayer-meetings among themselves and opened their meetings to general attendance. These candidates for the ministry were, in many cases, superintendents of the Sabbath-schools, and were in the habit of teaching classes in them, besides being engaged often in holding prayer-meetings at private houses in the country and in the town on Sabbath evenings when the churches were closed. Many

of those who subsequently entered the ministry and became prominent as preachers of the gospel pursued their literary course and were graduated from the University. This fact goes far to confirm the statement, that a wholesome Christian influence was felt and encouraged in that institution. It may be easily gathered, from a cursory perusal of the Centennial Catalogue of the University, that of the number of graduates during the ten years of which we write, and the three years after 1829, during which the graduates closed their course, begun between 1819 and 1829, there were more than forty who entered the gospel ministry. Some of these became eminently useful ministers of their several churches, and not a few, eminent for learning and high Christian character, became presidents and professors in Southern institutions of learning, and others, again, pious laymen in private life.

The foregoing statement of facts, under the circumstances, shows that the University, although a State institution, has not been altogether barren of greatly beneficial results to the cause of Christian education, to which we may make two additional remarks:

1. It would be unjust to others if the writer should be understood as designing to attribute these results solely to Dr. Waddel; for while it is true, as has already been shown, that more depends upon the presiding officer of any institution than upon any other person connected with it at the time (as it respects the character of the influence it exerts), at the same time success cannot be assured to his best and most strenuous efforts if, in attempting to carry out his policy, he must encounter opposition from the authorities or from colleagues. On the other hand, it is a comparatively easy task to carry into effect a favorite theory, and to imbue the entire body with his views, provided he is heartily sustained by those with whom he is associated. This was eminently true of the administration of Dr. Waddel. Those who

labored with him in this arduous enterprise of building up an institution of learning saw at once that his views were sound, and that he deserved their confidence; and so, appreciating his ideas at their proper value, they stood by him in all his toils and trials, and aided him in the accomplishment of his cherished theories. Hence that success in the re-establishment of a fallen institution, and the development of its inherent possibilities into real and practical results the highest and most beneficial character, although reflecting merited credit and honor upon him, must necessarily be shared by others who labored with him. Let it also be recorded, that he was not the man to detract from another his due meed of honor, or to forget to bestow it upon those who won it.

CHAPTER XVI.

Death of Mrs. Waddel.—Manner of Life in Retirement.—Churches he Served.—His Associates Among his Ministerial Brethren.—Last Sickness and Death.

THE opening Spring season of 1830 found him once more established at Willington, S. C. It has been stated in a former chapter, that, on account of malarial influences, he had removed from his first settlement to the little hamlet distant about a mile south. There he found and occupied a new and commodious dwelling, where he spent his last days of rest until overtaken by disease. Here began those peaceful years, in freedom from heavy public responsibility, to which he had been so long looking with most earnest longings. Being now no longer in the receipt of a salary, adequate and promptly paid, his main earthly dependence for income in the future rested in the cultivation of a farm, which he kept in operation, and which yielded quite a sufficient support for himself and his family. One remark will be here inserted as completing his private history and shedding some additional light on his character. Dr. Waddel was a slave-holder, and his servants were the laborers on his farm, under the superintendence of an overseer; but, like many an owner of slaves in those days, he was a most humane master. He rarely ever purchased a slave. The beginning of this class of his property came to him through marriage. When, therefore, his female servants became the wives of neighboring man-servants not belonging to his estate, he bought the latter for humanity's sake; and so of the case when his men-servants took wives from abroad, he purchased their wives, his object being to bring them to the

same home. He trained the children of his colored families as he did his own, by catechetical instruction on Sabbath evenings. He was so humane in his treatment of the servants on his farm that no cruel treatment was ever known or permitted, and every reasonable liberty was allowed them. So generally was this known to be a principle of his management that the remark was once reported as being made by a large planter of less strict notions on the subject, that "Dr. Waddel's treatment of his slaves was calculated to ruin all the negroes in the neighborhood." The reply to this reproachful criticism was: "Well, I suppose I will be able to answer for that." He, therefore, was not what was known as a very successful planter. Still, while he was always liberal in his mode of living, and possessed a good estate, wholly unencumbered, by his economical management of his private affairs he made his family comfortable, without superfluous luxury.

Dr. Waddel had scarcely become settled in his new homestead when he was called, in the providence of God, to part with his beloved wife, the mother of his children, who had been the devoted companion of thirty laborious years of his life, the sharer of all his joys and sorrows, and his earthly support and comfort in all his trials. On the 4th of April, 1830, on the Lord's day, Mrs. Eliza Woodson Waddel closed her life of bodily suffering, surrounded by a weeping and devoted family, and entered into that "rest that remaineth for the people of God." For many years she had been struggling with disease and pain, which baffled the skill of the eminent physicians who attended her, striving to mitigate her sufferings. The disease from which she had been so long a patient sufferer had, within a few years previous to her death, developed into cancer, and, just two years before, she had undergone a surgical operation, performed by Drs. Anthony and Watkins, two eminent surgeons of Augusta, Ga., by which she had been, to some extent, relieved; but

the relief proved to be only temporary and partial, and cancer renewed its ravages at some other point of the system, and its deadly work soon proved to be beyond the reach of remedies. Constantly waxing more and more feeble, the wasted body yielded to the intolerable violence of the fearful malady, until, overborne by it, the ransomed spirit abandoned "the earthly house of this tabernacle" in its dissolution, and entered the building of God, the "house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens," a mansion prepared for her by the Saviour.

Part of Dr. Waddel's plan in returning to South Carolina was to devote himself more continuously to preaching, and to make that the chief work of his last days. He never did wholly divest himself of his interest in that other department of usefulness to which he had given so many years of his life—practical teaching. While, therefore, he did not propose to enter the class-room himself professionally, his purpose was to have a school opened at once under his general superintendence, and to have the duties of daily instruction performed by another. On the 1st day of March, accordingly, such a school was opened and placed under the direct charge of his son, a youth not quite eighteen years of age, and it was continued afterwards under the joint charge of this teacher and the eldest son of Dr. Waddel, until it was closed by the removal of both to other fields of labor. So long as this school was in operation Dr. Waddel was deeply interested in its success, using his influence in its favor, doing no teaching except incidentally, but giving the benefit of his wise counsel and long experience. The school prospered for a time, and was patronized extensively throughout the States of South Carolina and Georgia; but the providences of God were such as to bring it to a close, as may be explained hereafter. Meanwhile, his prominent purpose of employing his time mainly in preaching was in successful progress. He was very soon placed in charge of the Will-

ington church, near his residence, and of Rocky River church, some seventeen miles distant. To these two churches he preached regularly, as Stated Supply, on alternate Sabbaths; but while he punctually and promptly met all his appointments with them on ordinary occasions, he was by no means confined to them as his field of ministerial work.

DR. WADDEL AS A PEACE-MAKER.

As an illustration of Dr. Waddel's peculiarity of temperament as a "peace-maker," the following incident was furnished me by the Rev. J. O. Lindsay, D. D., of Due West, Abbeville Co., S. C. The Dr. is one of the successors of Dr. Waddel in the ministry at Willington, and this case was communicated to him, not long since, by a very aged gentleman (over ninety years old) who, sixty years ago, was one of Dr. Waddel's congregation, and a member of the Willington church. The Dr., in his thoughtful kindness, felt that it would afford me gratification to know of it, and I am greatly obliged to him for having communicated it to me.

"About the year referred to (1831) there was a notorious controversy in progress between the Arminians and Calvinists in the county of Abbeville, and consequently much bitter feeling was excited and expressed. Glenn was the name of a Methodist minister, who had charge of a church, and near to him was a church of the denomination of Seceders, of which a minister, by name Porter, was pastor, the name of this church being 'Cedar Springs.' For several weeks these ministers had given prominence to the 'Five Points' in their pulpit services. What one would say in his sermon would be reported by some hearer to the other, and the latter would reply to it on the next Sabbath. This state of things continued for some time—at least until a great deal of excitement had been stirred up, and at length it was determined by these two ministers and their friends, to hold a public debate on the matters controverted

between them. This meeting was appointed to be held at Cedar Springs. The community was greatly excited, and a large crowd was expected to be present. Dr. Waddel had heard of all this, and was impressed with the conviction that such a debate would do no good, but might result in much evil. Accordingly he convened his Session, and laid the matter before his faithful counsellors, and asked them to consider whether they could not do something to prevent the great scandal to true religion, which he felt assured would result from the debate, if the expected programme should be carried out. After some discussion it was decided to request Dr. Waddel to attend the contemplated meeting, and endeavor to stop the debate, and allay the bitter feeling that had been aroused. Two or three of the elders were also appointed to accompany Dr. Waddel.

"On the day appointed they attended at Cedar Springs, and found a large and excited crowd present. Dr. Waddel and his elders got together the ministers, Glenn and Porter, with a few of their respective friends, at a private conference before the public services began. Dr. Waddel presented his views on the proposed debate. He was firmly persuaded that it would intensify the bitter feeling, of which there had already been too much aroused, and would not advance the cause of true religion. Considerable discussion of the matter ensued, and Dr. Waddel succeeded in impressing his views upon the two ministers and their friends, and it was at last decided to give up the expected debate.

"Dr. Waddel was asked to preach to the large assemblage, which he did, and the occasion passed off pleasantly and profitably; far more so than it probably would have done if the debate had been held.

"A profound impression was made upon the community by this incident. Dr. Waddel's clear views, quiet dignity, and Christian deportment, as well as the sermon preached, were long remembered and talked of in the homes of both

the Seceders and the Methodists of the whole region; and Dr. Waddel and his elders felt that they had done good service that day as peace-makers."

Occasionally he visited distant churches in the districts of Newberry, Laurens, and Anderson, adjoining Abbeville, to assist his brethren in communion meetings, and sometimes to vacant and destitute places. As he resided not far from the Savannah river, the dividing boundary line between South Carolina and Georgia, he was often invited to visit the churches in Lincoln county, Ga., which lay opposite his residence, where he had many old friends. Yet he always felt peculiar interest in Willington and Rocky River churches, as his appropriate fields of pastoral work. Two things are worthy of note in this connection: first, he did a good deal of pastoral visiting among the people of his charge; second, these visits were hardly ever closed without his engaging in prayer with the families visited. His journal (kept through his life until he could no longer hold a pen) records many visits to the bedsides of his dying parishioners and the funeral services conducted by him. When the needful travel is taken into consideration, it is not too much to say that the work he performed was fully as faithful and laborious as the work of most pastors of our city and town churches. He records thirty-three marriage ceremonies performed by him in the space of three or four years in the region round about him. He, of course, conducted communion meetings with both of his churches at regular intervals. These meetings began on Thursday or Friday previous to the communion Sabbath, and consisted of two sermons daily, and sometimes one at night, and the meeting did not close generally on Sabbath, but there was always a service on Monday, which was considered the closing service. None of these communion occasions ever occurred without the presence of some neighboring minister, to assist the preacher in charge of the church where the meeting was held. These gather-

ings were always happy and joyful in their influence upon him and his people. Those ministers with whom he loved to interchange these fraternal visitations were such men as Rev. Dr. Barr, of Upper Long Cane church; Rev. Hugh Dixon, of Rock church; Rev. David Humphreys, of Anderson District. Sometimes he had with him brethren from distant parts of Georgia. Among them were Rev. Drs. Church and Hoyt, of Athens, and Rev. Dr. Talmage, of Augusta. Rev. Dr. Daniel Baker once conducted a protracted meeting at Willington church. Besides, both of his churches were visited by the agents of the Boards of Foreign and Domestic Missions, the American Bible Society, and the Colonization Society. It is seen from this running record that his people, though strictly country churches, enjoyed every possible privilege and advantage of a religious nature possible to be obtained in the country at that period of our history. As he grew older, however, he often found himself fatigued by the long journeys he frequently performed, and sometimes the inclement weather to which he was necessarily exposed produced temporary illness.

The circumstances under which his first attack of paralysis occurred are well remembered by this writer. Dr. Waddel had just returned from one of his preaching tours on the evening of September 5, 1836, the Rev. Isaac W. Waddel and the writer being at his house on a visit. We retired early in the evening, after tea, observing nothing unusual in his appearance or manner. About the dawn of the 6th of September, as the brothers awoke in the upper chamber, where they had passed the night, they heard a very unnatural sound that seemed to proceed from his bed-room, apparently an ineffectual effort on his part to articulate. Hastening down, they found him still in bed. In broken accents he managed to communicate that he had, with great difficulty, attempted to rise, but found that he had lost the use of his right side entirely. His faithful family physician and friend,

Dr. Nathaniel Harris, a near neighbor, was speedily summoned, and, on examination, pronounced it a combination of paralysis and apoplexy. He rapidly sank into a stupor, and as Dr. Harris declared there was pressing necessity for a consulting physician in this alarming state of the case, Dr. Richardson, a very eminent physician of Elbert county, Ga., was sent for and arrived at the close of the day. Under the skillful treatment adopted by these two physicians, he was so far relieved, after lingering for three weeks in a perfectly helpless condition, during a part of which he was in a comatose state, he began slowly to rally, and was gradually restored to consciousnes and to some degree of articulateness of speech. But to all around him it was very readily seen that the light of his once clear intellect was now clouded, and that he was but a shattered wreck of his former self; so he lingered from the 6th of September, 1836, to the 21st of July, 1840—three years ten months and fifteen days. These last years were spent partly at his home in Willington, kindly cared for. He was able to walk with a slow and unsteady gait, and he rode a great deal of the time when the weather was fine, having a comfortable carriage and a pair of gentle horses, with a faithful body-servant, who attended on him wherever he went. This kind of life continued until toward the close of the year, at which time all of his children, by previous concert, met at his home for a re-union, that, in all probability, would be the last they should ever enjoy in his presence, considering the condition of his health and the widely-scattered places of their several homes. Then came his final earthly removal. His estate was equitably distributed, reserving an ample support for him and provision for his comfort. He abandoned his old home and removed to the residence of his eldest son, Professor James P. Waddel, in Athens, Ga., where his last days passed, as peacefully and happily as, under his personal and physical condition, was possible. It

seemed a kind arrangement of Divine Providence that his closing period of life should be cast in such circumstances of rest and freedom from care and responsibility. There he was placed in the midst of old scenes of his former toils and cares in happy unconsciousness of both, surrounded by many old friends who visited him as of old, adding something to his simple and childlike enjoyment. Day by day his hold upon the interests of this world was waxing more and more feeble, until, on the morning of July 21st, as the dawn was lighting up the scene and banishing the shades of night, he gently and calmly sank into that dreamless sleep from which he was never again to awake until the morning of the resurrection, when "the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and the trump of God, and the dead in Christ shall rise."

MEMORIAL RECORD

OF THE

LIFE, LABORS AND CHARACTER

OF

WILLIAM HENRY WADDEL,

PROFESSOR OF ANCIENT LANGUAGES

IN THE

UNIVERSITY OF GEORGIA

WILLIAM HENRY WADDEL.

AS a fitting sequel to the foregoing biography of Dr. Moses Waddel, in which is included a sketch of the life, character, and labors of Professor James Pleasants Waddel as an educator, I feel that it would be unjust to the memory of one who inherited the capacity and adorned, by his brief but distinguished life-work, the family name in their ancestral career as educators, to omit the following sketch of Professor William Henry Waddel, the grandson of the former and the son of the latter; for while it is a copy of the tribute to his memory adopted by his brethren of the Session, or bench of elders, of the Presbyterian church of Athens, Ga., it is a truthful portraiture of his life and labors in the same department of honorable and useful effort. The obituary is introduced in the words following, viz.:

"SEPTEMBER 29, 1878.

"At the close of public worship to-day, and during the officers' prayer-meeting, a joint meeting of the elders and deacons of the church was held, the Rev. C. W. Lane, D. D., Pastor, presiding, when the committee appointed heretofore, through Mr. Howell Cobb, submitted their report on the character and death of Professor William Henry Waddel. After the reading of the report, on motion of Mr. William L. Mitchell, it was adopted and ordered to be spread on the minutes of the session, and copies furnished Mrs. Waddel, the widow, and Miss Waddel, the sister, and the *Southern Presbyterian*, and it is as follows:

"Professor William Henry Waddel was born April 28, 1834, at Willington, Abbeville District, S. C., and died at Milford, Va., September 18, 1878. He was graduated from the University of Georgia, August, 1852, with the degree of A. B. From 1853 to 1858 he was a tutor in the University of Georgia; from 1858 to 1860, adjunct Classical Professor; from 1860 to 1872, Professor of Ancient Languages; from 1872 to 1877, Professor of the Latin Language and Literature, and from 1877 till his death, Professor of Greek and Latin. He made a profession of faith July 21, 1855, and was ordained an elder in the Presbyterian church, Athens, Ga., October 27, 1866, not long after his election as a deacon. His death was sudden. Returning from a trip northward for the improvement of his health, he was taken sick on the train, left the car at Milford, Va., called for medical aid, grew rapidly worse, and, in less than an hour, expired. His remains reached this city on Saturday, September 21, 1878, and, amid the tolling of the church bells, were borne to the cemetery. On Sabbath morning a large congregation assembled in the University Chapel, which had been draped with mourning for the occasion. Pastors and churches of the city, sharing a common grief, met together to participate in the memorial services of the day. The introductory services having been conducted by the Rev. Dr. Tucker, late Chancellor of the University, and the Rev. Dr. Potter, pastor of the First Methodist church, a funeral discourse was delivered by the Rev. Dr. Lane, followed by an address by Rev. Dr. Lipscomb, formerly chancellor of the University.

"It was a Sabbath of touching recollections and of heartfelt sorrow; for he whom we then mourned had been long and closely associated in all our thoughts with Sabbath worship and holy duties. Nor can our affections render him a truer or tenderer tribute than to connect his memory with that blessed day which casts its resplendent light backward to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and forward to

the 'rest' that 'remaineth.' No one could know Professor Waddel without feeling the force of his nature. It was a nature positive in every element of its constitution, so direct, so free from hesitancy and the pause of irresolution, as to impress every one with the instant conviction that it was the fundamental quality of his inner being. The quick energy of his intellect, the ready and vigorous will, the prompt use of his resources, were not so much acquired habits as a native endowment fresh from the hand of God, and fitting his servant for earnest and decisive activity in every sphere to which Providence called him. A thoroughly self-determined man, he always relied, under God, on his own judgment and the supremacy of his chosen purpose to accomplish an end in view. With others he worked steadily and cordially. His sympathies moved freely in any direction that promised benefit to the church and the community. But in every enterprise of usefulness, and especially in the routine of private duty, that tests more than anything else the sense of personal responsibility, the marked characteristic of this excellent man was the complete control that his thoughts and sentiments, as an individual, had over his actions. Free from those excesses which so often mark a mind of great decision, his strength of will never ran into wilfulness, nor into that sharp insistence on self that abases hearty co-operation with others. Though highly cultivated, he had a matter-of-fact intellect, that was in striking harmony with this distinctive cast of his nature. He had none of those illusions which so frequently mar culture and talent. His tastes, admiration, sentiments were all shaped towards whatever was obvious and practical. He indulged in no extravagance of thought. He had no unreasonable expectations, as it respected either other persons or himself; but, with a precision eminently wise and sagacious, he measured the duties, tasks, and responsibilities of life, and then set himself, with an unflinching resolution, to meet their obli-

gations to the utmost scope of his ability. His natural temperament was singularly impressible. He was quick to feel, and feel keenly. Struggling against disease nearly all his life, he never allowed those involuntary moods which spring from intensity of nervous action to overrule, or even to weaken, his convictions of duty. Often these shadows lay upon him, but they affected his devotion to his duties no more than a passing cloud leaves its image on a summer landscape. His regular attendance on all the services of the church, week day as well as Sabbath; his unvarying fidelity for so many years to the Sabbath-school and to the young men's Bible class; his scrupulous care as to the manner in which all his work was prepared, even to the smallest detail; and his constant and eager solicitude to build himself up by means of toil and sacrifice to a higher and more consecrated manhood in Christ Jesus: all these were signal features of his character and life, known and appreciated by the whole membership of the church. A more trustworthy man; one more intent on serving all the interests of Christianity in the offices of the church and in the outward field of religious activity; one more reliable for his share in bearing the burdens and meeting the exigencies of personal and official trust, has never lived in our midst. And especially as an office-bearer in the church will his example survive in our memory and affections. Here the grace of Christ, the head of the church, shone forth in him with a lustre, growing brighter as his years multiplied. Here he was 'instant in season and out of season.' Here he was ready for 'every good word and work,' and here most truly may it be said of him:

> "'Thy heart,
> The lowliest duties on herself did lay,'

"One of Professor Waddel's most striking qualities was his profound sense of the supreme importance of truthfulness in everything. It was a quality of intellect no less

than of his moral nature, resting on that deep instinct of reality which was so conspicuous in his organization. All the virtues that group themselves around this vital centre, such as honesty, candor, frankness, were exhibited constantly in his intercourse with society. And the same excellencies distinguished his Christian experience. To deal sincerely and faithfully with himself; to protect his judgment from the intrusions of imagination; to guard his conscience from the flattery of false hopes and the deceits of self-love, and to know his heart, as that heart was always beneath God's all-searching eye; this was the purpose that always seemed to lie nearest his soul. Such a man, brought under the power of the Holy Ghost, could not be otherwise than deeply sensible of the evil of sin, of inborn corruption, of entire alienation from God, and, in the same degree, conscious of the infinite need of Christ Jesus and his righteousness; but of that profound consciousness what a beautiful humility; what a calm and strong and realizing faith; what divine assurance of acceptance; what growing reconciliation to the cross of suffering; what heavenly aspirations for complete likeness to Jesus, rose in ever-increasing fulness of strength and blessedness!

"All his mature life was passed in the service of the University of Georgia. What Professor Waddel was to his Alma Mater, and through her to Georgia and to the country, is too well known to require any extended account from us. Endowed by Providence with an intellect of rare force and comprehensiveness; capable of making the largest acquisitions of knowledge, and equally competent to retain and use them with the utmost skill; his inclinations and his sensibilities all in closest sympathy with his profession; a man, indeed, who seemed to have been created for this specific vocation,—how fully content was he in this sphere of activity; how fervently he loved the work, and how heartily did he consecrate himself to its tasks! And what an impress as

to breadth and enduringness has he left on the University, and on scores of young men who have been enriched and ennobled by the high aims and refined culture caught from the glow and quickening of his inspiring soul!

"And now that our hearts are smitten to the dust by this sore bereavement, we recall, with deep thankfulness to Almighty God, our Father, that one so true, so conscientious in every relation of life, so steadfast in principle, so heroic in sentiment, so highly gifted, and yet so faithful in using his grand gifts for the glory of his Maker and Redeemer, was permitted to live in our midst and leave to us an example of such transcendent worth. As men reason, it is unutterably sad to see such genius and Christian goodness fall suddenly from the zenith of its career to the grave! But God's thoughts of men and their uses are not our thoughts, nor are his ways our ways. Whether he gives or takes away, the language of our hearts should be ever, 'Blessed be his holy name!'"

To the foregoing I beg to add the following extract of a letter written on occasion of a correspondence between myself and his pastor, Rev. C. W. Lane, D. D., in regard to Professor Waddel:

Extract.

"I never knew a more active church officer and Christian worker than was Professor W. H. Waddel—prompt to attend special meetings, wise in counsel, and ever ready to discharge any duties assigned him, either as an elder or a deacon. He was also an able instructor in the Sabbath-school, having a large class of young men for years; an ever-ready and edifying leader of prayer-meetings, and at times he conducted services for vacant country churches near our city. He most happily blended in his life a rare excellency as a professor with a rare diligence as a Christian worker. 'He being dead, yet speaketh,' was my text at his funeral.

"The best lesson of his life seems to me to be, that high success in an honorable and useful vocation need not prevent an active and wide usefulness in Christian work. He was an exceptionally able and earnest professor. He was also an exceptionally able and earnest Christian worker. Whether with scholarly enthusiasm discharging his duties as a professor, or with affectionate tenderness telling the story of the cross in a cottage prayer-meeting, among the humble poor or among the cultivated and refined, he was ever a splendid example of gifted and cultivated manhood. When the Master called him home, truly 'a prince and a great man fell in Israel!' One of the strong pillars on which I leaned as pastor was taken away when this brother beloved passed within the veil! . . . .

"(Signed) C. W. Lane.

In testimony of his reputation as a professor, an extract from a letter to myself from the venerable and beloved ex-President of Davidson College, Rev. Dr. Robert H. Morrison, of North Carolina, written in August, 1860, when Professor Waddel was only twenty-six years of age:

"On the strength of your nomination, we elected your nephew, Professor W. H. Waddel, Professor of Greek Literature in our college, and I will regard it as an act of kindness if you will exert your influence to induce him to accept the same. We had no letter or credentials from him, and I supposed the time might be too short to receive them.

"(Signed) R. H. Morrison."

Professor Waddel was not a candidate, and respectfully declined to accept the chair. He preferred to give his services to his Alma Mater.

APPENDIX.

Mural Tablets.

No. 1.

On a mural tablet over the pulpit of the Presbyterian Church, at Willington, in Abbeville County, South Carolina, the following is inscribed :

In Memory of

THE REVEREND AND LEARNED

MOSES WADDEL, D. D.,

The Founder of this Church, in the year 1813.

"*Who was faithful to Him who appointed him.*"

Presented to the church by Mrs. Burt.

Mural Tablet,

No. II.

In rear of the Presbyterian Church pulpit, of the city of Athens, Ga.

In Memoriam.

REV. MOSES WADDEL, D. D.

Born in Iredell County, North Carolina, July 29, 1770.

While President of the University of Georgia, he organized this Church, December 25, 1820, and for ten years was its minister.

Died in Athens, Georgia, July 21, 1840.

Preacher and Teacher.

In each office, forgetting self and aiming only at the glory of the Redeemer, he evinced the possibility of making both subservient to that great end. Eminent for piety, illustrious for services, the full measure of years allotted to man crowned his life.

Mural Tablet,

No. III.

In the new cemetery at Athens, Ga., near the entrance, there stands a plain granite shaft,

ERECTED BY THE PHI KAPPA SOCIETY
OF THE UNIVERSITY,

In Memory of

DR. MOSES WADDEL,

PROF. JAMES P. WADDEL,
His Son.

PROF. WM. HENRY WADDEL,
His Grandson.

On the western face of this shaft:

MOSES WADDEL, D. D.,
Born, July 28, 1770,
Died, July 21, 1840.
President of the University of Georgia, from 1819–1829.

On the southern face of the shaft:

PROF. J. P. WADDEL,
Born in Columbia Co., Ga., January 5, 1801,
Died in Athens, Ga., May 26, 1867.

On the northern face of the shaft:

PROF. W. H. WADDEL,
Born, Abbeville District, S. C., April 28, 1834,
Died, Milford, Va., September 18, 1878.

PRIVATE AND EDUCATIONAL
LIFE AND LABORS
OF
JOHN N. WADDEL, D. D., LL. D.
WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

JOHN N. WADDEL, D. D., LL. D.

CHAPTER I.

BIRTH AND SOME REMINISCENCES OF MY FIRST SEVEN YEARS.

I AM the youngest of six children of the Rev. Moses Waddel, D. D., and Mrs. Eliza Woodson (*neé* Pleasants) Waddel. I was born on the 2d of April, 1812, and entered this world on the same day with a sister, and hence I am one of twins. Our birthplace was Willington, Abbeville District, S. C., known widely as the location of a once celebrated academy, where my father superintended the scholastic training of many of the most distinguished men of South Carolina and Georgia. The place itself has no higher claim to celebrity than just the fact that many great characters in all the professions attended their preparatory course of study at that spot. There was no extensive and populous mart of commerce to be found under that name, but only such an inconsiderable hamlet as, naturally and by necessity, would gradually grow around a prosperous institution of learning, and which would furnish articles of school use for the students from abroad. It was, in other words, only a country place, and constituted a centre of attraction for a considerable number of Scotch-Irish and French Presbyterians, descendants of the Huguenots, not only for the advantages of the academy, but also on account of the privileges of the church. These were a race of intelligent and high-toned citizens, residing in the neighborhood

which covered, at that time, a territory of some ten or fifteen miles in circumference, whose farms furnished an abundant supply of the products of a soil then comparatively fresh.

In a former sketch, giving a cursory view of my father's domestic life, I described the nature of the discipline under which his children were reared, and, in so doing, I endeavored to point out the peculiar traits of my father and those of my mother, and to show how, by harmonious cooperation, they succeeded in making a wise combination of their diverse temperaments, resulting in the most effective system of family training. It will not be necessary to return to that topic, save only to refer the reader to that sketch. I will state, however, that the fact of my father's time and attention having been so completely absorbed by the claims of an extensive and enlarged public service at the period of my childhood, rendered it almost impossible for him to bestow so much of his care and observation on the training of the younger members of the family as upon those who were more advanced in years; consequently I was left more to the immediate supervision of my mother, though not without the general superintendence of my father. I suppose, too, that I may state, that my having attained only my eighth year at the period of his removal from Willington to the University of Georgia accounts for the fact that I was never a student of the Willington Academy. Indeed, I never made a recitation to him until in my junior and senior years in the University, when the class had come regularly to the studies of moral science and logic. But my school-days in the earlier time were passed in the pursuit of the simplest elements of English. I recall the fact now that at that time my days passed noiselessly along, and though, perhaps, only negatively happy, I was, at any rate, free from care; and, in the company of my mother and my sisters, my life wore on as merrily as those of other children.

I loved my home. I loved the deep, shady, magnificent old groves, the grass and moss-covered meadow just below the hill, on which stood "the house where I was born," the sandy lane in front, the fences of the farm, overgrown with vines, the huge apple-trees in the yard, and the great barn, a structure only less imposing than the dwelling house. I was deeply interested in watching the travelers, with their vehicles of varied forms—carriages, wagons, carts, and horses—passing along the highway to and fro, the market road leading to Augusta, Ga., on their journey to that great world, of which I then knew nothing, and about which I cared (if possible) still less. All the localities to which I had access in those days of simplicity and freedom from care were invested with a nameless fascination for me, such as no other place on earth has ever possessed since, or can ever possess again.

The most important event of my life at that period was, that then I began to attend my first school as a pupil. It was a private school, taught in my father's house. This school consisted of his younger children, my two sisters and myself, taught by a young candidate (or licentiate) for the ministry, by name James Hillhouse, who did not remain long. Of his subsequent history I only know that he went to Alabama, and, as a pioneer of the gospel ministry, he laid, with other zealous preachers, the broad and deep foundations of the church in that *then* newly-settled country; and although he has long since ceased from his labors and been called to his rest, the fruit abides in the gathering of an abundant harvest.

I must have attained at that time an age not exceeding five years. Not long after that my father was induced to change his residence from the old homestead to the little hamlet of Willington, distant about a mile south, as more promising of health for his family. Here we resumed our attendance on school duties in a log cabin, which had

been erected as a summer cottage by some one who had left it. It was now fitted up as a school-room and made quite comfortable, and, instead of being a private family school, it became a public neighborhood school, and was pretty fairly patronized. It is a great pleasure to me to recall the teacher who then took charge of this school. Rev. David Humphreys, "so long the pastor of Good Hope and Roberts," as recorded by Dr. Howe in the *History of the Presbyterian Church in South Carolina*, and who spent his useful, long life within the limits of the Presbytery of South Carolina, and died, full of years and universally beloved, in 1869, was the teacher of this, which was my second school. Here, and under the instruction of this excellent man, I learned to read, and he it was who gave me my first lessons in penmanship. The extent of my education in this place only covered the simplest rudiments of English, embracing spelling, reading, and writing; but I well remember that the Bible was a prominent text-book in that school. This brings to mind an incident that made an impression upon me at that time, and still holds its place in memory very deeply. On a certain day, after the daily exercises were finished, and the pupils had all left the school-house and had gone home, we were startled by the announcement that the building was on fire! This house was in view of my father's dwelling, and I can readily bring to mind the terror that I felt at the sight of the flame that shot up in angry sheets of fire toward the sky, and how the thought that gave me most concern was that *my Bible* would be burned up! But sad as this disaster seemed, it had not the effect of putting the school to an end, for another humble building was soon found hard by, which was quickly pressed into service and made to answer the purpose as long as was necessary until better arrangements could be made. Our teacher, who had been engaged in the studies preparatory to the ministry, under my father's instruction, soon after

this was licensed and left for his field of labor. I may not dismiss the mention of this beloved man without adding that his ministerial labors were continued very nearly in the same field, with small exception, for the space of about fifty years, during which time he was abundant in zealous and successful work for the cause of Christ. His name is still "as ointment poured forth," and, as long as my father lived in Abbeville, Mr. Humphreys was always a favorite guest, and welcome to all our household, and he was regarded by us all as among the best and wisest of men in the large circle of our acquaintance. I may be pardoned for a remark which might savor of overweening self-importance under other circumstances, and that is, that this man of God little thought when he was teaching me the elements (a little boy of six or seven years) that he should live to know of my serving in the gospel of Jesus Christ, and that we should be permitted in the good providence of God to meet, as we did in Baltimore, as members of the Southern General Assembly.

In those childhood times, however, before my mind had experienced the expansion resulting from contact with the great world, the surrounding picture which met my observation was marked, in my crude conceptions, with many features that loomed up in imaginary grandeur and mystery. The ponds, the delight of geese and ducks, seemed to me extensive sheets of water of unknown depth; nor did they shrink into their diminished limits until I had seen and wondered at their mighty rivals in my after years—the broad waters of the Savannah and the dashing surges of the Oconee mill-pond at Athens, Ga.! I shall not easily forget the deep and disagreeable impression left on my spirits by my first view of oil-painted portraits on canvass. The problem that puzzled me was to decide whether they were living or dead. They hung upon a parlor wall of a house in the neighborhood, where I was once a child-visitor. Those strange, searching eyes, peering out from the frames,

seemed to follow me as I moved all through the room, go where I would, and to single me out as the special object of their observation with their cold, stony, glaring look. Nor did I lose the apprehension then taking hold of my feelings for a great while afterwards in my childhood. I mention one more incident of those days, when, as is usual, a class of impressions make marks upon the child-heart and mind, which, though they disappear as years ripen, are somehow never forgotten. Occasion arising once when my mother needed to send to a neighbor a message on some point of social nature. She sent one of my older brothers as her messenger. The distance was, perhaps, something more than a mile to be traversed, and he pressed me into service as his companion. As the time of the day was the afternoon, and somewhere toward sunset, and we were not disposed to be hurried, we found that night was approaching before we began to return. It was then we remembered a ghost story, the scene of which was near a small running stream which crossed our road. The story was this: A physician of the neighborhood was once returning from a visit to a patient along the very road we then trod, and as he came in sight of the little branch, as the story goes, he saw a man approaching from the opposite side of the stream on horseback. He paid no special attention to the matter then, as he expected to meet the rider at the water, but, when he came near it, the horse and rider could be seen nowhere at all, but the vision vanished in a floating cloud of blue smoke! Of course, it was nothing but a story which was made up by some one merely to attract the lovers of the marvelous, but it was adopted as a real occurrence by the credulous, and related by the negroes as a true story of a ghost seen by the doctor. On minds of children, I remember, it made a deep impression; and as my brother and I approached the branch, the scene of this fearful apparition, we felt the awfulness of the position, especially as it was growing dark. We quickened our gait, and did not feel

perfectly safe until we reached home, breathless with fear and fatigued beyond measure. There was among the negroes immense tendency to the belief in ghosts, and no doubt the children received their impressions from the superstitious tales which they were so fond of telling. The misfortune is that, while many children subsequently are brought under influences sufficiently powerful to counteract the evil of such incidental associations, there are many who never perfectly escape the contagion of early and evil training of this kind.

Memory serves me with a reminiscence of a somewhat different nature, as it displays a tendency on my part which, although not developed into reality for many long years afterwards, still came to be recalled to my recollection when I had reached the age of manhood. It was a disposition manifested to figure among my home companions as a public speaker, and more especially as a preacher. I suppose it is in part accounted for by the fact that I had been accustomed all my childhood to accompany my mother to church Sabbath after Sabbath. There the most impressive part of the occasion was the appearance and manner of my father and other ministers as they officiated in public service in the pulpit. The principle of imitation would naturally give rise to the practice in a child, but as that idea vanished in process of time, and the true character of preaching entered into and took possession of my more enlightened understanding, I lost my fondness for all personal exercises of that kind until I entered my junior year in college, and even then my career as a public speaker closed on the day of my graduation, and my entrance upon a course of life requiring no such methods of communicating with others. I do not remember that I ever had occasion to present myself afterwards in public as a speaker until my thirtieth year, and that was as a licentiate in Mississippi; but I am anticipating, and with these reminiscences of my early days I must close this chapter and enter upon another.

CHAPTER II.

My Preparatory School-days in Athens, Ga.

IN the year 1818 my father, as has been stated in his biography already, was invited to the presidency of the University of Georgia, and, after much careful deliberation and prayer for divine guidance, he decided to accept the call. Of all this, being a mere child of six years of age, I was naturally in blissful ignorance, and the even tenor of my humble way remained uninterrupted by the momentous discussions and preparations in progress. Nor did I realize the fact until in the following year, in the month of May, we were all summoned to leave the spot around which clustered so many endearing memories of days and years of what to us seemed endless pleasure and careless delight. Had I realized then fully all that I should be called to encounter in the years that lay spread out before me all unknown, a deep feeling of sadness would no doubt have overshadowed my heart, when, at a turn of the road on our journey, the horizon beyond the old fields around my birthplace, rendered blue and smooth by the enchantment lent by distance to the view, was shut off, and nothing lay before us but an unknown and weary travel to the great, strange world. But the wise constitution of our nature, whereby we are restricted in our knowledge to the present, and cannot penetrate a day into the future, enabled us very soon to dismiss all gloom, and the novelty of things around had a tendency to restore the normal equanimity and cheerfulness of childhood. A day or two of travel (of course, by private conveyance) in those primitive times enabled us to accomplish the sixty miles that lay between us and Athens; and when we

came to the hills which rise abruptly from the Oconee river, beyond which lay our new home, the first objects of interest to our wondering gaze were the summits of the chimneys that rose from the roof of the old three-story brick dormitory of the college in the distance. I have even now a vivid impression of the grand and solemn appearance of everything, and the increasing depth of that impression as we came in front of the old building, with its long rows of windows, one above the other, facing a wide and beautiful campus, gently sloping to the street. But I did not know then that this huge pile of brick and mortar, now full of empty, silent, and deserted rooms, which had then been abandoned for nearly three years, would very shortly be resounding with the noise and bustle of preparation for the reception of hundreds of the young men and boys of the land, coming to be trained under the new order of things for their life-work of honor and usefulness. Utterly unconscious, too, was I, "a small boy" of seven years, as I gazed on the scene presented to view, that in some future day I should be admitted as an occupant of this huge building, and a recipient of the advantages and benefits of the institution. All these facts and reflections lay latent and unformed in my unawakened consciousness, and I felt no disturbance of my peace of mind by the fact that I was doomed to a long and tedious training preparatory to this higher theatre of work and effort.

My scholastic career as a pupil began soon after my father's arrival in Athens by my entrance into an English school, taught in a small, unpainted room some twenty or twenty-five feet square, as I remember, on the northern limit of the University campus, just where the first house of worship of the Presbyterian church was afterwards erected. The teacher of this school was James Fulton, an excellent man, of plain and unpretentious character, but deserving of full credit for the possession of all the qualifications of a

thorough English scholar and teacher in the primary department. I spent at least one session there, and my recollection of the school is, that it was patronized by some of the first citizens of the town and surrounding country. The only names of my fellow pupils that I can now recall are two sons of Hon. A. S. Clayton, George R. and Augustine S.; two sons of a wealthy merchant of Athens, Stevens and Dudley Thomas, and two sons of Colonel Carnes, Johnson and Stanley. There were also the Scotts, Kinneys, and Mitchells, from the surrounding country. Some of these boys may be still living, but I know that many of them are dead. The system of government adopted in this school was based upon the time-honored rules laid down in the Proverbs of Solomon, which enjoin upon all in authority, whether as parents, or as those acting in *loco parentum*, the use of the rod, giving as the ground of this injunction the fact that "foolishness is bound up in the heart of a child," and assuring the administrator that "the rod of correction shall drive it far from him." I am far from intending to leave the impression, however, that Mr. Fulton was a man of cruel or passionate temper, or devoid of the power of self-control. He felt it his duty to the child, as well as to the parent, to use all legitimate measures for the correction of offenders, in order to insure proper training and secure the good order of the school. But it was a true experience of a faithful school-teacher in those days, and is largely true in the present age, that his office was difficult and thankless in its exercise. How it originated, perhaps, is a problem not solved, but it is certain that the relation between teacher and pupil was too generally regarded by the latter as one of direct antagonism. We may account for this in part by the fact, that on the part of the teacher of the olden time there was an exaction of official distance to be observed by the pupil from him in order to the preservation of that respect due his office. The natural result of such a

requirement was to engender in the mind of the pupil the idea that the teacher was to be feared, not loved. A custom not yet altogether out of use existed then, viz., to designate the teacher by the adjective "Old," and that, too, without regard to age, all that was necessary being that he occupied the place of teacher. Frequently there was added a noun, to be qualified by this word "Old," founded upon some peculiarity observable in the teacher. Accordingly, that which gave rise to Mr. Fulton's nick-name was a stooping gait in his walk and the forward movement of his head at every step, and so, not content with calling him "Old Fulton," they adopted the title "*Old Drake*," by which he was afterwards generally known among successive generations of pupils. Carrying out the idea, the boys who attended the Grammar School, a preparatory school for the University, who held themselves as occupying a more elevated rank than the Fultonites, were fond of carrying this custom to its legitimate sequence, and as the master was a drake, it followed that the pupils were "*young ducks*." It is recorded that these boys of the "upper form" were in the habit (by way of amusement) of calling the *young ducks* up to be fed, repeating the words, "*Diddle, diddle, diddle*," no doubt to the wrathful indignation of this class.

The only instance of outbreaking disorder during my connection with this school was a "barring out" that was carried into effect by the larger boys. What the provocation was that suggested this manifestation of rebellion I am not able to recall at this remote period; it was accomplished, however, by the usual methods adopted on such occasions. When the teacher arrived on the morning of that day to open and conduct the exercises as usual, he found himself effectually excluded from his domain by barred door and windows. He succeeded in recovering his lost seat of authority, I suppose, by getting outside assistance, and settled the matter, doubtless, on the most satisfactory terms to him-

self, however it resulted to the rebels. As to myself, I remember that I had no concern in it for two good reasons: I was too young, and I stood in too wholesome dread of the home settlement consequent upon a possible participation in such an enterprise. I may as well dismiss this part of my school-day history by recording that, neither during that period or term of my discipleship, nor in any school or college with which I was subsequently connected, was I ever concerned or personally involved in the petty tricks or more serious misdemeanors so commonly practiced by school-boys or by college students. I presume that long ere this time the good man, Mr. James Fulton, who wielded the authority of that little domain in 1820, has rested from his toils and been gathered to his fathers. Peace to his ashes! Many with whom I have been associated during my long life may have outshined him in the more artificial distinctions of society, but I am sure that few have surpassed him in the homely, but valuable, virtue of conscientious fidelity in the discharge of daily duty.

When I left that school my father placed in my hands the Latin Grammar, as the first step in my preparation for college. I was then only eight years of age. It may not be charged that I am presumptuous in asserting my belief that it was a premature step in my educational training. The study of language, especially of the ancient Greek and Roman tongues, in my opinion, formed after long experience, requires, for its successful mastery, a maturity of mind and a critical grasp of thought which is not found in a child of eight years. The more appropriate line of study, as it strikes me, is the course that calls for the culture of the perceptive powers, since these are the faculties first awakened and brought into action.

Says ex-President Porter in his great work, *The Human Intellect:* "The studies that should be first pursued are those which require observation and acquisition, and which

involve imagination and memory, in contrast with those which demand severe efforts and trained habits of thought. Inasmuch, also, as material objects are apprehended and mastered in early life with far greater ease and success than the acts and states of the spirit, objective and material studies should have almost exclusive precedence."

The true conception of the development of the intellect he expresses succinctly and justly, I think, in these words:

"To teach pure observation, or the mastery of objects and words, without classification or interpretation, is to be ignorant even to simple stupidity; but, on the other hand, to stimulate the thought processes to unnatural and prematurely painful efforts, is to do violence to the laws which nature has written in the constitution of the intellect. Even thought and reflection teach us that before the processes of thought can be applied, materials must be gathered in large abundance; and, to provide for these, nature has made acquisition and memory easy and spontaneous for childhood, reasoning and science difficult and unnatural."

If we call to mind that there is a science of language, as well as of any other department of knowledge, and that to master that science requires a power of reasoning not generally developed at so early a period as eight years of age, my position will be appreciated. I think that some book of object lessons is preferable to the Latin Grammar to be placed in the hands of so young a child. Even a book of primary Geometry, couched in simple language, accompanied with figures, can be explained to one of that age with entire success. Then the powers thus called into active exercise to observe and to retain in memory will stimulate the learner to discriminate and classify what has been acquired. Due attention to such principles for a time will result in strengthening the memory and in rendering the powers of classification vigorous and prompt, so as to be ready to take in all the more abstruse principles involved in the science of

language. Those studies less abstruse and more readily and easily mastered should occupy the attention of the student in earlier years, until the more mature age of twelve or thereabouts. I can only say, that in the main the facts in my case tend to confirm this theory; for while it is true that I had not the opportunity of testing the advantage of substituting the less abstruse course of study referred to above, the difficulty I experienced in the beginning of my Latin study must be accounted for upon the fact that it was undertaken at an age when the mind was immature. I give this as my opinion from my success in mastering the languages at a later period, after I had been kept to the study of other subjects, along with the study of ancient languages, until by the exercise gradually I acquired this power and a taste for Latin. So that, contrary to the expectation that might have been indulged from my unpromising beginning, I soon began to find enjoyment in the study of the ancient languages, and the longer I was kept at these studies, the greater the attraction they seemed to possess. Hence it came to pass that I attained a high grade of class standing in this department of scholastic instruction. It became my favorite study, and was my peculiar forte, so much so that I filled the Professorship of Classical Literature in two of the Faculties of which I afterwards became a member, and taught the Greek incidentally in a third.

To resume the narrative, I became a regular student of the Grammar School not long after the time in question, and in that school I began my preparation for the Freshman Class in Franklin College, of the University of Georgia. The list of studies required for admission into this class is not remembered, but the *age* of admission was then, what it is now, fixed at fourteen years. When it is known to all that the vast advancement of the knowledge of science within the half century past is unprecedented in the history of the world, it will not escape the observation of those who

are familiar with the world's progress that in 1822–'23 the curriculum of scientific study was very limited in extent and in the number of subjects pursued. The principal stress was laid on Latin and Greek in the published requisites for admission. Inasmuch, then, as I did not attain the age of fourteen, and was not allowed to enter College until 1826, it will be seen that I had an excess of time in which to prepare. I entered upon my work, however, with my best powers, and the time wore on and I made very fair progress.

The Grammar School, in which I was now entered as a pupil, consisted, as I now recollect, of about one hundred boys, of all ages from ten to eighteen or twenty, and of all grades of advancement, from beginners to those who were engaged in the closing studies of the course. It was under the joint instruction of two gentlemen, Moses W. Dobbins and Ebenezer Newton. Mr. Dobbins was a nephew of my father, and received his entire education at Willington Academy. His colleague, Mr. Newton, was a graduate of the University, of the Class of 1811. Mr. Dobbins being a cousin of mine, I was placed under his immediate care and supervision. These teachers occupied separate rooms of a two-story building, Mr. Dobbins the room on the lower floor and Mr. Newton a smaller room above stairs. The lower room was made purposely larger, in order to be used at the opening and closing hours of the school every day for prayers, the entire body of the students of both apartments being required to be present. On such occasions the teachers efficiated alternately, the roll was called by monitors appointed from the older students.

These gentlemen have both long since ceased from their earthly labors and passed to their heavenly rest. They were men of excellent qualities of head and heart; well-grounded in all the required subjects of scholastic instruction, with firm, steady, impartial, and kindly methods of

discipline; devotedly pious members of the Presbyterian church, and possessing the entire confidence and esteem of the community where they resided. At that time, and for some years following, the school formed a part of the system of the University, and an annual salary of eight hundred dollars was paid to each of these teachers from the University treasury. In process of time the Grammar School was separated from the University as a constituent part of its course, and was thrown open to individual enterprise, the teacher receiving his support from the tuition fees. The old school-house was removed to give place for some building to be used for purposes of the University proper, perhaps the library.

It may be in order that I should here record more minutely the course of preparatory study adopted in that school. It will serve as a part of the history of education, and, by a comparison of it with that which now is required for admission into college, we may observe the advance made in that stage of education.

The course covered Latin, Greek, arithmetic, penmanship, elocution, and composition. The first book was the Latin Grammar, which was studied memoriter, the definitions of the parts of speech, the declensions and paradigms of the nouns and adjectives, and pronouns, the conjugations of the verb, with number, person, mood, and tense, and all the variations of regular, irregular, and defective verbs, and the indeclinable parts of speech, adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions, and interjections, all were carefully committed to memory and made familiar to the mind of the student. This brought him to the syntax, and the arrival at this point in the journey was always looked to as an important attainment, opening a new and interesting scene of study. Memory was still called into active exercise. The rules must be committed and all the examples illustrating each rule. This part having been gone over, ordinarily the first parts were

reviewed, and when, in the course of this review, the syntax was again reached, the student was required, not only to memorize as before, but the new task was prescribed of "*parsing*" (as it was called) every word in each example, showing the part of speech to which it belonged, together with the relation it bore to the other words in the example, and, lastly, to repeat and apply the rule under which the student was exercising himself. This course was continued until every rule and all its examples were thoroughly mastered to the end of the grammar. It is interesting, too, to observe the changes which have taken place in the text-books since that time. The grammar used then, and for some years, was an old book called *Ruddiman's Rudiments of the Latin Tongue*," now perhaps out of print, of which I have seen only one copy in half a century. Many expedients were adopted in it for the purpose of aiding the memory of the student in committing the variations of the verb, or other parts of speech, and the one most advantageous was to present the principle in rhyme.

As there was then a comparatively small amount of scientific study required for admission into college, the greater part of the time and attention of the candidate was occupied in the study of the ancient languages. There were some peculiarities in vogue then in the methods of teaching Latin and Greek, which seem, in a great measure, to have been abandoned in the modern system of preparation. While I do not propose to decide upon the relative value of either plan, the old or the new, at the same time I do not feel at liberty to omit a minute record of the mode of the schools used in that early period of time. I propose giving also the reasons for its adoption by those who made use of it.

One of these peculiar methods was to place in the hands of the candidate or student beginning the course a series of primary text-books, which varied in the degree of difficulty successively, from the exceedingly easy to those of the series

requiring the closer application of the mind to master, until gradually he was thrown upon his own acquired resources, having no aid save that derived from his grammar and dictionary. The arrangement was on this wise: The first text-book placed in the hands of the student after a thorough mastery of the grammar was a book called *The Colloquies of Corderius*, a copy of which I have not seen, I am sure, within fifty years, and I suppose it is out of print; it is certainly out of use. The book was arranged in parallel columns, the one of these columns being very simple sentences in English, and the other consisting of Latin sentences to correspond. The student was expected, while preparing his task, to use the translation entirely until he had become perfectly familiar with the reading; but when he came before the teacher to recite, he was expected to cover the English with a paper, so as to translate the Latin without further aid. After accomplishing fifty of the *Colloquies* in this way, exercised all along in parsing every word of the Latin, as well as translating, he was required to take up the *Colloquies of Erasmus*. This was arranged in the same way, in parallel columns of Latin and English, but the reading was somewhat more difficult to the student from the fact that the order of the Latin text placed the words not in exact correspondence with the English, and so the student found that there was a necessity for harder study to apply the words in the Latin to the English words in their proper places. This was done by what was called by the boys "skipping about," and demanded some knowledge by their previous training to find the proper word and use it as its various inflections required in order to meet the exact meaning. This was followed by a third text-book, *Cornelius Nepos, in his Lives of Distinguished Men*, which, although arranged in the same method of parallel English and Latin columns, required still greater capacity of selection and discrimination so as to appropriate the scattered

words in the Latin to the correspondent English words, and thus to construct the sentence. The closest attention was paid also to the analysis of the sentence in every respect, and the student was exercised in pointing out the interdependence of the several parts and the relation sustained by the one to the other, and the application of the proper syntactical rule to the whole. These books having been mastered as far as was considered necessary, *The Commentaries of Cæsar* was next put into the student's hands, and now he had no further aid from an English translation, unless he used one surreptitiously. Certainly there was no provision for such assistance in the ordinary course of study, and this sort of help was held to be contraband, "banned and barred, forbidden fare." Of this text-book six books were required to be read. Along with it Latin exercises were written, *Mair's Introduction* being the text-book, the work prescribed being to correct false Latin sentences. *Cæsar* was succeeded by *Virgil*, and of this book *The Ten Eclogues*, the first, second, and fourth books of the *Georgics*, and six books of the *Æneid*. The Latin preparatory course was closed by reading *Cicero's Select Orations*, but the number of these orations required I cannot now recall. But in consequence of my being so far under the required age of entrance into college (fourteen years), I was kept in the Grammar School much longer than was necessary, and consequently I read more Latin and Greek than was ordinarily read. We usually began the study of Greek on entering the study of *Virgil*, as it was supposed that we had been sufficiently drilled in the previous Latin course to fit us for the study of Greek. The grammar in use then was a very small, thin book, *Wettenhall's Greek Grammar*, which, being deservedly regarded as exceedingly defective in every requisite for the study of Greek, was very soon superseded by superior grammars. *Valpy's Greek Grammar* was introduced (Anthon's edition), and this lasted in

its use in the schools of the country a long time. This has had its rivals in later days, among which we may mention Goodrich and Bullion, Kühner, and Goodwyn, and Hadley. Others also continue to take their places in the modern course of study. Not to mention the great German authors, we may dismiss the subject by the remark, that it is becoming a custom for many professors of Greek to edit a Greek grammar to meet some real or imaginary want unsupplied by existing grammars.

The first Greek text-book that was placed in my hands was the Greek Testament; and while the Gospel by John was ordinarily regarded sufficient, my impression now is that, by reason of my being too young to enter college, I was kept reading several other parts of the Testament. There were two books now out of use which were then adopted as text-books in Greek, viz., *Græca Minora* and *Græca Majora*. The first of these consisted of The Fables, The Mythological Narratives, and The Dialogues of the Dead, by Lucian, and the Odes of Anacreon. The *Græca Majora* was, in like manner, a book of extracts from the ancient Greek authors; also much more difficult to the learner. These are no longer known in the list of preparatory studies for college, but, instead, we have Greek readers of a variety of authors, among them Goodwyn's and Whiton's First Book in Greek, etc. The course of preparation in the ancient languages covered more ground then than it does now from the fact already referred to, viz., the wonderful advance of the sciences and other special departments of human learning within the last half century, which has rendered it necessary that time once devoted to Latin and Greek should be shortened and surrendered to the sciences, and partly to the study of the modern languages.

That boys were made more thorough in their scholarship in the days of my boyhood than they have been since, may or may not be true universally, or that the system then

adopted was superior to that used in modern times I am not prepared to assert as true in all respects. I am decidedly of the opinion that, where a sufficient time is allowed for boys to learn what they are required to master, appropriate subjects being given to the various ages of the boys, the same result might be reached by either course. But it has come to be regarded by our people as too great a sacrifice of time and money to allow seven or eight years to the study of the Latin and Greek languages and sciences. As it is a part of a liberal education to study these branches, the accepted theory is that our sons must, of course, study them; but the constant and impatient cry is, "Hurry them through." Now, as teachers are mostly dependent upon the patronage they obtain, they fall in with this clamor *too often* in order to please parents; and if any teacher is too conscientious to pander to this unwise sentiment, he is frequently condemned as *old fogyish*, and is left behind in the race of competition. There remain still a few of this class of teachers to recall to our recollection what was once in existence, but the race is rapidly dying out. Another cause of superficial scholarship is to be traced to the multitude of helps in the way of text-books, making the student's task so easy as to leave him no mental labor to perform. Everything is simplified, especially in the languages and mathematics. There are two extremes to be avoided, of which the one is too little assistance, and the other the opposite extreme. I have seen an edition of *Horace* and one of the *Iliad*, in which the editor not only translated and scanned every difficult passage, but many that were not difficult, thereby winning the reputation accorded to commentators generally, that they are "very good in easy places"; besides analyzing or parsing almost every word for the student.

Some of text-books of the old time, in my judgment, were objectionable, not on account of being too easy, but because they did not require enough of independent effort on the

part of the student. I have described the method of teaching by parallel columns of English and Latin, in which the task of the student was simply that of memory, and I believe that, if no English translation had been furnished, he could have mastered the whole with no aid but that which he could have procured from a dictionary or vocabulary and his grammar. I prefer the modern text-book system, which ignores translations from the outset; and yet, while a judicious system of notes in the back part of the book is not objectionable, that which is found in many of the books is so voluminous and explanatory as to require only that the learner should turn over the leaves and consult the notes, ignoring the dictionary altogether. Provided, therefore, that the languages as a study be not demanded of a student at an age when his mental powers are inadequate to the mastery of such abstruse subjects, and the series of text-books be gradually ascending in their grade from the easy to the more difficult, I should always decide to recommend the modern system. I can only add, that the Greek lexicon which was placed in my hands was thoroughly Greek, giving even the definitions in Latin; and my copy of Homer's *Iliad* (Clark's) gave me notes at the bottom of the page, every word of which was in Latin.

There is one more point I should bring into view just here: it is the vast importance to a thorough comprehension of language which ought to be attached to the study of etymology. This formed a very prominent exercise in the class drilling of the olden time. The plan of recitation was: 1, Translation, with proper pronunciation of the words; 2, Analysis of the sentence, or, as is the word more commonly used, parsing; and then the student was to give the root, or stem, or derivation of every simple word, and the composition of every compound. Here, again, there was a difference in the giving of these roots and compositions. The root of the Greek word was given in Latin, not in English.

Those who have been drilled in etymology in such schools never lose the influence in after life of this part of their school exercises, as they find themselves instinctively instituting an inquiry into the origin of words, particularly if it be a word newly introduced into our language. This is indeed one of the benefits of the ancient classics; we learn English by them. I was prepared for college long before I had attained the age of admission, and hence I had reason to observe on more than one occasion boys who were my classmates in the Grammar School examined and admitted into college, while I was left out, and not even examined, for no other reason than because they were old enough and I was not. Had my exclusion been attributable to any deficiency of my scholarship, it would have been a source of mortification to me; but as it turned out, I was content to wait patiently and "bide my time," which came all right at last.

I recall, in this connection, an incident bordering on the ludicrous, which occurred on occasion of one of those annual examinations of candidates for admission into college from the Grammar School. It was when one of the classes to which I belonged was to be examined, from which I was exempt by being under age. Two of the boys among these candidates were intimate associates of mine, and were to be examined on the appointed morning in the College Chapel, in presence of the Faculty. They were perfectly confident of success, and greatly uplifted in the anticipation of being admitted to the coveted dignity of college boys. They proposed, then, to the class, on the evening previous, that they should repair to the usual bathing place, on the Oconee river, near by, and "wash off Grammar School!" They went, and, I have no doubt, enjoyed the bath, doing their part toward the accomplishment of the desired object; but, when the test of the next morning was applied by the examiners, both were rejected, much to their disappointment, chagrin, and mortification.

To resume my story, I was kept in the Grammar School a part of the remaining term of my non-age, pursuing the same studies that formed the freshman course in college. As there always was a school examination conducted at the close of each session, I, among the other boys, was examined on the studies I had been pursuing during the session. On one of these examination occasions, as the school was a constituent part of the University, a member of the Faculty came to attend, and he was expected to make a report of the result. I do not think that I attended that school much longer after that. I was put to some light work on my father's farm, near Athens, and, according to my recollection now, I was kept at that occupation until about May 1, 1826, just about a month after I had completed my fourteenth year. I remember very well that, on a certain afternoon, in an interview which I had with Mr. E. S. Hopping, one of the tutors, he informed me, greatly to my surprise, that I had been admitted by the Faculty into the Freshman class, and he notified me to attend the exercises the next morning at sunrise! He further accounted for my being admitted without examination upon the ground that my examination at the Grammar School some time before had been attended by a professor, who reported so favorably of it that I was admitted on the credit of that examination without being required to submit to any further test. Accordingly, the next morning I repaired to the recitation-room of the tutor, Mr. Lathrop, who had charge of the instruction of the Freshman Class, and was enrolled as a student about the first of May, being the beginning of the third or last term of the Freshman year, about three months before the close of the session, and the day of the annual commencement.

CHAPTER III.

College Life in the University of Georgia.

WHEN I entered college the Freshman Class consisted of quite a large number of students, of which I was the youngest. Before our graduation, however, for various reasons, the number had become a good deal diminished. This is very often the case. In 1829, when this class closed their college course and received the diploma of Bachelor of Arts, there were twenty-one graduates. I propose, at this point, to give the names and as much as I may be able to recall of the history of those members of the class who afterwards attained distinction in their various spheres or professions. It will appear from the sketches here presented, and might be shown by similar sketches of all classes, that the attainment of college honors does not guarantee infallibly the highest success in life. There were three grades of honor always awarded to the graduating class, and the merit of the members was estimated according to the averaged aggregate of all the marks which each had received from the several professors in their various departments, laying special stress upon scholarship. The grade did not then, as it does now, make one hundred the maximum of excellence attainable. There were only three numbers used to indicate relative standing of students, of which No. 1 was the highest mark; and, in case of superior excellence, to this was appended an asterisk. The medium grade was marked No. 2, and deficiency was shown by No. 3. The highest distinction in my class was awarded to Nathaniel Macon Crawford. He was first-honor man, and to him was assigned the delivery of the valedictory. He was

solus—that is, there was no one in the class who shared the honor with him. The second honor was awarded to Thomas F. Scott and William J. Vason jointly, and Scott delivered the Latin salutatory. The third honor was jointly bestowed upon George F. Pierce and William W. Smythe. There were also two sets of students of this class who were entitled to speakers' places on commencement day. One set consisted of five, among whom the Faculty decided there was full equality. There were five others also equal, but for some reason only two of these were permitted to speak, most probably on account of the length of time which would be consumed in the delivery of so many as fifteen speeches. The two of the second set received their positions by lot; so that we had twelve orations delivered on that day by the class of '29. The names of the seven speakers besides the honor men were as follows: James M. Adams, Shaler G. Hillyer, Richard D. Moore, Isaac N. Moreland, John B. Watts, George F. Heard, and John N. Waddel. The three remaining students of the second set who, although equal in scholarship to their colleagues, failed in the decision by lot, were John M. Cuyler and Edward J. Erwin and (according to my recollection) Gray A. Chandler. I can state with accuracy the subsequent history of the majority of my class, and of the rest it must be only an approximation to the full record.

Nathaniel Macon Crawford, a son of the distinguished statesman, William H. Crawford, of Georgia, was a model college student. If he ever failed in making a perfect recitation, I never discovered it; and I think this would be the statement of his classmates could they testify. Although by no means brilliant, he had no rival in the class in accuracy. Hence he graduated at the head of the class *solus*. He was made professor in the Presbyterian institution, Oglethorpe University, but soon left that position; became a member of the Baptist church, and then entered the min-

istry of that church. He was called to a professorship in Mercer University, then located at Penfield, Ga., (now at Macon, Ga.,) then made president of the same institution. In 1856 he was elected to the chair of metaphysics in the University of Mississippi, while I was connected with that institution. He served in that capacity at that place only one year; and, being called to the Baptist College at Georgetown, Ky., he resigned at Oxford and accepted the Presidency at Georgetown. He remained there but one year, returned to Mercer University, and then resigned. He died near Atlanta, Ga., in 1871. He was made president of the Bible Revision Association; wrote articles for the *Reviews* and a book called *Christian Paradoxes*. He became somewhat learned in his own system of theology; was slightly given to change in his views of some subjects, and his firmness on some other points was almost properly characterized as obstinacy.

The next member of the class in the order of distinction was Thomas F. Scott, of North Carolina. He was the son of a very plain man of excellent sense and esteemed for his consistent piety. He was of humble domestic training, and was destined by his father for the trade of a blacksmith. Manifesting promising talents, his father gave him some advantages; and having become hopefully converted, and determining to prepare for the ministry, he entered the University of Georgia during my father's presidency, and was educated upon the funds of the Georgia Education Society, a Presbyterian institution for candidates for the ministry. He was always on good terms with his friends in Athens, who, seeing his good qualities, made due allowance for his self-conceit. On the disruption between the Old and New School Presbyterian Church, that occurred in 1837, he joined the New School party, and preached for a few years in that connection. But to the amazement of all who knew him, he entered the fold of the Episcopal Church, and, as some criti-

cal acquaintances of his seemed to think, "he saw a *mitre* beckoning him in the distance," and so he left the old church of his fathers, became a link in the chain of the "Apostolical Succession," and was appointed missionary bishop of the diocese of Oregon, and there he died. His colleague in the second honor was William J. Vason, a Georgian. Throughout his entire college course he was a more than ordinary scholar, as that word is applied to students in general. He was an intellectual man, diligent in his preparation for all his exercises, whether in the class-room or in the literary society, and stood high in all his classes, and was a fine declaimer and writer. He was also a leader in the Demosthenian Society. After his graduation he entered the legal profession, and, as was anticipated from his promising antecedents in his college course, became a successful lawyer, and established himself first in New Orleans; then, returning to Georgia, he settled in Augusta, in the practice of law, and there he died.

The next name among the honor men is that of George F. Pierce, who shared third honor with William W. Smythe, both Georgians. Of the whole class he attained the widest distinction, and perhaps deservedly reached that position on account of the rare combination of attractive qualities he possessed. During his college course he was a universal favorite, on account of his amiable disposition and social temperament. He was, at the same time, recognized as a person of positiveness of character, and was not in the least afraid to stand by his convictions on all proper occasions. He had a will of his own, but it was guided by wisdom, prudence, truth, and duty. Not extraordinary as a class scholar, he was above mediocrity in all his studies. He had a bright, but not a profound, mind. His was a brilliant imagination, and a fervid and animated elocution, graceful in action, and withal attractive in person and of a handsome face. He professed religion while in college, and I remem-

ber the scene that occurred in the Methodist church when he was received into the church, his venerable father, Rev. Dr. Lovick Pierce, being present, and I shall never forget the manifestation of his father's overwhelming joy on the occasion. After graduation he was received into the ministry of that church, and soon became an eminently useful preacher, and, from the very beginning of his career, was appointed to fill the most important pulpits and most prominent positions in that denomination. He was at one time minister in charge of the Augusta, Ga., M. E. church, and at another time the church in Savannah, Ga., and again of the Methodist church in Charleston, S. C. In 1838 he was made President of the Georgia Female (now Wesleyan) College, in Macon, Ga. In 1848 he was elected to the presidency of Emory College, at Oxford, Ga. In 1854 he was elected bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, when the General Conference met in Columbus, Ga., and for more than thirty years filled that high and responsible office to the universal acceptance of the church and all his multitude of friends and admirers. His death occurred at his home, in Sparta, Ga., in 1885, as I am informed.

William W. Smythe, his partner in the third honor, had the reputation, when in college, of being the most brilliant genius in his class. During his first year there he was marked out by every one as being, beyond all others, sure of the first honor; but after the earlier classes had been passed through by him, he became less and less interested in the studies prescribed; was fond of debating, an eloquent speaker, studied politics, and devoted much time to the study of general history, and the result was that he came out in the distribution of honors third, instead of first. After graduation he assumed the editorial tripod, and published a political paper in Washington, Ga. When nullification was exciting the country in South Carolina, and to some extent in Georgia, he espoused the Union side of that

controversy, became unpopular, and lost caste. Not long afterwards he died in Washington, Ga., never having realized the bright promise of his earlier days.

We can only add, that of the five men who attained the highest distinction in their college class the man who alone kept up his reputation, and even surpassed his promise, attaining a fame which was not dreamed of by his friends, was Bishop Pierce.

As to the remaining members of the class of 1829, they may be dismissed with a brief record as individuals, some, however, of them becoming distinguished. And yet there is one thing to be said of the members of the class, and that is, there was a larger proportion of its graduates who entered the ministry than of any of those who were in college during the period from 1820 to 1829. Our class numbered twenty-one, and sent forth seven ministers of various churches, as follows: James M. Adams, Presbyterian minister; N. M. Crawford, D. D., Baptist minister; George F. Heard, Baptist minister; S. G. Hillyer, D. D., Baptist minister; G. F. Pierce, D. D., LL. D., Methodist bishop; Thomas F. Scott, D. D., Episcopal bishop; John N. Waddel, D. D., LL. D., Presbyterian. Three of these became presidents of colleges and two professors, viz., Crawford, of two different institutions and professor in two; Pierce, president of two different colleges; Waddel, professor in two institutions and president, or chancellor, in three. Two of these were bishops, Pierce, of the M. E. Church South, and Scott, of the P. E. Church South. Of the remaining members of the class five were physicians, one of whom (R. D. Moore, of Athens,) attained great distinction; five lawyers, two planters, and two concerning whose post-graduate record I have no report. This I regret, as they were both most creditable students of the University. To sum up these statistics, we report of our twenty-one graduates seventeen professional men, two planters, and two good citizens, even though unrecorded.

With these students I passed through the course of prescribed study in the old State University, from May, 1826, to August, 1829. I was on terms of the kindest social intercourse with all my classmates, but my special intimates were Edward J. Erwin, of Morganton, N. C., and Isaac N. Moreland, of Eatonton, Ga., and with these two a very regular correspondence was maintained by me for some years after graduation. Erwin was some years older than myself, but we formed a mutual attachment from being members of the same class and of the Phi Kappi (Literary) Society. He was rather solid than brilliant in the character of his mind. By reason of his proficiency in mathematics, he sustained a highly respectable standing in the class. He was my superior in this department, and I led him in the classics; so that we mutually supplemented each other. Though not a member of the church, he was not outbreakingly wicked or dissolute. His domestic training was of the old-fashioned style, under Presbyterian parents, which, unhappily, is becoming obsolete in later days. I am convinced from long experience, as well as observation, that such training is almost certain to exert a wholesome conservative influence for life over children so trained. Even in cases of apparent failure at some period of the life of a youth, or even in manhood, it is not seldom blessed of God to draw him back to the forsaken paths. I am constrained to add that, when the failure to realize such favorable results as would be expected from such training does ensue in after life, I believe the failure is traceable to the absence of faithfulness on the part of the parents more than to any other cause. I base my confidence in this position solely upon the declaration of sacred Scripture: "Train up a child in the way he should go, and when he is old he will not depart from it." Erwin's record is an illustration in point. He left college with credit, married a superior lady, made a profession of religion, and became an influential elder of

our church. It was a kind Providence which gave me the privilege of meeting him in Charlotte, N. C., and of spending several days there with him during the sessions of the General Assembly in May, 1864.

Of Moreland I could say a great deal, much of which is pleasant and much that is sad to recall. He was an orphan, and was sent to college well prepared. His guardian was Hon. Turner H. Trippe, of Eatonton, Ga., a first-honor graduate of the University, of the class of 1822. Moreland was near my age, and there was a good degree of congeniality between us, and our association was very close and intimate during our entire college course. At the outset he was very bright and promising. In the Freshman year, and in part of the Sophomore year also, he was estimated as among those who stood fair for the first honor, but he became negligent of his studies, and lost the position which he at first held. I knew of one trait of his character that may have accounted in part for his deterioration. He had no ambition to shine in public; and while he held his own for the greater part of his course, in mathematics particularly, he continued his decline until, from being marked out as a well-assured candidate for first honor, he was placed fourth in grade at graduation. After we separated in Athens we kept up correspondence for several years, and it was to me a source of much enjoyment. He was a man of fine mind and genial temperament, and he and I were congenial spirits during our college course. He was also amiable, and to this fact I attribute his decline in scholarship, as there was no lack of influences all around him which tended to encourage neglect of study. What practices or habits may have taken hold of him to the production of such a result in his college course he never revealed to me at all; nor did I at the time suspect that he had fallen into the snares usually laid for students. He settled first in La Grange, Ga., in the practice of law, but afterwards in Texas,

then a Mexican province. There he became a very successful land surveyor, as mathematics in all its various parts was perfectly familiar to him. The terms on which he made his surveys were, that one-half of all the lands he ran out should be his property in fee simple. In this way he became an extensive land-holder. When the Texas revolution against the Mexican government began, he became commander of an artillery company, or battery, and in the decisive battle of San Jacinto he contributed no little to that great victory. After peace was made, and Texas became independent, he was made a judge in the land, but did not live much longer. He is an illustration of the perils of a moral nature that surround a youth of the very brightest promise when thrown upon the world unsupported by early pious training and delivered over to his own resources.

My standing in college was always very respectable. My classical superiority and my good standing in other departments enabled me to win very respectable grades, although rather deficient in mathematics. I am constrained to record here that during my college course the University offered more limited advantages to the public than it had been able to present for two or three previous years, and it has never been so ill-sustained by a properly organized corps of instructors at any subsequent period of its history. I do not know the reason of this state of the case, unless there was a deficiency of funds in consequence of a greater call for them to meet other demands. My father was filling the office of President to universal acceptance. Dr. Church also was giving satisfaction as Professor of Mathematics and Astronomy, though, after he gave up this chair to accept the presidency on my father's resignation, I was informed that the course of mathematics taught at that time was limited compared with that of the more distinguished institutions. I know what the course was at the time of our class connection, and I have certain knowledge of the fact that

the course has been greatly extended since. We had no reason to complain of the course, and we accepted him as an able professor, and we had a wholesome dread of him as a disciplinarian. Just previous to the beginning of our Junior year, as we were about commencing the study of Natural Philosophy, the University had been in the enjoyment of the invaluable services of Dr. Henry Jackson as professor in this department; but he was very soon laid aside from all active service by a sudden attack (I think) of apoplexy. This chair then was turned over to his nephew, Professor James Jackson, previously in charge of Chemistry, etc. He taught Natural Philosophy in connection with the other branches of science, to which also there was added instruction in the French language. Toward the Major (as he was called) I always had entertained the kindest personal feelings of attachment, but my memory brings him up as rather an inefficient instructor. That he possessed learning to some extent, more, perhaps, than he was credited for, may have been true. Of that I was not competent to judge. I know, too, that he did not exert much influence over the student body. He was a man of literary taste, and had a good private library of the current literature of the day. But he was not personally popular among his pupils. He must have been considered a consistent Christian, however, as he was made an elder of the Athens church. In the year 1826 prospects seemed brightening, as the scholarly Rev. Stephen Olin, a distinguished Methodist divine from the North, was made Professor of Ethics and Metaphysics. We enjoyed the benefit of his instruction during our Sophomore and junior years; but his health failing, he resigned, and although he was reëlected and returned to the same chair, this occurred fully two years after our graduation. He was a charming teacher, and universally loved and esteemed. He was also a great power in the pulpit. He was a man of huge physical dimensions, and at times when

preaching, although by no means boisterous or vociferous, he would throw such nervous energy into his gestures, as he used his outstretched arms in his animation, that I have seen the pulpit shake under the pressure. The end of his history is, that he went North, after presiding over Randolph-Macon College in Virginia, and was made president of the Wesleyan University, in Middletown, Conn., in 1842, and there he ended his days. This was our Faculty as to president and professors, to which were added three tutors, Alvin Lathrop, a cipher as to influence and reputation, reminding one more of Irving's Ichabod Crane than anything else; Ephraim S. Hopping, a gentleman and a scholar, already alluded to in these pages, as well as in reminiscences of my father. I was strongly attached to him, both as a man and a teacher, and he was popular in college and among the citizens. He was succeeded by an elderly gentleman, by name B. B. Hopkins, who made no impression on my memory, except that he wore his hair in a queu, and occasionally yielded to the temptation of perpetrating verse-making, tinctured with an affectation of dry humor.

But in the next year, 1830, after the completion of our course, the trustees elected a full Professor of Ancient Languages, and the Faculty became fuller and more efficient as the years passed on, until at the present era it stands among the foremost of the colleges and universities of the land as regards facilities and advantages for acquiring a finished education.

I close what I have to say of my college life by a reference to an experience of my own in some of the events of that period, not only as a student, but as connected with outside influences. There are always certain exercises forming integral parts of the curriculum of all such institutions, and these exercises were prominent among the requirements in the University. They were the exercises of the students in elocution and composition. The students of the Junior,

Sophomore, and the Freshman Classes were required to declaim in the College Chapel at the assembly in the afternoon at prayers. Two students were appointed in alphabetical order to perform this duty every afternoon, for in that early day the students were all required to attend prayers twice during the day, at the hour of sunrise in the morning and at five o'clock in the afternoon. The performance of original composition was also attended to by the literary societies. The exercises of the annual commencement consisted of three days' elocutionary performances by the Sophomore, Junior, and Graduating Classes. The first day was devoted to a Sophomore prize declamation, in which the speakers delivered select orations of eminent men committed to memory. The Junior exhibition embraced specimens of elocution and composition, both, by orators elected by the two literary societies to represent these bodies. The Faculty always determined the number to be elected by the two societies. In case the relative number of members of the class belonging to each society was about equal, the number of speakers was also equal; but where there was a majority of the class who belonged to either body, then that society would be entitled to a majority of representative speakers. The decision of the Faculty in regard to the number assigned to each society was made at a period long enough for the speakers-elect to prepare for commencement. I recall the case as it related to my class when we were Juniors. As already stated, there were twenty-one members of the class, of which there were thirteen Demosthenians and eight Phi Kappas. The Faculty announced their decision that the former should elect seven speakers and the latter only three. This left me out, as I belonged to the Phi Kappa Society, and there were three of the class who had already won distinction as society orators. But the members of the Phi Kappa Society, by one of the leading members, represented to the Faculty that they felt injustice

had been meted out to them in assigning their number as three, and petitioned to be allowed one more. The Faculty assented, and a day was set by the society for holding an election for an additional speaker out of the remaining five Phi Kappa juniors. I had never felt before any peculiar interest personally in public speaking, but had always performed this college duty rather perfunctorily than otherwise; but when I learned that another speaker was to be elected by our society, for the first time in my life the ambition to gain any such position sprang up in my heart. To be sure, I used no electioneering arts that were improper, but I secured the opportunity of speaking at the evening assembly for prayers by exchanging places with a friend, as my time would not occur in regular order on the list in time for the election. I merely designed to exert my best powers of declamation, so as, if possible, to make a favorable impression upon my fellow-students. Accordingly, I took my place on the rostrum on the occasion, and, having previously selected an extract of Curran's celebrated speech, "In defence of Peter Finnerty," and practiced declaiming it most assiduously, and committed it perfectly, I felt at the time considerably gratified at my success. So, when the election came on, I was elected by a handsome majority. I must confess, however, that after the victory which I had striven so earnestly to secure had actually occurred, and I began to realize that I was to make my first appearance before a commencement audience, not in a selected piece, but with an original oration, I, for the moment, became overwhelmed by a consideration of the responsibility I had assumed, and would have been willing to dispense with all the honor. Nevertheless, I set myself to the work of preparation in good earnest, and by exhibition day I found myself ready to do my part to the best of my ability.

While in college I wrote four original speeches. This Junior oration was my first. It was the arrangement estab-

lished then that the Academic year was divided into three terms, viz.: The first term began about the first week in August, and ended about the middle of November, the long vacation taking place then and continuing until the middle of January; the second term began then and closed in April; the third term began about May 1st and closed August 1st. At the end of each term the senior class was expected to deliver original speeches. I in common with my classmates discharged this duty as a Senior three times. These three speeches, together with my Junior oration, make four original speeches delivered by me while in college. The subjects of these youthful efforts are recorded as follows: First (or Junior) speech, "Resolution essential to success"; second (or first Senior) speech, "It is better to be totally forgotten than to be remembered only to be execrated"; third (or second Senior) speech, "Equality of male and female intellect"; fourth (or Graduating) speech, "The inferiority of American literature." My first speech was delivered in 1828, when I was but sixteen years, four months, and three days old; my last when I was one year older.

CHAPTER IV.

Reflections.—Sketch of Athens Life After Graduation.—Removal to South Carolina, and Prospects of Beginning the Life of a Teacher.

THE question has often presented itself to my mind, Would it not have been better on the whole if I had just then, at my immature age, entered upon a college life, and, with the benefit of my experience acquired during the under-graduate course, might I not have made greater advances in knowledge, and would I not in all probability have been better prepared to enter upon the work of real life? I have often found myself ready to decide that it would have been a wise and profitable course for me; but as I now look back through my subsequent course of life, with the reflected light of the more than three-score and ten years of experience I have stored up, I am constrained to believe that all my steps have been wisely ordered to the accomplishment of the purposes of an infinitely wise God. I am now fully persuaded that, had I taken a second course, there is no rational ground to believe it would have effected any material change, or that it would have resulted in any signal advantage to myself or to those with whom I have been associated. True, I had not been as diligent as I should have been while in college, but I doubt much that a repetition of the course would have been attended with any increase of diligence. The life which, in God's providence, I have been directed to lead, the sphere in which I have been moving, and in which I have toiled mainly for nearly sixty years (I mean that of a teacher), has been attended with a constant stimulus, urging me to increased exertion,

and I have not been permitted to consult my ease or to indulge an indolent spirit. When I began to teach I was not called upon to lead those who were only just beginning their scholastic course; but the work before me, and into which I found myself compelled to enter, was to give instruction in the classics and mathematics. While, therefore, my proficiency in language made the teaching of this department comparatively pleasant and easy, yet I found that the kind of study and the amount of it that I was bound to pursue as a teacher was a very different matter compared with that expected and required of a college student; so, under this wholesome and abiding pressure, I gave my entire energies to the great work which was before me, promising success if diligently continued, and threatening disgrace and disaster if neglected or unfaithfully pursued. This stimulus would not have been brought to bear upon me in college, and I deem it a great blessing that I was made (somewhat reluctantly, I admit, at first) a teacher and began this work when only eighteen years of age. I mastered branches, as a teacher, with which I would never have become familiar had I been influenced only by the usages of colleges. But I am anticipating.

In the days just then passing Athens was the centre of attraction to me, very far above any place on earth. Every feature in the landscape was full of charm to me. Even the old red-clay hills, the granite bluffs of the little winding river Oconee, the artificial water-fall made by the mill-dam, the college campus, with its fine old oaks, the familiar dwellings and cultivated lawns and flower-beds, the buildings, libraries, and other appointments of the old University, furnished to my untravelled mind an exhaustless supply of mental aliment that could hardly be surpassed. Then there were the walks and rides I often enjoyed with friends in the environs of the town and the thousand attendant associations of the place, which cannot be enumerated, all

contributing to make it a dear and cherished home of my youth. But the time was hastening on apace when I was to leave this spot so dear to my heart. When I did leave it afterwards, forming new homes in various parts of the world, I found two things to follow in my experience: 1. Although I became attached to other spots, yet none such attachments as those to Athens were ever formed. 2. Athens itself lost afterwards its charm for me. I account for this on two principles: First, The days of my youth spent there were free from care and anxiety. There were others who freed me from all the responsibility of life. I had nothing to interfere with my enjoyments, and so it was a sort of romantic, poetical life; unreal, I admit, yet I enjoyed it. Then I owed much to the associations and the friends of my boyhood at that period. On a visit to Athens, many years after, I found this impressed upon me (although I had known it before), that nothing stands still in this world. The little town had become a city. City customs had ensued. Boys and girls whom I had known and loved had removed from the old town, or, if they still remained, had become changed into busy, thoughtful heads of families, merchants, lawyers, physicians, politicians, mothers, and fathers, with new cares pressing upon them, the old romance of life gone forever, besides the fact that a multitude of strange faces met me on the streets, on the campus, and in all the thoroughfares. So I concluded that my Athens was "clean gone forever!" Henceforward, as to local attachments, I have felt like a stranger and a pilgrim on earth. I have had homes, happy homes, elsewhere and in after times; for with me it is true that

"'Tis home where'er the heart is;"

yet, I have known of no such local attachments at any place as those existing towards the Athens of 1819–'29.

My mode of life during the six months or more after my graduation, until my removal to South Carolina, was rather

desultory and inactive. I read some history; I visited occasionally; made a trip or two to Willington on business, and was more or less unemployed. The subject of my future occupation in connection with the business of making a living, or exerting useful influence, had not presented itself to me for serious consideration. I remember that, at one time in my youth, there was an impression prevalent in our family,—and I shared in this impression to some extent,—that I was to be a preacher. It was but a transient impression, however, and I have no doubt that, in the view of my parents, "the wish was father to the thought," and I think it was soon laid aside and abandoned by them all; I know it passed away from my mind, nor did it return for long years afterwards.

It was once suggested to me by one of my brothers that I should study law. But that profession offered to me no attractions at all, and the suggestion made no impression whatever on my mind. I am thankful now that I never had inclination in that direction. About this time I recall an occurrence, that some might consider merely *casual*, and so it seemed *then* to me. It, however, I have *since* thought, settled the question of my destination in part it least. My teacher, Mr. Dobbins, who was also my first cousin, and my eldest brother, James (both professional teachers), were visiting at my father's, during my unemployed time after graduation, and in the course of the conversation the question was asked by one of the visitors, addressed to my father: "What are you going to make of John?" To which he promptly replied: "A teacher." They both gave the opinion that he "would do better to put me to the plough," (*i. e.*) make a farmer of me. But he was immovable. The ground of their expressed opinion, as well as I recall it, was that the management of boys in that age had become a matter of very great difficulty. My father said nothing more to me on the subject at that time, but he had it all

arranged in his own mind, and it was decided, not only that I was to be teacher, but the place of my first efforts in that line was even then fixed, no doubt. It became known in some way that teaching would be my occupation, and an application came for my services from an insignificant little place, called Mallorysville, on the direct route from Athens to Willington. It was a very small, miserable place, more famed for being a resort for those who were fond of the saloon than for anything. To this place I was invited to go and take charge of the town-school, with a salary of four hundred dollars and board as my compensation. But my father strenuously objected to the plan, and I think wisely. His reasons for his decision were my youthful age, and the undesirableness of the society.

The world moved on, time passed away in the usual monotonous manner until February, 1830, when, all needed preparations having been made, leave-taking public and private having occurred, the family, consisting of my father, mother, younger sister, brother William and his newly-married wife (*née* Miss Hilliard), with myself, left Athens, and in due course of time were all domiciled once more upon the soil that we had abandoned ten years previously, and which gave the most of us birth.

CHAPTER V.

First School.—Death of my Mother.—Country Life.—A College Associate.—My Habits.

ON our settlement once more at old Willington, after our long exile from its familiar scenes, the first object before us was to engage in some occupation adapted to our present circumstances and surroundings, each in his own specialty. My father arranged his preaching appointments at Willington and Rocky River; he superintended and directed the buildings, and prepared to carry on his farming operations, making the needed efforts to ensure a comfortable living. My brother William, who, in his filial devotion to his mother, had given up a prospect of lucrative practice of his profession in Athens, in order to attend her in her last illness and mitigate her sufferings as far as possible, was just beginning to establish himself as a physician in the neighborhood. I, too, was now to assume the office of a teacher for the first time, and accordingly on Monday morning, March 1, 1830, I made my debut as a pedagogue. The room used for the purposes of the school had been once occupied as a store, and afterwards as the office of a physician of the olden time of Willington, who had long passed away. It was in rather a dilapidated condition, but was soon put in condition to answer the purpose of a school-room. It was located immediately on the great market road to Augusta, Ga.

Here I began a career which, with a short interval, I have prosecuted as my main life-work during a period of more than half a century. Better and more convenient arrangements for the school-work were provided in due course of time, and in a few years after, a respectable house was

erected at another place in the neighborhood, as the number of students in attendance began to increase and the reputation of the school was extended. During the first year of its existence the number of students was not large, and but few much advanced. I remember only one, however, who was ignorant of the first principles of English. He was a bright little fellow, by name James Clay, and about him I have always remembered two things; 1, He was the only pupil whom I ever taught to read. 2, He was among the very best *readers* I have ever known. Of the rest, there were three young men, all my seniors in age, and one of them seven years older than myself. The three were engaged in the higher branches of study, and their names were respectively, James F. Gibert, David Willard, and Williams Truwitt. The first of these I prepared for the University of Georgia, where he was graduated in the class of 1834. Subsequently he finished his Theological course of study at the Columbia Seminary, and filled the pulpit of the Lebanon Church, near Abbeville, S. C., for many years with great acceptance and usefulness, and there he ended his life of toil in the ministry only a few years since. David Willard, prepared himself to be a teacher, and, after spending some time with me, he went West and taught many years there, nor did I hear of him for ten years. About the year 1842, when I had established a High-school in Eastern Mississippi, as I was engaged in teaching, he entered the room, and announced himself as David Willard, my former pupil at Willington. He had grown quite gray, in old bachelorhood, and proposed to me to become a pupil of mine again. After giving an outline of his history from the period of our separation, he stated that he had lost several good schools by reason of his ignorance of Theoretical and Practical Surveying, and that the object of his present visit was to get from me the necessary instruction in that department. He remained with me for some time, and as that subject was

one I had been teaching, and in which I then had a class of students, he entered the school and soon mastered the subject, and "went on his way rejcicing." The third of these students of my first school was Williams Truwitt, who became a merchant, and sctttled in Mobile, where I met him once at least, if not more than once. I have lost sight and knowledge of him.

If I mistake not as to the time, it was in the year 1831 that I had three very small boys, who came over from Lincoln County, Ga., just beyond the Savannah River, whose names were David Remson, Jackson Curry, and Jabez L. M. Curry. Of the history of the first of these I have no knowledge; he was a fine manly orderly boy at school. The second was graduated at Athens, Ga., in the Class of 1842, and died in the service of the Confederate States. The third is the distinguished Jabez Lamar Monroe Curry, who was graduated also at Athens in the Class of 1843, and has filled with such phenomenal success many of the highest and most responsible positions in the United States.

I must be permitted just here to be somewhat personal, without being chargeable with egotism. I have already stated in a preceding chapter that I passed through college with a respectable standing as a student, and I have tried to show that the kind of application expected and demanded of a teacher was of a character totally differing in degree from that which might be admitted in the case of a college student. Of myself, I may say that I never had known what genuine, close application to study was until I began to teach. I found in myself a principle at the very outset which has acted upon me throughout my whole teaching life as a stimulus to study. It was a dread of failure in the discharge of the functions of a teacher. This led to the formation of a resolution, which never lost its power over me, viz.: that I never should appear before a class in reci-

tation without having thoroughly mastered the subject beforehand. From this resolution it has been my unvarying purpose never to depart. I commend the practice to all who undertake the great responsibility of training the young mentally, as well as morally. I add the word *morally* because of my deep conviction that the moral training of youth is inseparably connected with the mental instruction imparted. Furthermore, the moral character of the teacher, as he appears before his pupils day by day, is one of the most potent elements in the establishment of a proper influence over them. This is what has been understood by the term "unconscious tuition." A teacher, therefore, who so far ignores his obligations as to allow himself to be found guilty of ignorance of the subject he professes to teach is thereby (by example) encouraging deception, or the attempt to deceive, and exposing himself to deserved contempt of his pupils. As a general fact, no critics are so prompt and correct in detecting such unworthy pretensions as those who are in the attitude of learners. A true teacher, of course, would prefer the reputation of being upright and honest to that of learning, and if he has committed an error in his instructions, will be the first to acknowledge it and to correct it. But the safer plan to be adopted is always to prepare himself thoroughly and minutely on every detail of the subject of instruction, so as to avoid the charge of professing to teach that of which he is ignorant. Perhaps this habit, in my case, might have influenced me to thorough preliminary preparation in any other profession. But I am conscious that it has exerted a wholesome influence over me all through my career as a teacher, and that in this way I have been enabled to do better work, and that I have accomplished a greater amount of good for myself and for others, than I could have done in any other department of human effort.

But to resume my story, about a month after I had com-

menced my labors as a teacher, I was awakened one morning very early by a servant with the intelligence that my mother had been violently attacked with one of the paroxysms of her disease, and was worse than usual. It was the morning of the Sabbath, April 4th, 1830, a bright and lovely spring day. When I entered her room she was walking about, leaning upon my father's arm, for such was her bodily agony that she could not recline upon the bed. All the absent members of the family had arrived except one, and were present to witness her dying struggle. She was in constant pain, and could speak little and only in ejaculatory prayer. She continued to walk the floor without our being able to relieve her in the least, until at last she became exhausted and was placed upon her bed. Yet even here such were her unutterable tortures that it was with difficulty she could be kept in bed by two of us, and, after at least eight hours of mortal agony, she sank back and died in my arms. She was about fifty-nine years of age. She was the daughter of Jesse Pleasants, of Powhatan county, Va., and there she was born. This was my first great sorrow. My father was not demonstrative to his children, but he doubtless felt a warm affection for them all. But none of us ever doubted the deep and absorbing tenderness of her love for us. Oh, how *dark* did the world appear to me on that *bright* Sabbath day! Gloom for the time settled down upon the future, and I felt as I had never felt *before*, but as I have often felt *since*, that life's charm for me was fled forever! We buried her in the grand and beautiful old oak grove around the church, and there we left her to sleep in Jesus till the resurrection morn. She lived to see all her children grown and three of them married. During her married life no death had occurred in her immediate family. Soon after her death there was a general dispersion of the family. Dr. William W. Waddel, the third son, having accomplished the end for which he

had accompanied the family to Willington, viz., to attend upon our mother as long as she required his attention, felt, under the circumstances, that it was no longer obligatory on him to sacrifice what he believed to be his professional interests by burying himself in the country in a region already supplied with physicians. He returned to Athens and made that his home. My sister Mary Anna accompanied him, and spent some time with his family and other friends. My elder sister returned to her home in South Georgia. My brother, Rev. I. W. Waddel, returned to his field of labor in Georgia. My father was absent from home a great deal of the time. I was left alone, with no white person to break the solitude, except the housekeeper and her son, a boy of nine or ten years of age. It was a lonely sort of life to which I was consigned, and my only resource, when not employed in teaching or studying, was in receiving and answering letters from my friends and classmates abroad.

I think it was during this year that a college friend, George McDuffie Vance, between whom and myself quite an intimacy had grown up at Athens, came and took up his abode in the neighborhood. He was a nephew of Hon. George McDuffie, and came to reside with his uncle at Cherry Hill, his beautiful country seat, which was only a mile distant from my father's residence. Unfortunately, during our college course, a society collision had occurred between us, and we had not spoken, nor had we held intercourse with each other, for about two years previous to his time of arrival. The embarrassment into which we were thrown by a constant liability of meeting, and yet forbidden by pride to exchange words even of social courtesy, induced in us the consideration of a more rational method of living. Whether or not I should ever have made the initiative of a reconciliation I do not know. It would have reflected no discredit upon me at all as I now review the matter, but as

I remember the origin of the case, I was not the aggressor. Still not a vestige of ill-feeling or enmity had ever been cherished by myself toward him. Time is a gentle and soothing healer of wounds inflicted in such contests. Accordingly, my surprise was a very agreeable one when one day, as I sat in my school-room, a servant rode up and handed me a note from George to this effect:

"DEAR SIR: We are placed in an awkward position relative to each other, living in the same neighborhood, and constantly thrown together without intercourse. I assure you that I have never suffered my feelings to become embittered towards you in any degree. If, therefore, you are willing to 'bury the hatchet,' and to meet me as a friend, I should be glad to have you signify it by a note.

GEORGE M. VANCE."

Of course, I gladly acceded to this frank and gentlemanly proposition, and we continued, ever afterwards, the most sincere friends, and his society tended very materially to the mitigation of my loneliness.

My first year's income amounted to something above $300; but really I needed little, as I paid no board expenses, living as I did at home. At this period of my life I was free from aspirations for great things; I gave no thought to any greater position than was then assigned me, supposing that there was none such in reserve for me in the future. Perhaps I may best describe my condition of mind as one of quiescence. My morals were good. I taught five days in the week, studied hard at night, sometimes courted the Muses, visited to some extent; rode to the post-office occasionally, attended preaching, without receiving the impression from it that was due; admired the girls without falling in love with them, and so closed the year 1830, quietly and contentedly, if not profitably.

CHAPTER VI.

My Feelings and Views on the Subject of Religion.—My Father's Preaching, and my Views of it at that Time.—Some Notice of Mr. McDuffie and Others of his Neighbors.

IT is of some interest doubtless to my friends to know something of my personal views and feelings upon the all-important subject of religion. I had reached my nineteenth year; I was known to be a moral young man; had been religiously trained from my childhood; and attended all the services of religious worship within my reach. But I had never made a public profession of religion, and yet I do not think that I could be called a hardened sinner, and I am sure I was not habitually "walking in the counsel of the ungodly;" I never used profane language; I never was intoxicated with ardent spirits; nor was I a brawler, or fond of controversy, either mental or physical; nor did I ever descend to the lower deeps of vice. Yet I look back with shame, and regret the facts of my history and character as they then existed. In the midst of all the precious opportunities and advantages by which I had been surrounded during all my previous life, the truth is that I was a careless and indifferent sinner, nor do I believe that I had ever been very seriously impressed upon the subject of religion. I remember that, during my childhood, I had a dream, repeated more than once, that the judgment-day had come. This resulted, I think, from a catechetical exercise conducted by my father every Sabbath evening, in which all the children of the family and servants were taught a simple system of divine truth, the closing questions and answers of which were as follows:

"QUES. When will Jesus Christ come again?"

"ANS. At the last day."

"QUES. What will He come for?"

"ANS. To judge the world."

"QUES. Who will be judged?"

"ANS. Men and devils."

"QUES. Who will be on His right hand?"

"ANS. The righteous."

"QUES. Who will be placed on His left hand?"

"ANS. The wicked."

"QUES. What will He say to the righteous?"

"ANS. Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world."

"QUES. What will He say to the wicked?"

"ANS. Depart, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels."

My dream presented a view of this awful scene: the person of the Lord Jesus, sitting upon the clouds, with outstretched arms, with a long line of persons on each hand! But in every repetition of the dream, I was condemned to the left hand, to my unspeakable terror. But though this feeling and impression was very dreadful for a time, it was soon banished, and did not prevent me from the usual enjoyments of careless childhood. I call to mind also the fact, that during my college life, when there occurred a meeting of more than ordinary interest in the community of Athens, and among the students, under the preaching of such men of God as Rev. J. C. Stiles, Rev. S. S. Davis, and Rev. A. H. Webster, I went with others to the front seat in the chapel where the services were conducted, and signified in this way my desire to be prayed for by the people of God. But I was then not very deeply moved, or under conviction, as I have no recollection of going forward again. Another reminiscence comes up, connected with this subject which will

show my indifference to the matter of personal religion more clearly still. Some time after these meetings had closed, I was riding with my father out to a country church near Athens, known by the name of "Sandy Creek," where he sometimes preached, and he said to me among other things, that he had requested Rev. J. C. Stiles to have a private conversation with me on the subject of religion, and that he had reported the result of that interview in these words, "He is bullet-proof!"

The Doctor may have used language somewhat overwrought, as his method of expression was always vigorous; but all he meant by it was that he had made no impression on me that he could perceive. He did, however, reach me to a greater extent than he supposed. I felt the effect of his conference, though it passed away for the time being, and the consideration of my spiritual state relapsed into quiet and untroubled indifference again, and I continued in the postponement of this subject for many years after. My father, on the occasion referred to, made no comment upon the case, save to express his surprise and deep sorrow when the report was made to him of the result of the interview. So it passed. It may be here stated, by way of anticipation, that this noble and godly minister of Jesus Christ, Dr. Stiles, lived to meet me long years after that fruitless interview, as a minister of the blessed gospel which I then declined in my folly to embrace.

I have not given a full statement of some of the characteristics of my father's style of preaching, and it may as well be given here. I attended his preaching during this period of my life, when I was more competent to judge of such subjects than I had ever been previously. He was undoubtedly a specimen of the old school of divines. He never wrote out his sermons in full. As I have stated in his life, he used skeletons entirely. But he was decidedly opposed to using a manuscript in the pulpit, and always spoke with

disapproval of the practice. I have never known any one who formed and aimed at a more elevated standard of the excellency of the Christian ministry than he did. I know also that he never for a moment entertained the thought that he, in his simple and unpretending methods, was any worthy illustration of his own ideal. The prominent characteristics of his preaching were simplicity, earnestness, directness, and fidelity in presenting divine truth. He was always animated in his delivery, and seldom allowed himself less than an hour for a sermon. His systematic division of his discourses, into the several topics which he deemed necessary fully to develop the meaning of his text, led to a ridiculous caricature of his style by heedless and inattentive listeners among the waggish students of the University during his Presidency. As he was in the habit of dividing the discourse into at least three parts, and these into subdivisions as was needful, he always used for the sake of perspicuity such words as "*once more*," or, "*again*," and having exhausted a particular topic he used the word "*finally*." Of course he passed through the remaining heads or divisions in a similar method. The boys, therefore, disappointed that, after using the word "finally," he still continued to preach on, wrote in large letters over the pulpit in the College Chapel, where he was in the habit of preaching, "*I do not wish to be tedious; once more, finally, and again!*"

He was often a listener himself, and to show the force of that habit of his teaching, of prompting a student who seemed at a loss for a word, I mention an incident that I witnessed, occurring on occasion of an afternoon service in the chapel. An excellent Methodist minister was preaching, and as he designed at a certain point in the sermon to quote our Saviour's denunciation of the cities wherein his mighty works had been done, he began by the expression of the first part, "Woe unto thee;" but there the next word

seemed to have been forgotten, and he came to a full pause. The omission was immediately supplied by my father, who in his deep voice uttered the word, "Chorazin," relieved the preacher, and he continued the discourse without farther interruption. The effect was somewhat startling, but created no disturbance or disorder in the audience whatever.

His style was strictly didactic, without flowers or rhetorical display, using only the pure Anglo-Saxon, of which he was a master, and his illustrations were always plain and striking. To such auditors as loved exciting, sensational preaching he was not likely to be attractive; yet his preaching always was full of the marrow of the gospel, and plain, devout Christian worshippers prized it as a precious privilege to sit under his ministry. His custom at the country church of Willington was to preach two sermons on the Sabbath during the summer season, with a suitable interval between the two discourses. Not infrequently the two were on the same subject, the afternoon sermon concluding the discussion. One remark may be added: Such preaching was eminently fitted to the instruction and building up of his people, or any church which had his services as a preacher. He was an Old School Presbyterian, thorough and unmistakable. He, at a very early period, discerned the signs of corruption in the church which grew out of the plan of union of 1801, and I well remember how he was annoyed by the periodical arrival by mail of a pamphlet called *The Home Missionary*, edited by Absalom Peters, and *then* considered the organ of the New-School party.

He was sound, judicious, and uncompromising in his orthodoxy, and was one of the prominent landmarks of Calvinistic theology in those days. If any reader should be curious to know why a Presbyterian preacher so widely known as he was holds no historical position among the men who were prominent in the great division of the church of the year 1837, it may be sufficient to state the fact that it

was just at that juncture that, by the providence of the divine Being who rules in the church and the world, he was brought into that state of bodily and mental weakness which ended his life work and withdrew him from all participation in public enterprise.

I have said that my father's residence was within a short distance of the home of Hon. George McDuffie. This made it the custom and the pleasure of this great man to attend on the services of the Willington church. He was always present, when at home, during the first sermon, but invariably took his departure after that. Mr. McDuffie was never a member of any church, so far as I have ever heard. He was a very remarkable man. In common with many of our most eminent citizens, he was of very humble origin. The following statement is in substance, but somewhat abridged, the same with that found on pages 44–48 of a monograph by Mr. C. Meriwether, of Johns Hopkins University, furnished by him to the Bureau of Education, Department of the Interior. It is, in the form here given by me, simply a condensed extract "from an unpublished eulogy upon Mr. McDuffie, by the late Hon. Armistead Burt, of Abbeville, S. C.":

He received the elementary course of education—reading, writing, and arithmetic—sufficiently to qualify him to be a merchant's clerk in a country store, and he was employed in that capacity by a Mr. Hayes, whose place of business was in Columbia county, Ga., some thirty miles from Augusta. He soon developed capacity for a larger business, and, on the recommendation of Mr. Hayes, he obtained a situation as clerk in the house of Calhoun & Wilson, in Augusta. Mr. Calhoun was a brother of the great statesman, John C. Calhoun, and Mr. William Calhoun was another brother, who was a planter on the Savannah river, near Dr. Waddel's academy at Willington. The latter having business frequently in Augusta, saw Mr. McDuffie in the family of his brother James, and being "prepossessed by his appearance,

and favorably impressed by the accounts given of him by Mr. James Calhoun, Mr. William Calhoun took him, in 1810, to his home, when he entered the Academy, in the twentieth year of his age. He remained a student of Dr. Waddel's Academy until December, 1811, and was admitted into the Junior Class of the South Carolina College, then under the presidency of the eminent Dr. Maxcy. He was graduated in 1813, "not only with the first honors of his class, but with a reputation that might have satisfied the aspirations of genius and the hopes of toil." He rose rapidly at the bar, and was elected to Congress early in his career, where he achieved for himself in a very short time a reputation as a great orator and national statesman. His oratory was impressive, and, when glowing with his theme, he was vehement. In his argumentation he was profound and logical; in debate, and before a popular audience during an exciting canvass upon some of the "burning questions" and issues of the day, such as the tariff and the doctrine of nullification, he was often terribly severe in his denunciations when thoroughly aroused. He was regarded as the peer of William C. Preston and Hugh S. Legaré, and it has been said that "the annals of history, ancient or modern, have no record of three men so endowed with the divine gift of eloquence in any age or country at the same time and in the same locality on the stage of life."

The great theme which absorbed the attention of the whole country, North and South, was the tariff, and in the discussion of it Mr. McDuffie set himself with all his powers against it. He was one of the champions of State rights, of the Calhoun school, and when the State passed the ordinance of nullification, he was one of the leaders in that great political conflict. Having been elected Governor of South Carolina, he turned his attention to the study of military science, was made major-general, and was instrumental in diffusing a great deal of knowledge, and inspiring a great

degree of spirit into the general mass of the people. Mr. McDuffie was engaged in three duels with Col. Cumming, of Augusta, Ga., the grounds of which I never knew. In one of these encounters, he received his adversary's ball in his hip, which was never extracted. He lost his health entirely, and became almost helpless. I have been told by Dr. Longstreet, the eminent judge, who presided over the University of Mississippi with eminent success, and afterwards over the South Carolina College, and who had been a fellow-student with Mr. McDuffie at Willington, that he paid Mr. McDuffie a visit at his residence, Cherry Hill, in his last feeble days, and left him with the hope that he was a Christian. Mr. McDuffie was married to Miss Singleton, of the High Hills of Santee, who died shortly after marriage, leaving a daughter, who was afterwards married to Gen. Wade Hampton, and died. This is, as nearly as I can secure the facts, a brief sketch of the great orator's life. Others of the regular attendants upon my father's preaching were two men of wealth, as the term wealth was at that time applied, *i. e.*, they were owners of large cotton plantations and were large slave-holders. These were Wm. Calhoun, Esq., and Gen. William A. Bull. Of the first gentleman I have a distinct recollection in my boyhood as being somewhat advanced in life, and that he lived to be quite an old man. He was the oldest brother of John C. Calhoun, and the brother of my father's first wife. It has always been a source of gratification to us all, that there existed during my father's life a most cordial and uninterrupted social intercourse and friendship between the Calhoun family and our family. This was the case also with his and their descendants as long as they continued to reside near each other. The gentleman just referred to, Mr. Wm. Calhoun, was by no means a professing Christian, and made no pretensions of that kind. Yet he was a friend of my father, and attended his preaching, was absorbed in his farm or planting interests, made money, raised a large family, and

died in old age. The other gentleman, Gen. Bull, was an elderly gentleman, never married, grew rich by cotton-planting, was a member of the South Carolina Legislature, and a very prominent politician, an old pupil of the Willington Academy, a friend and admirer of my father, and like Mr. Calhoun and Mr. McDuffie, was not a member of the church, but a regular attendant on his preaching. The story of the closing of his life is full of sadness in the review. Without descending to particulars, it is sufficient to record that he was murdered by some of his negroes.

He was the son of a most devoted Christian mother, who was an intimate friend of my parents, and an earnest member of the Willington church. His only brother, who survived him, was an elder of that church, as far back as my recollection carries me, and though eccentric, was devotedly pious. These have all passed away, and none survive now to bear their name in the Willington settlement. The name of Calhoun still lingers on the list of citizens in other and distant regions of our country, but neither at Willington nor elsewhere, can there be found one who bears the name and descent of McDuffie or of Bull.

The congregation was made up of a highly respectable and intelligent class, who, with their children and grandchildren, were the genuine descendants of the original Huguenots who escaped from France in 1763, and settled in Abbeville district in 1764, and in the congregation was a large proportion of Scotch-Irish people, who came there, many of them, from Charleston. A more substantial population, and one more thoroughly imbued with the true principles of civil and religious freedom, and more devoted friends of Christian education, could not be readily met with in the State. It was in the midst of such a community that my father spent many of his years most fruitful of beneficial results as a teacher and preacher, and here his own children, and those of many of his neighbors, were moulded and trained for this life and for eternity.

CHAPTER VII.

Some Circumstances Connected with my First Courtship and Marriage.

THE story of my life has now reached that point which, in most young men, is to be regarded as of rather critical interest. I mean the period when the first emotions of the heart are awakened toward the gentler sex. There were very few young ladies in the neighborhood at the time of my home-life there, from 1830 to 1832. But there were four with whom I was on social terms, and who were all entitled to high respect and esteem for their excellent qualities. Miss Mary Rogers and Miss Mary E. Moragné were both descended directly from the Huguenots, while Miss Catherine Noble and Miss Martha A. Robertson were of Scotch-Irish descent. With all these I was on terms of intimate friendship, and admired in them what constituted the peculiar attraction of each. With regard to Miss Robertson, the last mentioned of the group, she was a school-girl of fifteen years of age when I formed her acquaintance. She was the youngest child of Major George Robertson, who, like many other gentlemen of the lower country and residents of Charleston, had retired from the business of the city and engaged in the occupation of planting, purchasing a fine body of bottom-land on the Savannah river, within a few miles of Willington. He was, according to tradition, the beau ideal of a perfect gentleman of the old school, a class of men who were more frequently found among Charlestonians than among those of any other region of country or city. I must be pardoned for the assertion that I have never known the old-time Charleston gentleman surpassed

in all the elements of chivalric and elevated honor. Major Robertson was regarded as one of the ornaments of the Willington community during his life, and though he never made a public profession of religion, or connected himself with the church, yet he was a strong supporter and a regular attendant upon my father's preaching, with his family, and was highly exemplary in his life and character. He died of bilious fever in 1817. On his dying-bed my father visited him, and hopes were entertained that he died in peace.

But to the young lady herself I return, and have only to say, without needless record of matters personal and private, that altogether, to my view she was possessed of all those nameless attractions, both of mind and person, that were well calculated to win my admiration and esteem, and which grew to absorbing affection for her. She was bright, but very timid and shrinking. She was well educated, her instructor being a gentleman of high reputation as a scholar and teacher, Rev. Wm. B. Johnson, of the Baptist Church, who taught in Edgefield a school for young ladies. So as time passed on I found that my feelings toward her were becoming more earnest than I had ever before experienced, and I resolved to make them known to her at some suitable opportunity. It is very true that I was quite young to be thinking about a wife, but nevertheless I was very earnest in the matter. It may be remarked as some palliation of my youthful indiscretion that I had been set to work in the serious business of life as truly as though I had attained to the legal age of citizenship, and I suppose my views of other matters kept pace with my position in the world. "The course" of my love, just as the poet testifies of other similar matters, did not "run smooth."

It is entirely unnecessary that I should dwell minutely upon the details connected with the prosecution of my suit, and the happy consummation. In the view of many who

might read such statements, such matters are regarded as partaking too much of the sacred in their nature to be dwelt upon in such a record as this. That there were difficulties to be overcome in the progress of this affair may be admitted, but their record is not called for at this period, when most of those who were connected with them have passed away, and the survivors have that knowledge of them that needs no such record. I, in due time, enjoyed a favorable opportunity of communicating to Miss Robertson my proposal, which afterwards was accepted with a condition annexed, viz., that the full consummation of our engagement should be delayed for four years. Soon after her mother and herself paid a visit to her eldest sister, who had been married and settled in Green County, Ala., some time previous to this event. They had been absent some months, when it became a matter of importance for me to take a trip westward, and I conceived the idea of making a visit to her, and endeavoring to prevail upon her to shorten the period of our engagement. This I was very well assured would be a task not of easy accomplishment, yet I entered upon it with a determination to use all lawful arguments to ensure success. I reached my destination after a rather tedious and fatiguing travel of four hundred miles, by private conveyance, early in November. I was not by any means hopeless of success in my enterprise, as the families "on both sides of the house" were known to approve our proposed union, and my father and all my friends were prepared to receive her with open arms of welcome. After presenting every available argument it pleased a kind Providence to influence her to consent to my proposition, and to give me success in the great object of my mission. On the 27th day of November, 1832, at the residence of R. G. Quarles (her brother-in-law and her guardian), we were united in marriage, the ceremony being performed by Rev. John H. Gray (the husband of her other sister), she being in the

seventeenth year of her age and I in my twenty-first. We left soon after this and returned to South Carolina, arriving at Willington, which was destined to be our home, on or near the 25th December, 1832.

CHAPTER VIII.

INCIDENTS PUBLIC AND PRIVATE DURING 1832–'33.—SKETCH OF J. C. CALHOUN.—NULLIFICATION.

ON my return, I resumed work in the school in connection with my older brother, James P. Waddel, who for a term of years having been rector of the Richmond Academy, in Augusta, Ga., had resigned that position and removed to Willington. The school was conducted under our joint control, and my home was happily and comfortably fixed in my father's house for the time being. One of the first things that met my view on reaching home from Alabama was the existence and excitement of a protracted meeting then in progress in the church and congregation, under the conduct of the eminent revivalist, Rev. Dr. Daniel Baker. On this occasion he did not fail to approach me personally on the subject of my soul's salvation. I listened to him quietly without being moved or seriously impressed, just as had been the case in my experience on all similar previous occasions. In reviewing these incidents in my history, and in recalling the habit of postponing the consideration of personal religion which at that time characterized me, I know very well that it was not the result of a want of the conviction of my judgment as to the vast importance of the subject. I had not then, nor ever in my life, the slightest tendency to indulge in skeptical infidelity; but the habit grew out of my quiet preference for the passing enjoyments of the world and a false (though common) persuasion that to become a Christian would interfere with those enjoyments. I was "blind and in the dark"; but the long-suffering patience and forbearing love of God still tolerated me, and in

His own good time I became a subject of His converting grace. This, however, was brought about under peculiar circumstances, the narrative of which will be postponed to a future period

The patronage of the Willington Academy not presenting an inviting prospect of furnishing an income for the support of myself and my brother, it occurred to me that, as he had a family to provide for, I would consult his interest and my own by withdrawing from the school and seeking another field of labor. Accordingly, in the month of March, in company with my brother-in-law, Rev. John H. Gray, who (on account of some apprehensions of pulmonary disease) had been induced to visit Florida, I resolved to go to that country and investigate the prospect that might be offered for the settlement of a teacher. We traveled on horseback, were absent five or six weeks, during which we endured divers hardships, met with various "perils by flood and field," saw a good deal of poor land, spent some money, and, having discovered no inviting place for future operations, we retraced our steps, satisfied (or rather disgusted) with what we had seen of Florida. It must be remarked that this tour of inspection occurred just fifty-eight years ago, long before the land of flowers and oranges had reached that degree of attractiveness since attained, making it the winter resort of many thousands of the citizens of more northern latitudes and inducing many to establish there permanent and delightful homes for life. We claim to be pardoned for the unlovely sketch above drawn upon the ground that our verdict was premature.

I remained at Willington a few weeks, and about the first of May I removed to Athens, Ga., and was made Principal of the Grammar School, now dissociated from the University, and placed upon a footing of independence, finding myself a teacher in the very building (removed from the campus, in which I had been a pupil in my boyhood. My

residence there was of only six months' duration. The prospect of success was not encouraging and the income seemed inadequate to meet expenses. Moreover, the Athens of that day wore an entirely different aspect to me from that of four years previous; so that my time there was irksome, and after this brief experiment I abandoned the place and returned to Willington. With the exception of about one year's assistance rendered to my brother in his school in 1834, I taught no more for a number of years.

Having made a purchase of a very fine tract of land a few miles east of Willington, and having built a neat cottage upon it, I formed the determination to devote my time and attention for my remaining days to the business of farming. Accordingly, in the early spring of 1835, taking my wife and infant boy, with my mother-in-law, Mrs. Collier (who had now decided, on earnest solicitations from us, to live with us), I entered for the first time and took possession of a home of my own, to which we gave the name Elmwood.

It will doubtless add to the interest of this narrative, that I digress somewhat in order to record some account of a state of things in public affairs which was of absorbing and overwhelming importance to the people of the whole country, and especially to South Carolina. The attention of the people was deeply attracted to the subject in 1828, during my college course, while residing in the State of Georgia, and the resulting excitement grew in its intensity until 1833. I allude to the political war in relation to the Tariff Act, which war reached its consummation in the Ordinance of Nullification, and was settled by the compromise of 1833. An act had been passed by Congress in 1816 laying a tariff on imports; but as it was designed more for revenue than for protection, it created little, if any, opposition. In 1828, the dissension arose on account of the passage, by a majority in Congress, of an offensive tariff bill, which, it was contended by the Southern statesmen, operated injuriously to

the interests of the South. I remember very well the effect produced (not only in South Carolina, but in Georgia as well), by the proceedings of Congress in 1828. The tariff on the imported goods from England was fixed at an amount so high that English cotton fabrics particularly were virtually almost excluded. The object of this legislation was to force our people to buy the goods of this kind from Northern manufacturers. But the goods of English manufacturers were of a superior quality, and but for this tariff, could be sold to consumers at a lower price than those of this country. There were very few, if any, cotton factories in the South, and hence the Southern people must needs trade with the North, or buy the English goods at ruinous prices. After a long series of legislative acts of this kind, by the Congress of the United States, the patience of the Southern people was well-nigh exhausted, as these aggressive measures had been in progress for many years, to the detriment of the agricultural interests of the people of the South. Every consideration connected with these interests made it plain that we should trade with the English, as we raised the cotton needed by them, and they could manufacture better fabrics, and sell them at reduced prices. This the Congressional majority, in the interest of the Northern manufacturers, determined if possible to prevent; hence the obnoxious legislation to which reference is made. The first demonstration of popular feeling was the adoption of resolutions in many parts of the South, in self-defence, to use no goods of Northern manufacture, but to use clothing spun and woven in the old fashioned way, by hand or the spinning wheel, and loom. The Trustees, Faculty, and students, and many of the visitors at the University Commencement of that year, doffed their broad-cloth, and presented themselves in the University Chapel clad in homespun suits of domestic manufacture, and great enthusiasm prevailed. The amount of which the Southern people felt themselves

robbed was comparatively trivial, and the statesmen of the South laid little stress upon that. But the principle on which this unjust legislation was based was the point against which they contended, as tending directly to the ultimate subversion of our liberties. That principle was that one section of the country should be taxed for the protection of the products of another, while no correspondent benefit, but an injury, should result to the interests of the section taxed. The champions of the State of South Carolina, were Messrs. Calhoun and Hayne in the Senate, with George McDuffie, James Hamilton, and others in the House of Representatives. These gentlemen held that this legislation was unconstitutional, inasmuch as it was destructive of State rights. To levy a proper tax on all the people for revenue purposes was right and unobjectionable. But a tax which arbitrarily discriminated between different sections of the Union would inevitably override the liberties of the people, destroy the guarantees of the Constitution, and lead to the dissolution of the Union. The sentiment almost universally adopted by the people, was: "Millions for defence; not a cent for tribute!"

As encroachment after encroachment continued to occur, a convention of the people of South Carolina waa called, and the Ordinance of Nullification was passed. The meaning of this ordinance was, that where such legislation was passed by Congress as was violative of the rights of the States (of which violation the State was clothed with the power to decide), the rightful remedy could be found in the nullification of the obnoxious law within the limits of the State. It was also held to be a peaceful remedy, and by no means implied the dissolution of the Union.

The celebrated Andrew Jackson was then President of the United States, and was at the acme of his popularity; and bearing no good will to Mr. Calhoun, he identified himself with the Union party, and succeeded in having a bill

passed known as "the Force Bill." This bill placed at his control all the naval and military forces of the government, with a view of coercing the people of South Carolina; but the State did not pause to calculate the immense odds arrayed against her, and although no other State joined her in the opposition, she immediately proceeded to place herself on a war footing.

I cannot forget, however, that some of her best citizens, a party not sufficiently numerous to succeed, opposed the Nullification movement very decidedly. Among them was James L. Pettigru, of Charleston, than whom the State claimed no nobler son. They distinguished themselves by the name of "Union men;" they were reproached by the Nullifiers with the title of "Submissionists." The logical sequence of Nullification, according to its advocates, was not secession, but the preservation of the Union upon constitutional principles. Many of the Union men believing that the doctrine was a mistake on the part of the Nullifiers, and convinced that a conflict of arms with the general government was inevitable, in which event South Carolina would be crushed, removed from the State.

In the meantime the whole State was converted into a military encampment, and preparation was made to bring every able-bodied man in the State into the public service. There was no need of conscription, no draft, but all who went into the ranks were volunteers. Notes of preparation sounded from the mountains to the sea board, and the enthusiasm was deep and widespread. Squads of men were organized everywhere, who were pledged, on a minute's warning from their commander, to repair to any designated spot equipped with arms, rations, clothing, and a good horse! The ultimate rendevouz for the whole military force thus raised throughout the State was Charleston, and there the army was to be concentrated to meet the forces of the United States Government. Such was the actual condition

of things during some months preceding March 4th, which was supposed to be the critical period when the question of collision would be definitely decided. During these exciting scenes it may be readily supposed I was not inactive and unmoved, but I was in full sympathy with the South. I was not only a Nullifier, but I belonged to a squad of "minute men." But as the time rolled on Congress was evidently becoming more disposed to settle the difficulty without actual collision, and a party imbued with the spirit of moderation was assiduously at work to modify the previous legislation, so as to conciliate all parties and avert the threatening storm. The leader of this party in Congress was the celebrated Henry Clay, of Kentucky, and under his wise conduct the Compromise Act was successfully perfected and passed, which brought into sufficient harmony the conflicting views of all, so that the apparently "imminent deadly breach" was closed. This act of Congress so modified the obnoxious tariff bill as to subject it to a process of gradual reduction through a series of years, at the expiration of which time it should produce an adequate revenue with a more moderate system of protection. To be sure this was not the solution that was entirely satisfactory to the South Carolinians, still it was a concession to their demands. Although attempts have been made to cast reproach and contempt upon them and upon their leaders, still it was patent upon the surface of this entire transaction to any unprejudiced mind that, to a very considerable extent, the compromise was the result of the unfaltering attitude of South Carolina in opposition to the unconstitutional encroachments upon the liberties and rights of the States. The passage of this bill was followed by the cessation of all military preparation, and the country soon subsided into its accustomed calm. Of course, then, my pledge as a "minute man," to be "ready at a moment's warning," being no longer binding, I readily obtained leave of absence

on a prospecting tour to Florida, which is already recorded on a preceding page of this Memoir.

As I have mentioned Mr. Calhoun in this connection, I venture to give here a sketch of some of his traits, more characteristic of his private life. He was always a most welcome visitor of my father during his life at Willington. Mr. Calhoun had at one time a plantation on the Savannah river in that part of the country, but had been for many years a resident of Pendleton District, at his seat, Fort Hill, previous to the time of which I write. His brother, Mr. William Calhoun, being a neighbor of my father, this also made him an occasional visitor in that part of the country, with many of whose citizens he had been acquainted as his friends and neighbors. With respect to the public history and grand career of Mr. Calhoun, I shall trouble the reader with no statements of mine, as the world knows it all from more adequate sources. I only wish to write of him from personal knowledge and recollection.

His person was tall, and he was erect and active, yet dignified and graceful in his movements. His features were quite regular, his forehead neither high nor broad, yet sufficiently so to stamp it as "the dome of thought." But the eye that sparkled beneath his brow was so piercingly bright and black as to command the attention and awake the admiration of all in his presence. His voice was clear and distinct, and so modulated as to express the exact meaning of his words, and these flowed forth in a constant stream, apparently without premeditation, and exactly adapted to the rapidity of his thought. His manner and address were pleasing and affable. The most unpretentious and unassuming man felt that he was welcome to his presence, and was at once at perfect ease in his society. I have heard it remarked that in association with him one would almost forget that he was the great man that he really was. There was, however, nothing in his manner that was designed or

that tended to produce the impression that he was the superior of these with whom he conversed. I myself, from my own experience, felt, and have made the remark, that it was impossible to be in his company and enjoy his conversation for the space of half hour without learning something that would be of practical benefit and usefulness.

As an illustration of his affability and the facility with which he could adapt himself to any circle, and interest himself in common life, I mention an incident within my personal knowledge. I had been on a visit with my family to the Madison Springs, once a much frequented watering-place in Georgia, just above Athens. On a certain evening, on the arrival of the mail-coach from that place, Mr. Calhoun proved to be a passenger. A large number of persons were at the hotel as guests, and when it was known that the great Senator was also a guest much interest was excited as a matter of course. Accordingly, after tea the guests repaired to the large assembly-room, to see and hear him whom all delighted to honor. The late Hon. Robert A. Toombs, of Georgia, acted as the leader in drawing Mr. Calhoun into conversation, for the enjoyment, benefit and great delight of the company. I was an auditor, and was content to listen in silence. But after some time spent in this agreeable way Mr. Calhoun, being acquainted with me, as he had met me at my father's house at Willington, rose from his seat, and, coming over to me, asked me to walk with him on the spacious veranda. There, as we promenaded back and forth, he drew me into a conversation, not about public affairs or the political questions of the day, but about Willington and the old citizens whom he had long years previously known as his neighbors and friends. He seemed as deeply interested, and I doubt not was really so, in this simple and natural conference, as he would have been in almost any other subject. He referred to those people by their names, especially to the Huguenots and their de-

scendants, in most familiar and friendly recollection of their position and circumstances, and with all the freshness and interest of one whose residence there was of recent date. It was this happy capacity of adaptation of himself to all circumstances around him, which he possessed, and not the insincere cunning of the politician, which accounts for the fact that, in the South at least, John C. Calhoun was so beloved and admired. I have often, in my own mind, instituted a comparison between Mr. Calhoun and Mr. McDuffie. They were devoted friends, and united by bonds of not only private affections, but by the fact that they were earnest and zealous members of the same great political school, and yet rarely have two men been found, as distinguished as they were, presenting so great a diversity of traits in most respects. Both were truly great, each in his own way, but with striking contrasts.

Mr. McDuffie was in his person by no means imposing. With a figure not erect, but rather inclined to stoop, features not very regular, and eyes sunken, of a bluish-gray color, the nose aquiline, and the mouth indicative of a most decided firmness, one would not, at first view, be forcibly impressed. His manner, unless in company with intimate friends, was unattractive, and not remarkably social. He was not, as a general fact, an interesting talker, in which class Mr. Calhoun was pre-eminent. Indeed, my experience among men leads me to the conclusion that few men are the equals in this respect of Mr. Calhoun. And yet, if Mr. McDuffie were at any time drawn into a discussion of some important subject in which he felt deeply interested, his manner became animated, his eye flashed, his face would be lighted up, and so great was the transformation as to present him in an aspect wholly different from that which he exhibited in repose. Thus, whether in private conversation or public debate, there were occasions when it might be revealed to the observer, that under that reserved and un-

pretending and quiet exterior, were the latent elements of power, eloquence, and statesmanship. In his day, and during his public career, he was one of the powerful orators and political leaders in South Carolina, greatly honored, and almost idolized by his fellow-citizens.

I must be indulged before leaving this subject in a reminiscence which brings up a view of Mr. McDuffie's beautiful country seat, known in those days by the name "Cherry Hill." It had always been admired for its natural attractions, but its first proprietor, Maj. Ezekiel Noble, a retired citizen of Charleston, aided by the fine taste of his amiable and accomplished wife, had added to its native beauties every artificial ornament that could be commanded by wealth. But these excellent people had long since passed away, and the place had fallen into partial neglect, losing some of the attractions once the result of art and taste. Nevertheless, it still retained many of the charming features of natural beauty, of which it could not be robbed, and which made it an admired and delightful home. The original dwelling, erected on the hill, consisted of two stories in height, and was a large square building, with ample verandas above and below, but it was destroyed by fire. A building of more moderate dimensions, but commodious and sufficiently elegant in all its appointments had been erected upon the same spot, and like its predecessor, furnished with capacious verandas, presenting an extended view of the surrounding country to the south, west, and east. On the north side the hill descended precipitously. Toward the west, the view extended far over into the State of Georgia, while down in the valley rolled the beautiful and majestic stream of the Savannah river, and the horizon beyond was smooth and even in its blue line, save only at a point where rose the summit of Graves' Mountain, distant it was said about thirty-five miles, in Columbia County, Ga. As on the west, so also on the east, the regular circle of the horizon

was interrupted by Parson's Mount, not so distant as the other, but sufficiently so to "lend enchantment to the view." Orchards of every variety of fine fruit flourished on the premises, and directly around the house bloomed a shrubbery and flower-garden of the rarest description. The place, even at the time of Mr. McDuffie's residence, was the admiration of the whole land, and was visited by many transiently passing through the neighborhood. Mr. McDuffie purchased the place from the first proprietor, and this was his home for years. During the intervals of public service, and after his permanent retirement to private life, in feeble health, here he received and hospitably entertained his friends who visited him. Here also, I think, he died.

After this it passed into the hands of strangers unknown to me, and it gradually fell into decay, and lost its former attractiveness.

In 1861, being on a pilgrimage to my native place, in company with a friend, I visited the spot, and as I recalled the glories of this ancient home of the past, and surveyed its desolation, sad indeed were the emotions to which the scene gave rise. I gathered two roses that were blooming alone—"left on the stalk, to show where the garden had been," fitting memento of Cherry Hill—and carried them with me to my distant western home.

CHAPTER IX.

Purchase of Land in Alabama and Removal.—Signal Providential Interference in My Behalf.

MY time passed rather unprofitably during the year of our settlement in our new home. I was a small farmer, not what was known as a planter, but lived on a very pleasant farm, and had a very happy home. I enjoyed the work of improving the place, in reading, and visiting my neighbors to some extent. We enjoyed church privileges also, being conveniently located so as to attend my father's church, at Willington, and my brother's, at Hopewell, at pleasure. Everything in our daily routine passed on quietly and prosperously. With a view to the improvement of my wife's health, and to add to her enjoyment and that of her friends, we projected a visit to Alabama. Accordingly, in August of the year 1835, we made a successful and uneventful journey by comfortable private conveyance to Greene county, and were cordially welcomed. During this visit of some months events of great interest and importance to me occurred, which more or less influenced my future. It was just at that period when the whole country was driving rapidly on to one of those crises in financial matters which have periodically marked our history as a people. There was a rage for land speculation in the West, and especially in the Southwest. When I left home it was with no expectation that I could be induced to remove from South Carolina to Alabama. I had a fresh plantation; my home and many friends were in South Carolina, and I could see no prospect of improving my condition by a change of residence. Besides, I was well aware of the fact that I could make no purchase of land in Alabama without incurring debt, and up to this

time I had been acting upon a principle instilled into me by my father, to avoid debt as much as possible. Looking far back now to those early days, and to the mental troubles consequent upon the events referred to above, I find reason enough to regret the fact that I yielded to the advice of others, however kindly given. But although I was made to suffer for some years in many respects, I have often felt a conviction since, that all those burdensome troubles were permitted to befall me, and for a time to darken my prospects, for wise purposes in the providence of God. I am led to this conclusion from the fact that, by reason of these events, my whole course of life was revolutionized, and that they constituted essential links in the chain of circumstances that led me, as I trust, to a wiser choice of pursuit. So true is it that "it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps." But I am anticipating.

While with my friends in Greene county, Ala., a visit to the county of Sumter was proposed by my friends, Messrs. Gray and Quarles, as an excursion merely, without any view of entering the land market at all. There was a fine tract of land in the prairie near Gainesville for sale. After viewing this land, my friend, Major Quarles, conceived the idea that it would be a very fine investment; but as it was an extensive tract, it would be safer to purchase only a part, and as he knew the prospect of speedy increase in its value was very bright, he suggested to me to unite with him and each purchase a part of the land, and so take the whole body. The terms on which it was offered were $12.50 per acre, with three years' time, without cash payment in advance, but with interest from date. At that time I declined the proposal utterly, and the representations made to me by others, regarded as good judges, that the land was cheap and the terms favorable, produced no impression upon me.

We returned from our trip of inspection without making any such purchase. A letter which I received from home

produced a sudden change in my views, so that I was induced to entertain with favor the idea of leaving South Carolina, and settling permanently in Alabama. The particulars of this train of thought need not be here detailed, but it will be sufficient to state that such was the excitement of my mind produced by the letter that I decided (very hastily as I now perceive), to leave South Carolina, and settle in Alabama. The next act of the ill-judged proceeding was the purchase of the Sumter land. Here began my pecuniary difficulties, and I record this transaction merely to serve as a warning to any who may be patient enough to read these lines, and who may be, like me, inexperienced in such matters. As an explanation, and, to some extent, a palliation of this mistake of judgment which I made, I mention two facts as reasons for the course pursued, in addition to the influence of the letter received. *The one* was the possibility, which my friends regarded as a certainty, that the lands would so appreciate in value very shortly as to enable me to sell at an advance, should I not wish to settle upon it. *The other* was, that the sale of my Carolina lands would yield me such an amount as would pay for the present purchase. Whether these consolatory expectations were ever realized in my experience remains to be decided by the later developments of the case. What occurred then, was that the arrangements being all perfected, the trade was closed at once.

Soon after this transaction, I returned with my wife and little boy, Moses, leaving her mother, Mrs. Collier, with her daughters. We spent the year 1836 on our Carolina place, without any unusual or important occurrence in our domestic life. It was, however, an eventful year to the country, and, in some of its aspects, to us. Having determined to leave South Carolina, my first care was to dispose of my plantation to the best advantage. I advertised it in one of the Charleston papers, and as a kind of disposition prevailed at

the time among the people of the lower part of the State, to settle in the more northern districts, especially in Abbeville, I very soon had an applicant. Dr. Joseph Lee, of Johns Island, having read my advertisement, came up on a prospecting tour, and on a visit to his nephew, Dr. Thomas Lee, who was a friend and neighbor of mine. The former, after a satisfactory examination of my land, decided to purchase, and we closed the trade at $4,750 in cash, to be paid on receiving the title. This, although somewhat less than the price at which I held it, I accepted in consideration of the cash payment, and promised to give possession January 1837. The Spring being far advanced, and I not quite ready to remove, I remained on the place to finish and to gather the growing crop. It may be remembered that this was the year of the difficulties of the Government with the Creek Indians. I allude to this fact that I may record a most signal interposition of Divine Providence in my behalf.

After disposing of my land, it become advisable that I should make a preliminary visit to Alabama, in order to make satisfactory arrangements for the comfortable settlement of my family. For although, as already stated, I had purchased a tract of land there, no improvements had ever been made on it. Preparations for the contemplated trip were all made, and I was expecting to take the stage-coach on a certain day, the route of its line of travel leading directly through the heart of the Creek Nation, the Indians being hostile. But for some cause, not now remembered, I was prevented from leaving on the day appointed. The issue of the case proved that had I been permitted to make the trip at that time I should have met, in all probability, a violent death at the hands of the savages. The coach in which I had expected to travel brought its ill-fated passengers unexpectedly into the midst of a formidable band of the Indians, and it was stopped in its progress, the driver seized and tied to a wheel and burned with the coach, the

mail sacks destroyed, with their contents, and the passengers massacred. According to the lights then before me, I felt certain that the failure in my taking passage at the time set, was the kind Providence that saved my life. Thus I was again reminded by this incident that I was called to consider my salvation, and should have been impressed very seriously. But I was still careless and thoughtless, "not knowing" (and I may add, with shame, not caring) "that the goodness of God was leading me to repentance." I was a lover of the world, and felt satisfied with the flattering prospects it held out to allure me.

The Creeks continued hostile through all the summer, and I was induced to abandon my westward trip for the time being. During the ensuing autumn I accompanied my family, by private conveyance, to Alabama, and, leaving them with their friends, I returned to South Carolina to wind up my affairs and make a final removal to our new home. I was successful in collecting all my own dues, including the purchase-money of my place, and having paid off all my own liabilities to the uttermost, bade farewell to my friends and left for Alabama, and reached my destination in January, 1837.

With regard to my Sumter purchase, I found that the prospects of its being of enhanced value very soon were regarded as quite as promising as ever, and as my friends persisted in advising me to hold it, I was easily persuaded to do so, rejecting a very fair offer for it. Unwise counsel as this proved to be, I blame myself more than any one else for my course in not accepting it.

Before proceeding with this narrative, I must ask of any who may have the patience to read it, that they excuse even this imperfect account of my private life, as I hold it to have been an essential part of the way in which I was led ultimately to change my entire course, to revolutionize my views of life, and to enter upon that career of public effort which has occupied my time for at least half a century.

CHAPTER X.

FOUR YEARS' RESIDENCE IN ALABAMA, WITH ITS CONSEQUENCES, AND ANOTHER REMOVAL.

ON my arrival in Greene county, Ala., as I had no house ready as a residence, we boarded from January to November of the year 1837. Our first-born little boy, Moses, was our joy and our pride. He was a bright and noble-looking boy. His head was large, his forehead broad and massive, his hair yellow and glossy, his eyes were bluish gray. He was also a remarkably manly and (owing to his mother's excellent training) obedient child. We loved him with a very deep and devoted tenderness. He was the companion of many a walk and ride through those years, and I do suppose that no little fellow ever was happier than he. Matters wore on thus until, in November, I had succeeded in the completion of our first log-cabin home sufficiently, and we had just moved into it when, on the 6th of November, my beloved wife made me the happy father of a precious little girl, to whom we gave the name of Mary Robertson, in honor of her dear grandmother. Of these children, more remains to be recorded as the history of my life progresses, and events of deep and solemn importance to me and my family transpired.

Not long after my settlement in Alabama the distant mutterings of the approaching storm in the commercial world were heard, indicating the crisis, and land speculation ceased and land-buyers disappeared. I had no further offers for my Sumter lands. As none of my friends resided in Sumter county, I had no inducement to remove to that point, and I determined to place my land on the market, as

I was still hopeful of disposing of it, and found a home in Greene county, where our friends were. Within a few years, having had an accession to our slave property from South Carolina, I became engaged in cotton-planting, to a moderate extent, for the four succeeding years. I was never a success as a planter, and I dismiss this subject by stating that unfavorable seasons, a hail-storm, and a summer of extensive prevalence of malarial fever interfered so disastrously with our operations, that we were decided to make a change of location at the earliest favorable opportunity that might be presented. The farm of my brother-in-law, Mr. (afterwards Doctor) Gray, adjoined mine, and the two together constituted a large and desirable tract of farming land. Just at this time a Mississippi planter made us a proposition to exchange a place of his in that State for ours, which we accepted, for reasons that we considered sufficient, and ultimately removed to Jasper county, Miss. Before effecting this removal, and, indeed, before the exchange just mentioned had occurred, I should have recorded the most important event of all my whole life, inasmuch as it was the conviction and conversion of my soul, which occurred during these four years spent in Alabama, in 1838. As I now, after the lapse of fifty years, look back to that time of my life, I recall that I was very easy in my mind, not having been troubled with the difficulties that afterwards came upon me, and I had made a considerable payment on my Sumter lands, and was not at all pressed by creditors. I was happy in all my domestic relations, and in social intercourse with friends around me. Still I know that I did not properly appreciate my blessings, nor did I then cultivate as I should have done a sense of my obligation to God, as dependent upon Him for all these blessings. But the time was approaching when I was brought to realize my thoughtless ingratitude. I think it was in the month of October of this year that the Synod of Alabama held a meeting in the old

town of Mesopotamia, near our home. During its sessions quite a religious interest was awakened in the congregation and community. Rev. Daniel Baker was present, and preached with his usual zeal and earnestness. I attended the meetings with my family until Sabbath afternoon, when I returned home, leaving my wife with the little ones, as she seemed interested in the meeting. I was not moved at all by the excitement up to that time, but occupied myself in the matters of farming interest during the Monday following. Dr. Gray came home that evening, and remarked cheerfully that "he had come down to take me to the meeting next day; that my wife and Mrs. Quarles had professed a hope, and that I must go and attend also." I was not particularly moved by all this, and received his proposal coolly and declined attending, upon the ground that I apprehended there was probably too much excitement in such meetings. He said nothing in opposition to my views, and quietly retired. I do not doubt that his course was wisely directed by the God of all grace. Had he pressed me further, it is probable that, from mere pride of opinion, I should have adhered only more firmly to my purpose. As it was, he had no sooner left me than I was struck with a conviction of my wicked folly in receiving his proposal with such positive rejection. Simple as this incident may appear, it was this which touched my hardened and locked-up heart, so that I was led to reflect upon my whole life and conduct as they appeared in the sight of God. Then it also occurred to me with power that I was about to be deserted by all my friends, especially by my beloved wife, who was now rejoicing in hope, while I was a self-rejected outcast. I managed to pass that night and the next day, though not very peacefully in my mind, in daily duties and engagements of various kinds; but when night came, I passed a very restless time, tossing and turning on my bed until the dawn of day. I arose very early, and repaired at once to Dr. Gray's

place, and after stating unreservedly to him the facts of my case as here recorded, I proposed to go up to the meeting with him when he should return. My mortification may be readily understood when he informed me that the meeting had closed. This deepened my conviction of the sinfulness of my conduct, and I felt justly punished for my wilful perverseness. As some comfort to me, he proposed that I should accompany him to a meeting which he was to attend, with Dr. Baker, very soon, in Tuskaloosa, to which I gladly assented. We accordingly went up together and attended a communion meeting with Dr. Baker's church for several days, and before I returned I found what, I trust, was a good hope, through grace, of an interest in Christ. I wish to record here that the human agency by which I was brought to see my way clear through my struggles on this occasion was not so much the public preaching I attended in the church as the private instruction I received from Dr. Gray and his exposition of our Bible readings. I had a very erroneous conception of what constituted a true Christian character. I had, in my blindness and ignorance of the experience of a child of God, formed the idea that he must be perfect, and that no one who had any sin within or about him had reason to believe he was a Christian. Since, therefore, I now had been led to see the native and habitual depravity of my own heart more clearly and deeply than ever before, I dared not consider myself a Christian so long as this state of the case continued. Dr. Gray's exposition of the seventh chapter of Romans, which we read and studied together, convinced me that I was in error, and that I was making personal righteousness a substitute for Christ. I was led to see that the true test of Christian character was the faith one must exercise in the perfect work of Jesus Christ, and that the effect of that faith was manifested, not so much in a complete deliverance from all the remains of indwelling sin, as in the ability it imparted to man to main-

tain a ceaseless warfare against sin in all its forms. In this connection I add that I felt great comfort from an incident occurring during my stay in Tuskaloosa. A copy of the *Watchman of the South*, edited in Richmond, Va., at that time by Dr. Plumer, fell into my hands, and I was attracted by a letter of the Rev. Drury Lacy, one of the fathers of the Presbyterian Church in Virginia of the last century. It was to this effect:

"When I read the lives of the saints as recorded I venture to entertain some hope that I am a child of God; but when I look into my own heart and see what a nest of vipers, what a cage of unclean birds it is, I am almost reduced to despair. But thanks to God! Christ can cast them all out!"

I was conscious at once of two reflections: First, If such an eminent saint of God was so beset with sin, my theory about perfection was untrue, and hence it could not be maintained that the remnants of sin lingering within the heart was proof that one was not a Christian. Second, I saw the place occupied by Christ in the plan of salvation: "Thanks be to God! who giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ!" Henceforth I feel that I have had clear views of the divine scheme of redemption and of my own interest in Christ, though often obscured by doubts. I have felt that I can appropriate the language of the man born blind, whom Christ restored to sight: "One thing I know, that whereas I *was* blind, *now* I see." As I read this letter, which appeared to confirm Paul's teachings in the seventh chapter of Romans, I was conscious that a ray of light passed into my mind and dispersed the darkness, and I settled down in a calm and pleasing hope that God had, for Christ's sake, pardoned all my sins. Such a change came over my entire being that all my faculties, affections, and motives were renovated; "old things passed away, and all things became new." It was with new eyes that I now regarded

all things in this world in their relations to the future. It became to me a question of most solemn interest and most profound importance, "What wilt thou have me to do?"

On the evening of my arrival at home I began the duty of family worship, though not then a member of the church, and upon the altar then erected, the morning and evening incense has been offered even to the present time. While it was still true that sin was dwelling within, and "mixed with all I did," yet it was "a grief and burden" to me, and kept me humble in the sight of God.

The year 1839 found us all with our beloved circle still unbroken. In April quite a gathering of ministers occurred in Mesopotamia, probably a called meeting of the Presbytery. Rev. John Breckinridge was present, acting as agent of the Board of Foreign Missions, and was preaching with great power and unction for several days. At that time my wife and I were received into the church, and our children, with others, were baptized by Dr. Breckinridge. I had been thinking seriously, but in a rather undecided way, upon the subject of my duty in reference to the ministry, and yet I think now that, had I been left to myself, I might have been led to abandon entirely the idea of entering upon the great work of preaching the gospel. But I was not thus left in this state of mind. It pleased God, whose hand I devoutly recognize in all my history, not to leave me thus at ease in Zion; for just as I was settling down in this way He laid the heavy hand of His affliction upon me, and "What doest thou here?" was the question that seemed to fall upon my startled soul.

About the first of May, 1839, our darling boy, our first-born, little Moses, was violently attacked with dysentery, and, notwithstanding all human efforts of the most skillful physicians and friends, he closed his eyes in death after a brief and painful illness. I need not say how fervently we besought the Lord to spare him to us, if possible. But it

was not the will of the all-wise Father that our prayers should be answered in that way. He passed away in his beauty and in his brightness, aged four years and three months. It is not in the power of language to convey to the inexperienced any conception of the shadow of deep gloom that rested upon our little circle when this one of the lights of our dwelling faded into the darkness of death. The spring-time sun shone as brightly as ever *to others;* the forest put forth its green robes of foliage as beautifully as ever; the birds warbled their melodies as usual; the rain and the dews came and refreshed the earth; the cool fountains still poured forth their streams for the thirsty; and the affairs of the great toiling, rushing, and ambitious world moved on as they were wont to do; but all was sad *to us*, inexpressibly sad! There was a dimness in the sunlight; the woods wore a sad look; the song of the birds was mournful, and all nature seemed to wear a gloomy aspect; and while the light of our dwelling was not wholly extinguished, there came over us all an unutterable sense of loneliness, from which we did not recover for weary months; for we had, all of us, unconsciously suffered the little fellow to become so intimately entwined in our affections that it seemed as though our hearts must break when he died. I have felt the pangs of deepest sorrow many times since, but let it be noted that this was our first-born who was taken, and then it may be understood that the wound must of necessity have been one of peculiar intensity. The pressure of debt was now beginning to be felt, in addition to this affliction, and although in possession of sufficient property to meet my obligations thus pressing, it was not desirable to sacrifice it, and it remained as a trouble to us for some years, until, in the good providence of God, we were enabled to relieve ourselves and to feel free once more. But allusion is made to these things only to trace the dealings of God's providence in weaning me away from that world which had so attracted

my interest, and, by this intermingling of sorrow and disappointment, to turn my thoughts and hopes to a more enduring scene of action, and one that would not only contribute to make me happier, but introduce me to a higher sphere of effort, leading to permanent usefulness to my fellow-men. During the summer I had made up my mind fully to enter the gospel ministry, after prayerful deliberation and consultation with Christian friends, in whose judgment and experience I reposed full confidence. In passing, it was a source of gratification to me that this fact, communicated to my aged father, would bring pleasure to him in his affliction, as I knew that long before this time he had cherished the wish and prayed that I might be called to the ministry, but for years past had given up all such expectations.

It was in the month of October of this year (1839) that I attended a meeting of the Presbytery of Tuskaloosa in Livingston, Ala., and placed myself under its care as a candidate for the ministry. At this meeting Rev. A. A. Porter was also received as a candidate with myself. He was afterwards a prominent minister of the Southern church, and editor, for some years, of the *Southern Presbyterian*, in Columbia, S. C. Dr. Baker, who was then a member of Presbytery, was enthusiastic in the expression of his gratification on the reception of Mr. Porter, saying: "Yes, Moderator, and a hundred more just such." I was directed to commence my studies at once. My literary course, as I remember, was sustained, and I was required to prepare certain parts of trial for future examination. The parts assigned me on which to prepare were: First, a Latin exegesis on some theological question; second, a critical exercise on 1 Tim. iii. 16, and a lecture on the fifteenth Psalm, and a popular sermon on 2 Cor. v. 21. All these, except the last, were prepared, submitted, and sustained at successive meetings of the Presbytery of Tuskaloosa while I resided in Ala-

bama. The remaining months of the year found me busily engaged in private study under the general instruction and guidance of Rev. Dr. Gray, and at the close of the year I was considerably advanced in my preparations. During a portion of this time I was associated in study, as a fellow-student, with that devoted missionary to the Indians, Rev. Robert Loughridge. I was never an attendant upon the instructions of any of our excellent theological seminaries, as I really felt that, as I was a man of family, I had amply sufficient reason for adopting the course of private study. I remained a citizen of Alabama during the year 1840, and attended the spring meeting of the Presbytery, but I am not certain that I attended the meeting in the fall. At all events, I had presented, as before recorded, all my parts of trial, except the popular sermon, and they were all sustained.

Our third child, Elizabeth Woodson Pleasants, was born in 1840, and during this summer the exchange of our places for Mississippi lands, mentioned already, took place. We made all the necessary arrangements, exchanged titles, gave possession, and effected our removal to Jasper county, Miss.

CHAPTER XI.

A Visit to South Carolina, and Removal of Family to Mississippi.—Business Settlements in Mobile, and an Interesting Incident There.—New Home.

SOME particulars preliminary to my own departure must be recorded just here. I was recalled to South Carolina on business connected with the final settlement of my father's estate. Leaving the entire matter of the removal to Mississippi in Dr. Gray's hands, all of which he superintended and successfully accomplished, I returned to South Carolina. I found matters easily and pleasantly settled, and after no long delay there, I came back to Alabama. I of course found that everybody belonging to both families had gone to Mississippi, and strange faces now met me, as the place was in possession of new owners. The scene was sufficiently dreary by the contrast, and as soon as I could with convenience, I took boat for Mobile, our market town. Both my own and Dr. Gray's cotton crops had already gone down to the city, and the agreement made before we had separated was that we should meet in Mobile. He was to go down from the new home in Mississippi and I from Greene county to make sale of cotton and purchase family supplies. On my arrival in the city I found that, for some reason, he had been delayed, and was not there. I could not leave Mobile without meeting him, as we were to agree upon some matters there to be settled, and I was to return to Eutaw previous to my final departure for Mississippi, so I remained in Mobile about a week, awaiting his arrival. Owing to some unexpected complications in my business which I found in the city on my arrival, I felt the need of

counsel, and the time passed slowly, and the week was one of extreme loneliness and discomfort. While thus detained, an incident of apparently an unimportant nature occurred, which seemed to have a bearing upon my future, and which really shed a ray of comfort upon my cheerless surroundings. On one of those lonely days of waiting I was walking the street, and passing a reading-room, I stepped in to read the news of the day and to while away the heavy hours. In a Mississippi paper, that first attracted my attention by its name, I found the journal of the proceedings of the State Legislature, then in session. Inasmuch as I should be a citizen of that State, the paper very naturally claimed my special attention and interest. So I read on and found that it contained the action of the Legislature in locating the State University at Oxford, in the northern part of Mississippi. I have frequently referred to this incident, in conversation with friends, as one that was undoubtedly connected with my future life, and in this way: I believe that my entering that reading-room on that occasion was under divine direction, and that my heavenly Father designed it mercifully as a means of temporary comfort to me under the gloomy shadows that were then resting upon me. It is quite probable, I think, that many, perhaps a majority of people, would pronounce it "*a mere accident.*" But I do not so interpret it. I am sure that the immediate effect upon me was to arouse my mind to the prospect of future usefulness in a sphere better adapted to my training and habits. Let me recall the fact that when my father decided so positively that he designed me for a teacher I accepted the decision with reluctance, and it was with a feeling somewhat akin to aversion that I regarded that calling, yet, after entering upon it, and laboring in it for several years, I became convinced that it was a work in which I could be useful, and I began to enjoy it. How I was led to abandon it for another occupation has already been related.

Now, just there, in that reading-room in Mobile, while seeing only the announcement of the location of a school of learning, of which I not only had never heard, but of which I had never thought, I was conscious of the admission into my mind of the possibility that I might in some future day be connected with that institution. I admit that the thought, improbable as it may seem, and the realization of which was so doubtful, did convey to me at that time no inconsiderable degree of comfort. Still I knew full well that there lay out before me a long and dreary way to be traversed before I could emerge into light. Let me dismiss this incident now by remarking that, although it passed into a state of suspension in my mind, it was never totally lost, but as years passed on in my career, it was occasionally revived by occurrences that successively took place, and that, in their combined influence, matured the first suggestion into full realization.

But to return. At length Dr. Gray arrived, and after consulting with him and others as to the best method of proceeding, I returned to the neighborhood of my former home, and having made satisfactory arrangements, after another trip to Mobile and back, I bade a final adieu to Alabama, and took my departure alone on horseback for Mississippi. After a ride of more than one hundred miles, and suffering no little bodily pain from exposure and mental discomfort, I was permitted, "by the good hand of my God upon me," once more to embrace my beloved family, and, surrounded by all I held dear, I felt, for the time, free and independent of earthly trouble.

I arrived in Jasper county, my future place of residence, on March 7, 1841, and after resting and looking about for a time, I employed myself in superintending matters of the farm and getting things in working order. The large body of lands for which we had exchanged our Alabama possessions, consisting of 2,550 acres, we found to be about what we had been led to expect. It was not so convenient to

market, but it was, much of it, quite fertile, and a very healthful location, which latter point was a special recommendation to us, after our experience in Alabama of excessive sickness in the preceding season. Our first care was to make an equitable division of the tract into two plantations, which was done to the entire satisfaction of all parties. As on the portion of the place which fell to me there was no suitable dwelling, I proceeded to build, and in due time finished a new and commodious house, which, though made of hewn logs, furnished us a very comfortable home during seven years and a half. It was a plain structure, but neat, and built in the style that was fashionable in the neighborhood. It is part of my history that will be important, in its connections with my future and subsequent life, that I endeavor to give the reader a concise description of that part of the country into which we had removed. None of us had ever taken up our abode in such a region as we found in the northwestern part of Jasper county, Miss. It was one of the eastern counties of the State, and at the time of our settlement it was distant from the State capital at least sixty miles. The nearest railway then in existence was the Vicksburg and Jackson road, and our intercourse, social and commercial, with that part of the country was kept up by private conveyance altogether over wretched roads, through swamps, and over hills. But the immediate region around us on our first arrival was in an extremely rude and uncivilized condition. For the first two years of our residence there we were surrounded by Indians of the Choctaw tribe, who had not then been removed by the Government to their western destination. They were entirely harmless and friendly, and they were hired by the planters and farmers to cultivate and gather crops for simple wages, either of money or provisions. They were miserably poor and squalid in their appearance, dress, and manners. So, also, while we had around us some exceedingly pleasant neighbors, yet

there were still residing there some, perhaps a good many, who were low and degraded in all their instincts and habits. Our predecessor in the place we now owned, a man of wealth, and a Presbyterian by profession, had erected a very plain house of worship in the immediate neighborhood, which was used by the Methodists as a preaching station, as they are found the pioneers of Christian civilization almost ubiquitous. But very little respect was manifested by the inhabitants for religious institutions, especially the Sabbath. Hunting cattle and deer was the chief enjoyment of this class of the inhabitants, and visiting on business and pleasure were their chief occupations. But so much the greater need for work was the thought that pressed upon us all in our new outlook upon the surroundings. So, with a view to the spiritual needs of those families of the place, including our own, who earnestly desired the privileges of the church and the Sabbath, and also the hope of gathering the careless, thoughtless, and heathen around us to the benefits of the church ordinances, Dr. Gray commenced preaching in the house already mentioned. We had a small congregation at first, but we soon succeeded in establishing a promising Sabbath-school, consisting of his family and mine and those of the neighborhood who were already trained elsewhere. During the summer and fall quite an accession to our population was made by the immigration of respectable citizens, and a very good church was organized, with two elders, of which I was one, and the name chosen for the church was Montrose.

CHAPTER XII.

Prosecution of Ministerial Studies.—Licensure by Presbytery of Mississippi.—Places of my First Years of Preaching.

OUR removal from the bounds of the Presbytery of Tuskaloosa made it necessary to connect ourselves with the Presbytery of Mississippi, into whose bounds we had removed. I kept up my theological studies as faithfully as was possible in private, my trials having all been passed and approved, save the popular sermon. Having obtained letters of dismission, we left home in September, and rode horseback across the country one hundred and twenty miles, to Ebenezer church, in Jefferson county, where the Presbytery of Mississippi held its fall meeting. The venerable Rev. William Montgomery was the minister in charge of that church at the time. He has long since gone to rest, and the church has been dissolved. Rev. Jeremiah Chamberlain, D. D., presided as Moderator of Presbytery at this meeting. He was then the honored and beloved President of Oakland College, afterwards brutally murdered. After my reception and examination on some final preliminary points, I preached my "popular sermon" on 2 Cor. v. 21, the subject being "The Doctrine of Substitution." I was then licensed (the Moderator presiding) as a probationer to preach the gospel. My first attempt in this solemn office was made in the church at home, Montrose, on the Sabbath succeeding my licensure, a church recently organized, where Dr. Gray preached regularly, save when absent on missionary work. My text was the sixth verse of the fifty-fifth chapter of Isaiah, and my sermon was delivered from notes. I found no scarcity of fields for work, although there were

no organized churches in that destitute country immediately around us. The first place to which I was invited to preach was the town of Raleigh, in the adjoining county of Smith, near this place, in the country. I found several Presbyterians—the Curries and Campbells, one of the latter having been an elder in the State of his former residence. I occupied the court-house as a preaching place for the town and country people; but the prospect of the organization of a church being by no means encouraging, and the congregations continuing small, after a brief trial I abandoned the field. Years passed after that before there was any change in that place, but I find on the minutes of the Central Mississippi Presbytery the name of a vacant church, Raleigh; so I suppose there is such a church in existence in a feeble condition.

About this time I began preaching at a place in Newton county, distant about twelve miles north of my home. Here also were found Presbyterians, the Thompsons and McFarlands, who had formerly resided in an older settlement where there was a Presbyterian church. Two efficient elders were made from this material, and here we were successful in collecting a sufficient number to enable Dr. Gray to organize a very good church, to which we gave the name Mount Moriah.

It should have been stated that the churches in that region, soon after our settlement, had all been transferred to the jurisdiction of the Presbytery of Tombeckbee. This church is still in existence, after the lapse of more than forty years, but is reported vacant.

After leaving Raleigh, my first field, I was invited to a place some twenty-five miles west of my home, on the road to Jackson, in Smith county, and here we found promise of favorable results, and a church was organized there, with two elders, Col. Samuel Lemly, late of Salisbury, N. C., and Mr. William Broadfoot, of Fayetteville, N. C. To this church

we gave the name Mount Hermon. The material of which it was composed consisted partly of Presbyterians and partly of Lutherans, who, being deprived of an organization of their own, united with our people. This union continued as long as I ministered to them. But in process of time a Lutheran minister came into the neighborhood, and the Lutherans rallied to their old standard, and a church was organized of that denomination. This circumstance, combined with a diminution of numbers by death and removal, resulted in the dissolution of the church; and my information leads me to think that the few remaining members of the church were received into another church, called Trenton, not far from the old location. Among the churches of the Presbytery of Central Mississippi the name Mt. Hermon appears; it, however, is not the same, as its location seems to be in Madison county. For the years during which I preached there I greatly enjoyed the association with that warm-hearted people, although my service to them required of me a trip of fifty miles twice in each month to and fro, and I have always felt thankful that I had reason to believe that into the Zion of the Saviour "this man and that man were born there." Thus I spent the first year of my ministry, and the fruits of my humble labors in that sphere of effort, while unknown now, will be found recorded in the "Book of Remembrance" in that day when the Lord shall "number His jewels."

It is needful now to collect some items of this narrative of a somewhat different nature, but which would perhaps have been out of place if recorded at an earlier period. Up to this point matters more private and personal have occupied my thoughts, but they were not without a material influence upon those events which will be found, in their combination, to constitute the story of the most important years of a life now protracted beyond human allotment. My arrangements for preaching had all been made satisfactorily,

and I had all my Sabbaths occupied, and felt happy in my humble sphere to be employed, with some hopeful promise of usefulness, instead of living in comparative idleness. Yet I felt that I was under obligations to combine with my farming operations some other occupation, so as to meet a remnant of unsettled claims still resting upon me, and to add something to my labors in useful work.

CHAPTER XIII.

Establishment and Organization of Montrose Academy.—Its Progress and Influence.—Supply of Religious Destitutions.—Difficulties.

I HAD kept in view, as one of the objects of our removal to Mississippi, the enterprise of establishing an independent Academy, or High School for boys and young men. As I was "unknown to fame," and the location was apparently as unfavorable for such an institution as could be well conceived, the first step toward such an object was obviously to make efforts for the publication of the existence of the school. Preliminary arrangements were in progress for this purpose during the first year of our residence there, by selecting a spot for the location, and advertising for patronage from abroad, as success in such an undertaking could not be expected from the immediate neighborhood. All things having been thus made ready, in the month of January, or thereabouts, I began operations with only nine pupils.

It was a singular school in many respects. It was singular in its location, in the wild woods, far from the centres of intelligence and refinement. Of elements to build upon, it may be said to have been utterly destitute. It was without a board of trustees, or a dollar of endowment, or any extensive apparatus, or library rich in the treasures of learning, or imposing brick structures for its future operations. But there was only the determination in the heart of one man, that by God's blessing a Christian institution should be planted side by side with the church, where the rising youth of the land should be trained for earthly use-

fulness and for the kingdom of heaven. These motives, with others, stimulated my efforts in this enterprise, and I trust I may add without boastfulness, that in the subsequent history of the school these expectations were in some degree realized. Let me particularize a little. The school was opened in a log building, which was used also for preaching purposes, and located on a gentle eminence, on the highway of travel, distant two miles from my residence, in the midst of an extensive pine forest. At the foot of the slight hill on which the building stood, and sufficiently near it, gushed forth a perennial spring of clear, chalybeate water. The house was sufficiently large to accommodate a good audience on the Sabbath, and was ample for all school purposes at first. But as the patronage of the school was steadily increasing, a very large log-house was erected close to this first building, and a second room was also erected on the other side of the larger house. This large house was designed for the accommodation of a congregation on the Sabbath, and in it the students assembled as a chapel for morning and evening prayer. This arrangement continued until the school had acquired such reputation as not only induced parents from abroad to send their children for instruction, but others made settlements for the benefit of education. In process of time we were so encouraged by the prosperity of the school and the neighborhood as to erect, by subscription, an excellent two-story frame building, to serve as a church and as an assembly hall for Commencement exercises. The want of funds caused a suspension of work on the building, after it had been covered and weather-boarded, but it was afterwards completed by my successor, who settled at Montrose, and endeavored, unsuccessfully, to revive the school. During the period of my residence there the school prospered, and drew its patronage from western Alabama, eastern Mississippi; from Meridian, Brandon, Jackson, and Vicksburg. The average attend-

ance, as I now remember, was seventy-five, the majority from abroad. The course of study covered all the English branches, together with the Classics and Mathematics, including Algebra, Geometry, Trigonometry, Mensuration, Navigation, and Surveying, to the extent of the requisites for admission into the Junior Class in our Colleges and Universities. I also induced the more advanced students to build little study-houses on the adjacent campus around the main building. Besides the course of study above outlined, a large element of Christian instruction was infused into the course. Every student was entered into a Bible Class, and required to recite on Sabbath in the church, and to attend preaching also. The school was daily opened and closed with prayer, and attendance upon this exercise was compulsory. Frequent lectures were delivered to the student-body assembled on these occasions, in which I endeavored to present before their minds the rational expectation of their friends in regard to their future achievement of a noble life. I often quoted to them the words of Arnold of Rugby, that it was not "necessary that the school should consist of thirty, fifty, or one hundred students, but that it should be composed of Christian gentlemen." It is true, no doubt, that of the hundreds of students who from time to time came to that school ignorant and vicious, a proportion may have left having received little benefit; yet I am very thankful to be able to say, that many who came in comparative ignorance and with unsettled morals, left infinitely benefited. Students were there prepared for Oakland College and for the University of Mississippi, who were graduated with distinction. Others became ministers of the gospel, settling in Louisiana and Texas, and all were honored and beloved members of their respective Presbyteries. It is not too much, moreover, to claim, as a very important collateral benefit resulting from the establishment of Montrose Academy, that its success taught the people of the region around

just what could be accomplished by persistent individual effort and enterprise. This was the first academy of the kind ever organized in Eastern Mississippi, and after a few years similar schools sprang into existence all over that country. Our annual exhibitions and examinations were attended by immense crowds, coming not only from the immediate vicinity, but from distant parts of the State. On these occasions distinguished gentlemen from abroad came, on invitation, and delivered annually eloquent addresses, and the school reached a very high reputation throughout the land.

To illustrate the animus of this school two incidents may be related. While in its most flourishing state, a meeting of the Presbytery of Tombeckbee was held at Montrose church, and a gracious outpouring of the Spirit followed the exercises. Deep impressions were made upon the students, and there were quite a number who made profession of religion. Of this number I recall one who, although of a Baptist family, was desirous of joining the Presbyterian Church. I assured him that there could be but one objection to his proposal, viz.: that it might not be agreeable to his parents, and advised him to consult them, and take the course they might suggest. This he did, and as they preferred that he should become a member of the same church with themselves, it was settled agreeably. These parents were particularly gratified at the course pursued, and they proved to be very warm friends of the school.

The other incident was as follows: The only objection ever made to the regulation that every student must study the Bible, proceeded from a gentleman of Alabama, who made it a condition of his patronage, that his son should be excused from this rule. On my declining to accede to his proposal he withdrew his son. My corps of assistant instructors in this school were, at various times, Mr. Joseph Denison, Mr. Henry Sturges, and Mr. J. Cowart. The first

of these gentlemen was a Nova Scotian, I think, a most excellent teacher in the English department; the second was a graduate of Princeton College; the third was a graduate of Oakland. I am unable to give the subsequent history of any one of them. It will be admitted that the number of teachers was quite sufficient to meet the duties required, without overburdening our strength, and to avoid neglect or injustice to the classes by attempting to instruct too many at once. In a word, we endeavored to do our work faithfully and conscientiously.

Within two years after our settlement at this place, Dr. Gray received a call from the church at Vicksburg, and removed to that city in 1843. This induced a change in my movements, so far as to divide my preaching labors between Montrose and Mt. Moriah churches, giving to each two Sabbaths in the month, and this arrangement continued in force for the remaining period of my residence there. Yet such was the great destitution of religious privileges throughout that entire region, as to require my services frequently in visiting vacant churches, and preaching as much as my engagements would admit. For a part of this time, two young brethren, Messrs. Gilchrist, of the Northwest, and Anderson, of South Carolina, were engaged to supply those vacancies, but they did not remain very long, as there was little to encourage them. Thus my labors in those years, both in the pulpit and in the school-room, were not scant nor light, left alone as to human aid. I led a life of toil, and was content to yield myself to the inevitable privations of this condition of things, mingled as it was with many blessings. Yet I have reason to doubt whether I have ever, in later years, and in more eligible and elevated positions, been instrumental in the hands of God of accomplishing more for the benefit of my fellowmen than in that land of destitution.

CHAPTER XIV.

More Sorrow.—Incorporation of the Board of Trustees of the University of the State.—Proceedings of the Board.—Coming Events Foreshadowed.

MATTERS wore on in this way without essential modification until the year 1848, which closed my term of public service in the eastern part of Mississippi. I recur, however, to the period intervening between 1843 and 1848, to relate events which occurred at intervals during the passing of those five years.

Our little circle had been added to by the arrival, on September 28, 1842, of a beautiful little boy, to whom his mother gave the name John Newton. It pleased our heavenly Father to permit us the enjoyment of his infant life for four short years, when He took him to Himself, and so again, after the lapse of seven years of exemption, our home was shrouded in deep gloom. The only other family events to be noted in this interval are the addition of two other boys, George Robertson, in 1844, and John Gray, in 1847. I pass on again to matters of public interest. In 1843 the Senate of Mississippi proceeded to incorporate the University by chartering the Board of Trustees. In the selection of the members of the Board, besides the fancied or real possession of some fitness for the office, the Senate was guided by what was regarded as good policy, the appointment of the trustees from various sections of the State as representatives of the people on the Board, so that the entire body of the citizens of the State might become more interested in the University. In connection with this action of the Senate, let me call attention to what seemed to me a

co-incident event of private interest, though of a public nature. On a certain day, as I stood in the doorway of the Academy building, I observed the Hon. Simeon R. Adams, the senator from the county of Jasper, passing, on his return home after the adjournment of the Senate. Being a personal friend, he called and informed me that the Senate had appointed me a trustee of the University, to represent the eastern part of the State. This information at once revived the latent incident of the Mobile reading room, which occurred in 1841, and which I had not brought up before my mind for two years. It seemed a sort of confirmation of my mental vision foreshadowing the anticipated connection of myself with the University. The simple fact of my having received this appointment, wholly unexpected, wholly unsolicited by me, without the slightest effort on my part, seemed to me a verification of the fleeting vision which passed before my mind at the time referred to. I felt now that I was approaching something more eligible than my existing environments would have warranted, and that this was evidently the first step in my onward progress toward the goal of my aspirations. No one who studies and reads carefully the dealings of divine Providence in our lives can doubt for a moment that He sometimes—nay, if we were intelligent observers, always—permits "coming events to cast their shadows before." I certainly so interpreted this coincidence. The event which I saw foreshadowed or embodied very clearly before me then was that I should one day occupy a position in the Faculty of the University. Reviewing the past now, after facts have been made known, and combining the various cotemporary points of my history then transpiring, it seems to me that every obstacle that might have prevented this issue was providentially removed. Calls for my services as a teacher were laid before me at that time, one to a professorship in Washington College, Tenn., and the other to a Presbyterial Academy in Alabama;

but although pressed upon me from respectable sources, circumstances combined to prevent my consideration of them with any view to acceptance. I even had a correspondence with a very prominent minister of Alabama upon the subject of a candidacy for a chair in Oglethorpe University, and this was, in my estimation, a very attractive position. But as I was not prepared to allow my name to go before the Synod of Alabama as a candidate, and as that body would not elect on an uncertainty, I was not elected, although I received a considerable vote. So I remained in control of Montrose Academy, as seemed to be the will of Providence. In the meantime, the trustees met and organized themselves for the work before them. I was not present at that meeting; but subsequently other meetings were held to arrange preliminaries. I received official notice that such a meeting would be held in Oxford in April, 1847, and although my residence was distant from that place some two hundred miles or more, without any such conveniences as railroad or even mail-coach transportation, I resolved to attend. I performed the entire journey on horseback, and my long ride was accomplished, in great measure, alone, through a wild and desolate region of country. This was my first attendance upon the deliberations of the Board after my appointment as a trustee. I was the bearer of letters of introduction to gentlemen of Oxford, and among them I met a cordial welcome from Dr. Z. Conkey, an elder of the Presbyterian Church, with whom I made my temporary abode.

The subjects of business which came before the Board were many details not needful to record, but I allude to only one now: the course of instruction to be pursued. I was appointed chairman of a committee to draw up a report on that subject, to be presented at a subsequent meeting of the Board. Here I met for the first time those trustees of the University present at that meeting. Among them were Hon. Jacob Thompson, member of Congress for

many years; Col. Thos. H. Williams, who had been the bond-paying Democratic candidate for Governor in the days of repudiation; Col. Brown and Judge Howry, and other names not now remembered. I remained until after the Sabbath, and preached twice in the Presbyterian church, and thus made my first appearance in the place which then, all unknown to us, was to be my home during eighteen years of the future. I omitted to state at the proper time, that at a meeting of the Presbytery of Tombeckbee, in Columbus, Miss., on the 23d of October, 1843, I was set apart to the full work of the gospel ministry; so that in my case two years had been spent in study as a candidate, and two years in preaching as a licentiate, or probationer, for the ministry. My ordination sermon was preached before the Presbytery on the text, Roman v. 1.; the doctrine discussed being "Justification by Faith." I attended another meeting of the Board as a member in the following January, 1848, in Jackson, during the session of the Legislature. By this time progress had been made in preparation for the opening of the institution, but still much remained to be done. On that occasion there were present of the Board, Hon. Wm. L. Sharkey, the most distinguished jurist of the State; Judges E. C. Wilkinson and Pinckney Smith, Hon. Isaac N. Davis, and some others. The report of the previously appointed Committee on the Course of Study being in order, and no member of that committee except myself being present, Messrs. Smith and Wilkinson were placed on that committee to act with me. I had already, during the interval of the meetings of the Board, prepared carefully this report, and had it ready for action by the Board. I called the newly appointed committee together that I might submit it to their consideration previous to its final discussion. On my reading it to this committee, very strenuous objections were offered by Judge Wilkinson to the adoption of the "Evidences of Christianity" as one of the

studies of the curriculum. With a mere statement of the fact that he objected to this item of the report, he proposed to postpone the further discussion of the subject until it should come before the Board. I read it the next day in full meeting, and at once Judge Wilkinson attacked that particular point, and we discussed the subject at some length, without reaching any decision, and the further debate was arrested, being placed on docket for consideration at the next meeting, to be held at Oxford in July following. It was also determined that, at that meeting, the Board should proceed to the election of a Faculty, and a time should be set for the regular opening of the University, and the installation of the officers.

I decided in my own mind, after this meeting, to become a candidate for the Professorship of Ancient Languages, and, accordingly, I tendered my resignation as a trustee. This was the last meeting of the Board at which I was present as a trustee. I resumed the duties of the Academy after the adjournment of the Board, and continued to teach and preach as usual until I was laid aside by a tedious illness, which, for the time, disabled me. I dismissed the students somewhat in advance of the summer vacation, on this account. But the progress of events during the season brought about changes which induced me to close my enterprise of teaching and preaching at Montrose, never to be there resumed.

CHAPTER XV.

Election of the Faculty of the University.—Initiatory Difficulties.—Farewell Sermons.—Removal to Oxford, and Formal Opening.

MY health continued feeble, so that I was unable to fill my pulpit from the 3rd of June to the 16th of July. After that I resumed preaching, and provided service for the churches to the best of my ability. In the meantime the Board of Trustees convened in Oxford, according to appointment, for the election of a Faculty. As I was now a declared candidate for a chair, I had made all arrangements pursuant to the presentation of my application. I had provided myself with letters of endorsement from Rev. Dr. Church, President of the University of Georgia, who had been Professor of Mathematics and Astronomy at the time of my membership of that institution, and at my graduation, in 1829. I also had the favor of letters commendatory from Hon. William L. Sharkey and Rev. L. J. Halsey, D. D., of Jackson, Miss. These, with one other similar document from a friend, constituting my credentials, were transmitted to Col. Williams, Secretary of the Board, and I made all my preparations to visit Oxford, and to be present during the election. I had even gone so far as to leave home on the journey, but I was again taken too ill to proceed, and returned home.

The Board held their meeting, and engaged in the important business of filling the presidency and the various professorships, according to published advertisement in the journals of the State. It proved to be a rather stormy meeting. There were three chairs to be filled besides that

of President. I was informed by some one present on the occasion that the names of one hundred and seventy-five or more candidates were presented for these four offices, viz.: For President, there were *seventeen* applicants: for Chemistry and Natural Philosophy, *thirty-five;* for Mathematics and Astronomy, *forty-five* or *fifty*, and for the Ancient Languages, enough additional candidates to make the above sum total.

The discussion of two preliminary principles was insisted upon by Judge E. C. Wilkinson, viz., that the Evidences of Christianity should be excluded from the course of study, and, as an accompanying requisite to the full exclusion of this branch of study, no minister of the gospel of any denomination should ever be appointed to a chair in the Faculty. In these two positions he was supported by another trustee, an avowed infidel, who, not being present, had discussed them in a letter of fifteen pages, addressed to the Board, denouncing the whole Christian system, and resigning his seat on the Board. The ground of opposition to the Christian system and to Christian ministers was "the assumption that the Evidences could not be taught without embodying the distinctive tenets of some one of the churches of the land, and that every minister would inevitably teach his own creed." Furthermore, it was argued by these gentlemen, that as the University was the property of the State, and not of any sect or party, the people of all descriptions had a right to forbid any propagation of religion that would not be universally acceptable. "It was manifestly improper that such things should be permitted, and this would be unavoidable should ministers of the gospel be eligible to professorships, or should the Evidences of Christianity form part of the course of study."

I have in my possession, to this day, a letter from one of the wisest and most influential, and most devoted members of the Board, who participated in this election, bearing date

July 19, 1848, stating the following facts: "One member of the Board resigned because the 'Evidences of Christianity' formed part of the curriculum, and in his letter of resignation made a long and heavy assault upon religion." Again he adds, "Another trustee followed this letter with an assault upon the ministry."

Such was one of the difficulties which then pressed upon the University in its infancy. Like all great enterprises, under similar circumstances, this institution has been beset, at intervals, with difficulties through its entire career. The foregoing discussion was held in public, and many of the influential citizens of the town, as well as of the surrounding country, were present and heard the debate. Among them were members of the various Christian churches, who viewed the entire meeting and the discussion with sentiments of the strongest disapproval, and such was the indignation aroused in the community, as to result in a decided re-action before the close of the election. There can be no doubt, however, that the assaults referred to above had exerted some influence upon the minds of members of the Board, although they were not successful to the extent designed, and hoped for, by those who made them. They proceeded with the election, and balloting in great earnestness continued day after day until Friday, with interruptions occasionally for interchange of views. Col. Williams, Secretary of the Board, the friend to whom I had intrusted my credentials, wrote to me afterward, giving me the statement that before the day arrived for the election of a Professor of the Ancient Languages, for which chair I was an applicant, he had, by some means, lost my papers, and his only reliance for my success was personal advocacy of my claims. The first election was, of course, for the office of President, for which there were quite a number of candidates. I know the names of but two, and of these only as being the two most prominent before the Board. These were Hon.

A. B. Longstreet, once so eminent in Georgia, as a jurist and a writer, an editor of an influential political journal, and President of the Emory College at Oxford, who had also become a minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In his palmy days in his own State I regarded him as among the most eloquent orators I ever heard. I know, however, that he was not a candidate for the office on this occasion, and was voted for by his friends from their conviction of his preëminent qualifications. The fact of his ministerial character, it was understood at the time, defeated him. His successful opponent was George F. Holmes, then Professor in the College of William and Mary, in Virginia. Mr. Holmes was furnished with most flattering testimonials of accomplished scholarship, and has held a chair of importance since in the Faculty of the University of Virginia. He was not a minister of the gospel. After some distinct ballotings he was elected. He was not known to any of the Board, and, at this time, he was about twenty-eight years of age. He was not present on the occasion.

The second professorship filled was that of Mathematics and Astronomy. The Board, by a majority, out of many opponents, elected Albert Taylor Bledsoe, a native of Kentucky, and at the time of his election a citizen of Springfield, Ill. He was a graduate of West Point Military Academy. His age was thirty-eight. He was present. The Board then proceeded to select an incumbent for the chair of Chemistry and Natural Philosophy. After several ballotings the choice fell upon Professor John Millington. He was also at the time a Professor in William and Mary College. He was far advanced in life, but eminent for scientific attainments, and universally beloved for his amiable traits.

The fourth election, which did not occur until Friday, was decided, on first ballot, in favor of myself, for the chair of Ancient Languages. I was then residing in Jasper county,

Miss., a native of South Carolina, and a graduate of the University of Georgia. I was, at the time of my election, in my thirty-seventh year. It was the only office for which I had ever been a candidate before, and I am thankful to be able to say that I have never presented my name formally as a candidate for any office at any subsequent period of my life.

I will dismiss this topic just now for the sake of explaining a matter connected with my election. When I received from the secretary of the Board, Col. Williams, the official notification of my election, I learned that the title of the chair I was expected to fill was "Professor of Greek, Latin, Hebrew, French, German, and Spanish!" No sooner had I read this statement than I at once decided to decline the office, and I wrote to the secretary to that effect, and asked an explanation. In his reply, he wrote that I would not be expected to give instruction in any languages except Greek and Latin. He gave as the reason for the addition of the other names to the title of the professorship that the Board desired to have it publicly understood that a Department of Language was contemplated in the system of instruction when complete, but that the amount of available means at the control of the University was as yet inadequate to admit of such an extension. Furthermore, they wished me to understand that I would be expected and required to fill only that part of this chair that called for the ancient languages of Greek and Latin. This being understood, I immediately began my preparations for removal from Montrose, and for making my future field of labor in the University, and my home in Oxford. One of my first cares in leaving that region of country was to endeavor to obtain the services of some approved and devoted minister for the churches I was about to leave. I secured the presence of Rev. Joseph B. Adams, who had been long known to me as a minister of the Presbyterian Church, a respected member of the Presbytery of Tuskaloosa, to assist me at a communion meeting

at the church of Montrose. The congregation were pleased with him, and in due time he was invited to that and to some other church. He came, and I felt glad and thankful that this destitute and thinly-settled part of the country would still be supplied with the preaching of the gospel. I paid farewell visits to several of those more distant points to which I had from time to time been giving my services during my residence there. It is to me a gratifying fact that the churches I had been supplying have never been entirely vacant since I left them, although they were, in regard to this world's goods, not by any means rich. I knew that there were people of God there, "rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom." I preached farewell sermons to the white members of Montrose church, and a separate one to the colored people. I also took leave in the same way of Mount Moriah church on the last Sabbaths of my abode in Jasper county. Previous to my departure I executed to the elders of the Montrose church, as trustees, a title-deed to the eighty acres of land on which the church and Academy buildings had been erected, conditioned upon its being preserved for the benefit and use of the Presbyterian church forever, in connection with the Old School General Assembly.

CHAPTER XVI.

General Educational History of Mississippi.

I PROPOSE to pause at this point, and suspend the onward course of the narrative in order to introduce an account of the earlier movements of the State of Mississippi in the great work of education. This is appropriate to my relation to the subject at the time now undergoing review, as I was a citizen of the State, and not only so, but a practical educator also, and, in addition to these two particulars, I was for eighteen years afterwards connected with the State University.

The general remark may be made, by way of introduction, that among the matters entitled to the serious consideration of a new State, the education of her people stands in the front rank of importance. It is not more true of Mississippi, however, than of other States at their organization, that comparatively little is accomplished in this grand department of human progress, compared with what is done in those interests that are purely material. It may probably be attributable in some measure to the character of our people, always energetic and enterprising in the direction of that which is practically progressive, and which addresses itself to their more palpable interests. We are not a staid, not strictly a conservative people. While older nations look well to the foundations upon which to erect their national enterprises, and are unwilling to move until every point in their future progress is outlined and thoroughly matured and fixed, based upon solid and substantial supports, the American rushes to conclusions and grasps after results, little recking what is behind him, and as little caring for in-

tervening opposition. The subduing of the forests and reducing of the soil to cultivation, so as to render the country habitable, and to prepare the way for human civilization, are the objects first contemplated by the American settler of new regions. The pioneers of Mississippi formed no exception to this rule. Yet there remain on record abundant evidences of the fact that, at a very early period after the country came into possession of the United States, a disposition to encourage education was developed among the people of the territory. In the year 1802 Jefferson College, near Natchez, located at Washington, was founded, and in 1803 an entire township of land was granted by Congress for its support. In 1812 Congress passed an act for the location of those lands. In 1820, three years after the admission of the State into the Union, the Legislature of Mississippi granted to the College a loan of $4,000. It has been a useful institution, but has never attained very high position as a College. The record of the State, however, is honorable, since in the early period of her organized existence, from 1798 to 1848, there had been established one hundred and ten institutions of learning, under the various names of Universities, Colleges, Academies, and Schools, exclusive of schools founded upon the sixteenth sections of public lands, proving that an entire neglect of the educational wants of the people has not been prevalent in her past history. Still, our gratification in the statement of this fact is subject to some abatement by the consideration that the history of these various institutions, in the majority of cases, has shown them to have been inefficient. Of course, we except from this last remark that noble old monument of the Christian zeal and generosity of the Louisiana and Mississippi Presbyterians, "Oakland College," which, until despoiled by the ruthless hands of savage soldiery, had wrought so grandly in the service of the church and of the State during thirty years or more, in filling the pulpit, the

bar, and the honored circles of social and professional life with its alumni. It must not be forgotten, in this connection, that although Oakland, as a college, after winding up her great work, passed away, she made a bequest of the remnant of her estate to a worthy daughter, "Chamberlain-Hunt Academy," which bears the hereditary honors, and promises already to reflect permanent credit upon her eminent ancestry, and to be one of the ornaments of the church and of the State. The College also of the Baptist Church, located at Clinton, is doing a noble work for that enterprising denomination of Christians, which was begun early in the educational history of the State. The full history of these institutions is relegated as a task to others of more intimate association with them, and who have enjoyed access to wider and more accurate sources of information in regard to them. As to other efforts in the line of building up the educational interests of the State, they were mainly confined to private and local enterprise, and although, in many cases, unsuccessful, yet they were commendable; they pointed in the right direction. Even if they did fail to achieve all that was desirable and enduring, it must be attributed, in part at least, to the state of the country. The first settlers of any country must always secure, as a primary necessity, the means of living. In addition to this, a new country is generally crowded with adventurers, who come with golden visions of vast fortunes speedily to be amassed, and thus that attention which is indispensable to the success of education is directed to other objects not so worthy.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE PREPARATORY STEPS FOR THE OPENING OF THE UNIVERSITY.—ERECTION OF BUILDINGS AND INAUGURATION CEREMONIES.

THE initiatory steps in founding the University were taken in 1819, two years after Mississippi had been admitted into the Union. By the liberality of the Congress of that year an entire township of the public domain within the State, amounting to 23,040 acres, was granted to the State for the purpose of establishing a seminary of learning. The title to this land was, by act of Congress, vested in the State Legislature, *in trust*, for the support of the institution. We learn also, by further investigation, that the trust was accepted by the Legislature, and that, in pursuance of the spirit and intent of the act, "lands of great value" were selected by the State, and in due time thirty-five and one-half of the thirty-six sections were sold. Notes were taken of the purchasers with approved security, and deposited in the Planter's Bank in 1833 for collection. Several years thereafter, the first action was taken toward the application of the fund thus accruing to the purposes for which the grant was designed.

Commissioners had been appointed by the Legislature with authority to visit various sections of the State, and receive proposals inviting the location of the University in their midst. In 1841, after some discussion of all the propositions, Oxford, in La Fayette county, was selected, *by a majority of one vote*, as the seat of the institution. The citizens of the town and county had purchased a section of land, and had donated it to the authorities of the University as a site whereon to build.

In 1844 the Legislature chartered the institution, under the following Board of Trustees: J. Alexander Ventress, Woodville, Miss.; John Anthony Quitman, Natchez, Miss.; William L. Sharkey, Jackson, Miss.; Edward C. Wilkinson, Yazoo City, Miss.; Francis L. Hawks, Holly Springs, Miss.; Alexander H. Pegues, Oxford, Miss.; Wm. Y. Gholson, ————; Alexander M. Clayton, Marshall county, Miss., Jacob Thompson, Oxford, Miss.; Pryor Lee, Jackson, Miss.; James M. Howry, Oxford, Miss.; John J. McCaughan, Mississippi City, Miss.; John N. Waddel, Montrose, Miss.

Shortly after the act of incorporation, the Board proceeded to organize themselves, as already recorded on a preceding page, into a regular body, and commenced at once to discharge their important duties. The erection of the necessary buildings for the purposes of the institution was the first object to be accomplished by the Board. Accordingly, contracts were entered into with an architect, who was engaged to superintend the work, after the ordinary advertisements published in the public journals, and mechanics were employed. In the meantime, other matters demanding the close attention of the Board were in progress, and other points were in need of settlement, so that the University should be prepared to begin its operations in all its functions simultaneously. While, then, the material for the buildings was being collected and put together upon such a scale as was deemed consistent with the important nature of the great enterprise, and the means at their disposal, the Board of Trustees found themselves pressed with other equally important subjects, viz.: The character and number of those who should be by them charged with the conduct, discipline and instruction of the institution, together with the outline and curriculum of the studies to be pursued in the University by those who should seek admission into the University.

I had dismissed my school in May or in June, on account

of protracted illness, and had become convalescent about the time of my election. After this I made all the preparations above mentioned, and took my leave of the country about the last of October. The exercises of the University were to commence on the 6th of November, and we arrived in good time to become settled for the work upon which we were so soon to enter. The inaugural exercises of the University consisted of an address by Hon. Jacob Thompson, on behalf of the Board of Trustees, delivered in the Lyceum, in the Chemical lecture-room, which, at that time, was the only public hall on the campus capacious enough to accommodate an audience of any considerable size. This was responded to by the President, George F. Holmes, in an elaborate oration, a large and interested assembly being present. Thus organized, the Faculty and students were prepared to begin the practical discharge of their respective duties, but under many difficulties and inconveniences. In an interior town, remote from the great thoroughfares, and long before lines of railroads were established to any great extent, no text-books at all were to be obtained, and great delay ensued before this want and that of other essentials could be supplied. In due time, however, the new machinery was fairly put into operation. The Board of Trustees seemed gratified with the promising prospects before the institution, the citizens welcomed the Faculty to their new residence among them, and quite a concourse of newly-arrived students made their appearance upon the Campus, prepared to matriculate. Such was the scene presented on the 6th day of November, 1848, by the various parties interested in the opening of the University. We found, on our opening, that the necessary arrangements and buildings which had been contracted for were now in readiness for partial occupation, and consisted of the following; The campus, which was of very great natural beauty, was located in the centre of the section of land donated by the citizens of the town of Oxford and the county of Lafayette.

It began from a level spot facing east, and sloping gently and regularly for several hundred yards in that direction, and extending on the north and on the south to a sufficient space for a large and capacious circle, the circumference of which was occupied by dormitories, residences for the members of the Faculty, chapel, and Lyceum. This last-mentioned building being the most prominent, occupied the central point of the circle at its highest elevation, and the others on the right and left at successive points of the campus until the circle was complete. The Lyceum was an imposing structure of the height of three stories, and with a front portico supported by six large and handsome columns. It contained, on the first floor, two rooms and a large chemical theatre for lectures, and a laboratory running back, of large dimensions. In the second story was, in front, a fine room devoted to a collection of shells and geological and mineral specimens of great value and beauty; and besides this room, were four rooms for lecture and recitation purposes. The third floor was occupied at that time by the Library and similar rooms, corresponding to those of the second story. On the right and left spaces of the campus were dormitories for the use of the students, as study and sleeping apartments. These were of a uniform height with the Lyceum (three stories), and each consisting of thirty-six rooms. At first they presented a bare front, with only ordinary entrances by a small door opening into each of the three halls; but at a later period handsome three-story verandas were added to each dormitory, which presented a fine, ornamental front. The capacity of these three buildings was estimated for the accommodation of over two hundred students. On opposite sides of the campus, and adjacent to the dormitories, were erected two double-tenement buildings for Professors, also of three stories in height, each tenement consisting of six rooms, or with twelve rooms under the same roof, to each of which buildings, at a subse-

quent period, two other rooms were added on the ground floor. A three-story building was erected on the north lower curve of the campus as a chapel for daily worship. The first and second stories consisted of a ground floor, and a gallery, which extended on three sides of the house, to accommodate audiences on occasions of Commencement exercises. The third story was appropriated to the two Literary Societies of the University. These buildings were added to afterwards by others, not on the campus, but adjacent to it. The most important of these was a large building for the use of the Observatory, lecture-room, and apparatus for Analytical Physics and Astronomy, together with rooms for the family of the Professor. Then also, as the original hall for commons in the rear of the Lyceum was found to be insufficient for the accommodation of the increased number of the boarding students, a new and more capacious hall was built outside of the campus, and at some distance from it. With the exception of this last structure, and a Professor's residence, which was purchased by the Board, all the buildings were enclosed in the campus. One more building was erected in 1889, within the inclosure, for library purposes, on the lower section of the circle.

The cost of all these buildings amounted to the round sum of two hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars. The various needed classes of apparatus for illustration of the sciences, chemistry, geology, mineralogy, physics and astronomy, cost originally the sum of sixty thousand dollars.

Ample appropriation is annually made for the library, which consists of 9,000 volumes, besides 3,000 Government Reports, worth $20,000. To this adding lands and residences, leased, amounting to $30,000, and the whole sums up $335,000.

The acknowledged debt of the State to the University is $540,000, and $15,000 will be added to the further equipment of the observatory. The University campus possesses

as great attractions of natural beauty as any location of a similar nature and for similar purposes. The beautiful inclination of the grounds, and the grand old oaks which tower above and overshadow the campus, make the spot one to endear the University to those who have been privileged to enjoy its priceless advantages.

CHAPTER XVIII.

General View of Matters Connected with the First Session of the University.

THE corner-stone of the Lyceum had been laid with Masonic honors, some time previous to the period under consideration; an oration had been pronounced by (if I mistake not) John J. McCaughan, Esq., and the inauguration exercises, as described on a previous page, having passed to the satisfaction of all concerned, we felt now that the working time had arrived, when, all these preliminaries having been completed, they were to be realized in the actual grand results which had been anticipated, and which had been predicted by the friends and directors of the institution. Hopes and visions of splendid success must now be brought to the test of every-day application, and the small corps of instructors began to realize now that the heavy responsibility of putting into successful operation all the external and internal machinery of this great enterprise, was resting upon them. The progress of the session just opening—the first of the University—proved to the Faculty that the office of Professor—always arduous in the most favorable circumstances—was, in this case, by no means a sinecure, no mere child's play.

The institution, as the reader of this history may have anticipated, was made to pass through a season of experience that severely tested its capacity of successful endurance. This is traceable to two separate originating causes:

1. The confidence of the citizens of the State had received a shock so violent, in consequence of the public discussion which was held by the Board of Trustees at the

time of the election of the Faculty, that it was not possible to repress some lingering apprehensions, awakened at that period, in regard to the infidel tendencies of the University. The prejudices thus aroused were with difficulty removed.

2. Fidelity to my office as historian of this noble institution impels me to record its "lights and shadows," its dark as well as its bright days. Hence it must be stated that, in all probability, very rarely, if ever, was an institution of learning attended by a body of students so disorderly and turbulent as those of the first session proved to be, taken as a mass. True it is that, among those early students were numbered some of the first young men of the country; but in point of morals and habits of application to duty, and intellectual advancement, the large body of the students were idle, uncultivated, viciously disposed, and ungovernable. The difficulties that were connected with the management and control of the students were attributable, more than to any other cause, to the assemblage at one spot of so many untrained young men and boys, many of whom had never before attended such an institution, and whose imaginations had been allured by the traditional conception that a college life was only a scene of fun and frolic. This subject may be dismissed with the remark that, in my opinion, nothing saved the University from utter and speedy ruin, under God's blessing, but the sternest and most rigid exercise of discipline.

The Faculty, let it be remembered, consisted of but four members at this time, viz: President George Frederick Holmes, A. M.; Albert Taylor Bledsoe, LL. D., Professor of Mathematics and Astronomy; John Millington, M. D., Professor of Chemistry, Natural Philosophy, etc.; John Newton Waddel, D. D., Professor of Greek and Latin Languages. The first class, regularly organized, and the highest then known in the University, was the Sophomore, and as this class had before it the Junior and Senior classes

through which its members were to pass, of course our first graduating class with the degree of B. A. was sent forth in 1851. I have alluded, in a foregoing page, to the fact that no text-books on any subject of instruction could be procured in the town of Oxford. In this emergency, I made a special visit to the town of Holly Springs, where a classical school had been in operation under the superintendence of the Rev. Francis L. Hawks, long before his appointment to the Bishopric in the Episcopal Church. I correctly supposed that text-books, especially in my department, might be found on sale in that place, and, perhaps, a supply for other departments. I procured such as would provide for the pressing needs of our classes until better arrangements could be made. But the supply was meagre, and to the credit of those of our Faculty who were without text-books, they assembled the classes at the hours assigned to them, and delivered instructive lectures on their several subjects. President Holmes lectured regularly on History, and of this subject he was a proficient; and Professor Millington delivered lectures on the sciences of Chemistry and Natural Philosophy. Professor Bledsoe took charge of Mathematics, and engaged his students in temporary exercises, such as to him seemed best and most profitable for the time being. As for myself, I had full employment in giving text-book instruction to a number of students, who, for lack of advancement, were, most of them, only beginners. Among those, however, who were fitted for the highest class then organized, viz., the Sophomore, were two students who had been my pupils at Montrose Academy, and who were among the leading students of the class. I had students of all grades of advancement, from the elements of the Latin and Greek to the reading of Latin and Greek authors. Where a young man wished to master these languages, and had no knowledge of either, or of only Latin, in all such cases I bestowed so much of my private leisure hours as I

could redeem from other matters upon them, giving them all possible aid, even in the grammars. It cannot be denied, then, that we were engaged to the full extent of our time and opportunities in the discharge of our respective duties as professors in our several chairs of instruction; but after all that could be accomplished under circumstances so adverse, the time of our students was far from being fully occupied in profitable study, and being left, particularly at night, to themselves, abundant opportunities for concocting mischief, and temptations were pressing upon them to indulge in all manner of sinful propensities. The Legislature of Mississippi had passed an act, previous to the opening of the University, that no intoxicating liquors should be sold in the town of Oxford, or within less than five miles thereof. Obviously this legislation was designed for the protection of the students against saloons. But the history of this prohibition, like that of all similar efforts, shows that the appetite for strong drink is one that, in most instances, is so imperious as to bid defiance to law or public sentiment, and it is found that a way to gratify it will be discovered by its victims in despite of all measures to the contrary. For although, at that time, and for nine years after, there was no such method of transportation as railroads between Oxford and Memphis, those who desired to have the poison availed themselves of the less expeditious mode of commercial intercourse offered by the wagons bearing cotton to market, and, in return, bringing all goods ordered, and this among other articles. Nor was this the only mode of evasion of the law which was practiced by parties interested. Druggists, keeping it by permission, would sell intoxicants on prescription by a physician, who would be induced too easily to furnish such a paper. In this way much of the evils of disorder and dissipation among the students prevailed, and the result was that the first session of the University was characterized by great trouble

to the professors, and much severity of discipline was enforced.

The disorder after a time became so notorious as to induce a visit of a part of the Trustees to the campus, and after a conference with the Faculty, a more rigid enforcement of the rules of discipline was insisted upon.

Now, I need scarcely remark that the burden of discipline under all cases devolves upon the presiding officer. But while our President was undoubtedly a polished scholar and gentleman, it cannot be claimed for him by his most ardent admirers that he possessed the talent of government, especially of young men. Indeed, it is one of those qualities which must be born with a man, and I believe that it is as truly an innate talent as the genius of the poet. It is one that cannot be acquired, and yet it may be wonderfully improved by experience. It was a practice to which the President habitually resorted, and upon which he seemed entirely to rely for success in his government of the student-body, to make earnest appeals to the high-toned principles of true honor and gentlemanly manhood; and this he evidently deemed abundantly direct and effectual in all cases of disorder and lawless outrage that might be prevalent in any student body. I hold this theory in a modified form, and have acted upon it accordingly, to a certain extent, in my career as an officer charged with the government of young men and immature boys. These appeals I regard as of vast importance, and in my experience they have proved eminently successful, and in all, except extremely depraved subjects, they should be adopted as constituting a highly valuable part of the system of academic rule. It is not to be doubted—nay, it must be accepted as an essential element in the training of young men—that those in charge of their education should inculcate the highest principles of Christian truth, virtue, and honor. In the very outset, let it be distinctly announced to the students that they are

supposed, in advance, to be gentlemen, and that they will be treated and dealt with as such until they so demean themselves as to forfeit a claim to such a character and prove that they belong to a different class. If the instructor succeeds in inspiring them with a proper degree of self-respect, this will lead to confidence in him and such respect for him as will prevent the perpetration of any offensive or ungentlemanly conduct on their part. At the same time it must be understood by the student-body, not by issuance of threats, but as the well-known consequence of all violations of propriety, that in case such appeals should fail of their desired effect, resort must be had to more restrictive measures, and sterner methods must be adopted. Far be it from me to intimate that our first President was at all defective in his views of what constitutes true honor and virtue. I attribute to him no such deficiency. I only assume that his scholarly taste and pursuits, and his devotion to study, were so absorbing as to illustrate, in his case, an excess of the *suaviter in modo*, to the exclusion of a due admixture of the *fortiter in re*. But although the Faculty numbered but four incumbents in the outset—a body too small for effective operations—yet even this number was diminished by the enforced absence of the President, leaving only three to manage the whole student-body and the entire interests of the institution—Professors Bledsoe, Millington, and myself. The occasion of President Holmes's departure was the failing health of his child and of himself, which required that he should make a visit to Virginia for purposes of medical counsel. It was understood at the time that this withdrawal was only temporary, and that he would return when restored; but as he never returned, the official functions of presiding officer devolved upon Professor Bledsoe, as the senior member of the Faculty in the order of election. Aided by the other two Professors, Millington and myself, the affairs of the University were, after much

trouble and trial, successfully brought to a respectable conclusion, and the session closed with an exhibition by the students of elocution and composition, being an irregular Commencement occasion; but the institution was found without a President.

CHAPTER XIX.

Annual Meeting of the Board of Trustees —Election of President.—Some Statistics.—Sketch of President Longstreet and Others.

THE Board of Trustees held their annual meeting in Oxford, and found that the first and most important duty was to elect a President, to fill the vacancy caused by the withdrawal of President Holmes. Having declared the office vacant, they proceeded to fill it by the unanimous election of Hon. and Rev. A. B. Longstreet, though not a candidate, and without his knowledge of such intention on their part. This gentleman had resigned the presidency of Emory College (the Georgia Methodist College, at Oxford), one year previous to this time, and had accepted the same office in the Centenary, another Methodist College, in Louisiana. Being disappointed in the expectations he had formed by representations made to him, and not meeting the encouragement he had anticipated there, at the close of the first five months he resigned the office, and returned to Georgia, in July, 1849. It so happened that I had just arrived in Georgia, on a visit to my relatives, about the time of his return from Louisiana. The first intelligence that he received of his call to the University came to him through me. I propose now to present a brief sketch of this distinguished man, who has filled so large a space in the public eye during a large part of the present century. It is impossible, in any record of the past history of the University, to dismiss this revered and honored name with a mere statement of his connection with it and a complimentary notice of his administration of its affairs. Personal and

official intimacy with him alike forbid such a course; and peculiar relations of affection and family friendship between us revolt from any common-place notice of such a man. I must be indulged while I attempt some more extended notice of

REV. AUGUSTUS BALDWIN LONGSTREET, LL. D., D. D.

The more familiar title, that by which he was best known among his earliest acquaintances and oldest friends, was "Judge Longstreet." He was born in South Carolina, but so large a part of his life and labors was spent in Georgia that he was known more as a Georgian than as a citizen of the former State. His name was a familiar household word in my native home from my early youth. He was a pupil of my father's celebrated academy at Willington, South Carolina, which he himself has immortalized in that chapter of the "Georgia Scenes" headed "The Debating Society." There he was fitted for the Junior Class in Yale College, where, in the year 1813, he was graduated in a class of seventy. Subsequently he pursued his course in law at Litchfield, Conn., at the Law School of Tapping Reeve and James Gould, under whose instruction so many distinguished men of the South pursued their legal studies preparatory to the practice of the profession. Having entered upon the career of an attorney at law in Georgia with prospects unusually bright, he soon rose to the highest rank, and stood among the foremost of a profession in which his compeers were such men as Berrien, Cobb, Dawson, and many others of abilities equally splendid. He rapidly won for himself such a reputation and achieved such fame as a finished and eloquent orator that he could always command as large an audience as any man in the State, and there were few who were so attractive as a speaker. Under the powerful influence of God's Holy Spirit, when at the very height of his fame and popularity, he abandoned the legal profession and

the political life which was spread out before him, and, yielding to the chastening hand of his heavenly Father, in a deep and sore affliction, the loss of an only son, he accepted, with an humble and devout spirit, what he believed the call of God to the holy ministry. While engaged in this exalted service he was called by his church to the Presidency of the Emory College, located at Oxford, Ga., where, without ceasing at all the functions of a gospel minister, he added to them the duties of a preceptor of youth, and occupied this position for thirteen years, with credit, honor, and usefulness. Called, as already recorded, to preside over the Centenary College, of Louisiana, he accepted the call, but remained there only five months, when, finding the field wholly unsuited to his views, he resigned and returned to Georgia. Hardly had he arrived in the State when he received the information, from official and private sources, nearly at the same time, that he had been elected unanimously to the Presidency of the University of Mississippi, not having been a candidate for the office. Here his career was eminently successful. Entering upon the duties of his office in September, 1849, he gave his best services to the institution, and in the unparalleled prosperity of the University during the seven years of his incumbency, he reaped the truest, richest, and most gratifying reward for all his unwearying and faithful toils.

On his entrance upon the duties of his office he was confronted at once by the two difficulties to which allusion has been already made, viz.: 1, The bad repute of the University for order and discipline; 2, The reputation which had been unjustly attributed to it, but which had, by natural consequence, cleaved to the institution, that its tendencies were towards infidelity. The result of the second session (the first of the new administration) could hardly be considered a success, in the usual acceptation of that word, in all respects, there being in attendance during the whole year

only seventy-six students. It was soon ascertained, however, by the people of the State that there was at the helm a master spirit, and year by year the patronage steadily increased until the number two hundred and sixty-four was reached. Although this number was attained after his resignation, it is not to be doubted for a moment that this prosperity was due to the wise administration of President Longstreet, which had gained for the University the entire confidence of the people of the State. Naturally, therefore, the impulse imparted by his instrumentality to the University continued to operate after he had left it.

The resignation of this pure-minded, upright, and able college executive took effect in July, 1856, and I take occasion, at this point of his record, to present to the reader my estimate of him as he was known to me in the capacity of a public servant and in the sacred retirement of private life.

(1.) *As a public servant.* His character was adorned not merely with a morality current with the world, but with the enduring yet chastened lustre of Christian purity. He was vigilant without being offensive; he succeeded in impressing students with the conviction that he was solicitous for their highest intellectual and moral advancement; he was eminently self-possessed, preserving ever self-control; he governed without any ostentatious display of the machinery of government. He possessed, in a remarkable degree, the faculty of swaying the student-body during exciting scenes. Equally estimable was he

(2.) *In private life.* Genial and cordial in his temperament, he was well-known as possessed of a deep and subtle vein of rich humor, which was irresistible in its cheerful and even mirthful influence. In his heart there was no malice or bitterness, and his wit partook of no sarcasm for the person, but was aimed at the follies of the times which called for rebuke. He was charitable in his judgments, liberal in his views, and public-spirited in any good cause.

His opinions in religion and politics were preëminently decided, yet with catholicity and charity of tenderness towards the creeds of others, and with entire absence of dogmatism on the one hand, or timidity in expressing his views on the other. As a preacher, he was solemn, earnest, and instructive; as a writer, his style was chaste and beautiful; as a man, then, take him for all in all, his character will bear the closest scrutiny in public or private life. He was a kind husband, an affectionate father, a humane master, a considerate neighbor, a genial companion, an affable teacher, a wise counsellor, a man of faith and trust in God, enjoying to a degree that was remarkable the assurance of his acceptance with his heavenly Father. He tendered his resignation of the office of President in July, 1856, and retired to a residence distant some twelve miles from Oxford, where he proposed to spend the evening of his days in tranquil retirement. In this, however, he was destined to be disappointed, as on the 25th of November, 1857, he was elected President of the South Carolina College, and after two years spent there, was compelled to abandon the office and retire to private life by the revulsion of public affairs consequent upon the breaking out of the civil war. After the close of the strife he returned to Oxford, and ended his days in the midst of his family and his many friends on the 9th of July, 1870, aged seventy-nine years nine months and eighteen days, leaving as a precious legacy to his descendants a spotless reputation and the example of a transcendently noble life.

Of another of my revered and beloved colleagues of the first Faculty of the University of Mississippi I propose to give my reminiscences as a part of the history of the institution. I allude to

Professor John Millington, M. D.

An Englishman by birth and education, he had already

attained advanced age at the time of his election to the chair of Chemistry and Natural Philosophy in the University. I remember, on an occasional interview of the Faculty soon after the opening of the first session, a proposal being made that each should state his age, Dr. Millington claimed to be sixty years of age. He was reared in London, and he was the associate and pupil of the celebrated chemist, Faraday, and an associate of McAdam, the road-maker, and other distinguished savants of that period, being himself a member of the Royal Society. He was profoundly versed in the science of Mathematics and its applications to civil engineering and his own professional departments. He had published a work on Mechanics and one on Civil Engineering. He came to the New World, as I have heard from his own lips, to act as superintendent of the interests of an English company in the mines of Mexico, and after some years spent there he came to the United States, and in 1835 he was made Professor of Chemistry and Natural Philosophy in the College of William and Mary, in Virginia. He occupied that chair for twelve years, and left it to accept the same chair in the University of Mississippi in 1848. Dr. Millington was in temperament a child of nature, full of "the milk of human kindness"; guileless and a stranger to malice and envy; and his was a character of the utmost simplicity and honesty. Conscious of no fraud or deceit in himself, he suspected none in others. Faithful and just in the discharge of duty and in the fulfillment of his relative and personal obligations, he never indulged in charging others with any deficiency of these qualities until he fell a victim, as he sometimes did, in dealings with men, to the unscrupulous and unprincipled. Even then he was disposed to forgive, full of that charity that "thinketh no evil" and "covereth a multitude of sins." He took for granted that men were what they professed to be.

He was wholly devoid of any disciplinary ability, and yet

such was the universal love and respect with which he inspired his pupils, that he had no difficulty of controlling them. A member of the Protestant Episcopal church, he was devout without bigotry, and while consistently devoted to his own church, never ostracised others.

He remained connected with the University during the first five years of its existence, when he resigned to accept the chair of Chemistry and Toxicology in the Medical College of Memphis. Here he resided until the civil war began. He had possessed himself of a most beautiful and romantic home in the quiet little village of La Grange, Tenn.—fit retreat for a sage in the decline of life—and here he fondly hoped to close the evening of a long and laborious life in peace. But he was doomed to a sad disappointment of his cherished hopes. La Grange became one of the points of permanent occupancy by the army of the United States, and, although he complied with all the requirements of the government, and availed himself of all legal means of protection for himself, his family and his property, which were offered to him by the authorities of the United States, yet all this availed him nothing. He was robbed, his lovely home was despoiled by the ruthless ravages of war, and to avoid these intolerable evils he removed to Philadelphia. There he resided until the close of the war, and, subsequently, took up his abode in Richmond, Va., where he closed his life, being, as reported, eighty-nine years of age. When he closed his career in death, one of the kindest, gentlest and truest hearts that ever warmed human bosom ceased to throb.

Albert Taylor Bledsoe, LL. D.

At the time of his election to the chair of Mathematics and Astronomy in the University he was a citizen of Springfield, Ill., in the practice of law. He was born in Kentucky in 1808. He was appointed to a cadetship in the Military

Academy at West Point in 1825, at the age of seventeen, and he was graduated in 1830. He was in the military service of the United States two years, and then resigned. At West Point he received his scholastic, as well as his military training. Here also he enjoyed the great privilege of attending the chaplaincy of Rev. Charles P. McIlvaine, afterwards Bishop of the Diocese of Ohio, and who was so highly esteemed and beloved by all the evangelical churches of the country. I learned from himself that at a time of a religious interest which occurred during Dr. M's term of service as chaplain, he made a public profession of religion. Of this noble minister of Christ I have often heard Professor Bledsoe speak in terms of unqualified admiration and esteem. I have always heard that he became a minister in the Episcopal Church, and served in that capacity some years. In 1833 he became Professor of Mathematics in Kenyon College, in Gambier, Ohio; thence, after serving two years, he was transferred to the same chair in Miami University, and from 1840 to 1848, he practiced law as above stated in Springfield, Ill. He was elected to the chair of Mathematics and Astronomy in the University of Mississippi in 1848, and in 1854 he was elected to the chair of Mathematics in the University of Virginia.

With regard to his qualifications as a mathematician, I have never heard him represented otherwise than as an accomplished master of that department. My impression, formed from my association with him for several years, is that he did not find his highest interest and congenial enjoyment in that branch of exact science. I have heard him say that he regarded theology as the queen of sciences, metaphysics her hand-maiden, and mathematics next in rank.

In 1845 he had published a work, the title of which was "An Examination of President Edwards on the Will," published in 1845, of which work I have seen but one copy, and as I did not read that, I can give no report of the character

of its contents. In 1855 or '56 he published another work, much larger, to which was given the title of "Theodicy, or Vindication of the Divine Glory," and an "Essay on Liberty and Slavery." The design of the "Theodicy" was to vindicate the justice of God in permitting, or ordaining, natural and moral evil in the world. It was, I remember, also among the aims of the author, often expressed, so to characterize the system of Scripture doctrine as to avoid the extremes of High Calvinism on the one hand, and that of Arminianism on the other.

In 1854 he was elected to the chair of Mathematics in the University of Virginia, which became vacant by the death of Professor Edward Courtenay, and thus he closed his term of service in the University of Mississippi. This position he continued to fill until the occurrence of the war in 1861.

During a part of the time of the continuance of hostilities he held the office of Assistant Secretary of War. After the close of the war he visited Europe; and on his return he established himself in Baltimore as editor of the *Southern Review*, having as an associate editor, William Hande Browne, who held this position from its inauguration in 1867 to January, 1869. Professor Edward Stern then joined Professor Bledsoe for one year. In 1871 the *Review* began to appear as the accredited organ of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and was, in some sense, under its auspices. But the *Review* was still published in Baltimore, and Professor Bledsoe, as its editor, received a salary. After several unexpected changes in the location of the office of publication, from Baltimore to St. Louis, and thence to Nashville, he became the sole manager, and it was kept in existence under the management of his daughter, Mrs. Herrick, who was his associate editor and business manager for three years, and sole editor for one year, as his health began to fail. The account of his last days, furnished by his

daughter, Mrs. Herrick, of New Jersey, is full of interest to survivors who knew him in the days of his physical and intellectual vigor. It was well known that he "loved Polemics; that he had a love of truth that was very strong. This, with his fearlessness of temper, and his intolerance of humbug and cant, made his life a stormy one. But there was a marked change in the last three years of his life. His whole nature was softened and mellowed, and while losing none of the unwavering faith and fiery ardor that had always characterized him, he became more gentle and forbearing. He was stricken with a slight attack of paralysis while sitting in old Christ church, Alexandria, listening to an evangelist, on the 9th of November, 1877. His illness was creeping paralysis, and one faculty after another seemed to go down, till at last he slept his life away, surrounded by his wife and all of his children, in full Christian faith."

My last interview with him occurred in November, 1877, about the time of his slight attack of paralysis to which Mrs. H. refers above. I was in attendance on the sessions of the Synod of Virginia, in Alexandria, as Secretary of the Assembly's Committee of Education. I took tea with him at the residence of his son-in-law, Rev. Dr. Dinwiddie. On that occasion I found him as genial, and as full of humor and pleasantry as ever, and with the exception of a scarcely perceptible halting of his footstep, no change was observable.

FREDERICK AUGUSTUS PORTER BARNARD, LL. D., D. D.

In the year 1854, on the resignation of Prof. Bledsoe, Dr. F. A. P. Barnard was elected to fill the vacant chair of Mathematics and Astronomy. He had been filling various positions of honor and usefulness from his early manhood, and always to the entire satisfaction of those for whom his labors were performed. Born in the village of Sheffield, Mass., on May 5, 1809, he was graduated from Yale College, second in his class, in 1828. His life-work was that of

an educator, and his first field of labor was in the Hartford Grammar School soon after his graduation. In 1830 he was appointed tutor in Yale College. He served two years in that capacity, and subsequently he served in two Asylums for Deaf Mutes, successively in the cities of Hartford and New York. From 1837 to 1848 he served in the Faculty of the University of Alabama as Professor of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy. From 1848 to 1854 he filled the chair of Chemistry in the same Faculty. He was then made a minister in the Episcopal Church, and in 1854, soon after that event, as above stated, he was elected to the chair of Mathematics and Astronomy in the University of Mississippi. On the resignation of President Longstreet, Dr. Barnard was elected to succeed him, in 1856. In the capacity of presiding officer, first under the title of President, and then of Chancellor, he served the University until the breaking out of "the war between the States." As was the case in most southern institutions of learning, scholastic exercises were suspended, and many of the students volunteered as soldiers, under the name of "The University Grays," and President Barnard resigned, and returned to the North. He was appointed to a position in the National Coast Survey, and resided in Washington city. He held that position for a short time, and in 1864 he was called to the Presidency of Columbia College, in the city of New York. He had been heard to say while in the occupancy of the Professorship in the University of Mississippi that he would "prefer the office of President of Columbia College to any other in the United States." This office he held in active service for twenty-four years, and in 1888, although he ceased to act, he was nominally President still, until 1889, when he died, on Saturday, the 28th of April, lacking just one week of the completion of the eightieth year of his age, having devoted his time, talents, and learning to the actual business of education and the promotion of

scientific knowledge during the long period of more than sixty years.

Dr. Barnard was a man of vast learning, and was among the foremost of the great scientific men of this age. While at the University of Mississippi the minute details of college management and discipline were so exacting as to preclude the possibility of his devoting much time to the interests of science on its broader theatre. He was not by nature a disciplinarian, and although greatly esteemed, he was not successful in the line of government. I was associated with him but one year during his presidency, and I well remember that the session referred to closed with a number in actual attendance less by about one hundred than that with which it opened. I do not think that he felt that the practical work of governing young men was at all in accordance with his tastes, and he no doubt would have found his library and his apparatus to furnish a far more congenial atmosphere than the lecture or recitation-room, where he should meet a body of young students. Still, admitting this to be true, few men of the present age can show such a record of grand achievements in the wide field of literary and scientific labor as Dr. Barnard has left behind him. Some have censured him for leaving the South at the opening of the war of the States; but while, of course, we did not, and could not, sympathize with him in his preferences, at the same time who of the many critics of Dr. Barnard, placed in his circumstances, would have felt and acted differently? It was reported, with what foundation I never knew, that he used all possible influence with the authorities of the invading army under General Grant to prevail upon them to prevent the soldiers from destroying the University property when they took possession of Oxford in 1862. Be that as it may, it is a fact that the fine appointments of the Observatory, the collections, cabinets, and instruments, and the libraries, with the buildings, were less

disturbed and molested by the northern army than those of many other Southern colleges; indeed, little or no damage was inflicted upon the institution by the soldiery. Let justice be meted out to Dr. Barnard in view of all that he was instrumental in effecting in the way of scientific and literary work.

He raised Columbia College from the status of "a highly respectable and old-fashioned" American institution to the rank of a "modern university." The following extract, written since his death, and published in the journals of the time, will demonstrate his successful work truly and briefly:

"Under President Barnard's regime, the college proper, the Academic Department, doubled its strength, and more than doubled its usefulness; but this department has been overshadowed by the development of the University schools, which have grown up about it." And while it is true that "The School of Mines" was in existence when he entered upon the presidency, yet it is stated by the same writer that "where, in 1864, less than thirty students pursued their studies in a cellar, this school has grown, largely through President Barnard's fostering care, into one of the largest, best equipped, and most celebrated schools of applied science in the world." Besides all this, "the law school has quadrupled in numbers" and efficiency. The medical school is also part of the system, and the higher education of women is to be provided for by the establishment of an annex—the Barnard College for Women." According to a recent catalogue of the college, there were in the various faculties connected with it more than one hundred professors and assistants, and something like sixteen hundred students.

It is a touching incident related in regard to his funeral. After the most impressive public services had been conducted by the authorities of the college and church in New

York, his remains were borne to his native village, Sheffield, and buried there, after funeral service had been held in the the little church which had been used by him in his earlier years as his law office.

"He was the author of various scientific and educational books. The degree of LL. D. was conferred upon him in 1844, by Jefferson College, and four years later by Yale; the degree of D. D., by the University of Mississippi; that of L. H. D., by the New York University; of D. C. L., by King's College, Canada. It is said by the writer from whom I have drawn these facts, that while "no man is indispensable, yet Dr. B. was not one of the men who are easily replaced. . . . . It will be hard indeed to fill the place which his death leaves vacant."

The following statement is copied from the *New York Observer:*

"Columbia College has received a valuable bequest from its late President. Dr. Barnard left it all his property, except a few personal legacies. His valuable collection of microscopes has been given to the School of Mines; his entire library, which had been selected with great care, has been, with the exception of a few books retained by Mrs. Barnard, added to the College library. Ten thousand dollars have been set apart for helping scientific research. The bulk of the estate is to go to the College library, and to endow a fund to perpetuate the founder's name, Mrs. Barnard receiving the interest while she lives. The fund is expected to reach the sum of $50,000."

CHAPTER XX.

BRIEF SKETCHES OF MEMBERS OF THE CHARTERED BOARD.

THE original chartered Board of Trustees consisted of thirteen, who were elected by the State Senate, upon the general principle of representation of various sections of the State, so as to interest the whole of the citizens as far as possible in the University, allowing three to the town of Oxford, as the selected site of the institution. The list will be found on a preceding page, and a brief sketch of each will be here given;

1. HON. J. A. VENTRESS, from Woodville, Miss., was a gentleman of scholarly attainments, and was educated in Germany.

2. HON. JOHN ANTHONY QUITMAN was born in New York, and won the enviable reputation of being universally regarded one of Mississippi's noblest public men. He was a distinguished lawyer, and a prominent leader in the Democratic party, and equally distinguished in the Mexican war, and always a devoted friend of the University.

3. HON. WILLIAM L. SHARKEY needs only to be named in any company of Mississippians to secure the homage of admiration and respect for him as a profound jurist and a large-hearted, high-toned nobleman of nature.

4. HON. E. C. WILKINSON, eminent as a lawyer, a judge, and a publicist. I cannot dismiss this name without recalling a fact illustrative of his character as a gentleman of high and generous principles and motives of action. By reference to his course, as recorded on a preceding page in the discussion of the College curriculum, and the other preliminaries needful to be settled in order to a proper order-

ing and arrangement of the future career of the University as an institution of the higher learning, it will be brought to mind that Judge Wilkinson boldly and earnestly assumed the position—first, that the Evidences of Christianity should be excluded from the course of study; second, that no Professorship should be filled by a clergyman of any denomination. When the Board decided against his views in both of these particulars, he openly declared that he should cease to feel interested in the University, and it was supposed that he would never appear on the campus in the official capacity of a trustee; but as the University became highly prosperous and universally popular, he was present during a Commencement occasion, and in zealous discharge of his duties as a trustee, having abandoned his opposition, and in the most candid manner acknowledged that he was in error. In a pleasant interview with him, he remarked to me that he regarded the prosperity of the institution as resulting from the fact that, of its Faculty, the ministers were the most useful and efficient instruments.

5. COL. JOHN J. MCCAUGHAN figured largely in the financial history of Mississippi. He was a pronounced infidel, and resigned his membership of the Board because of their action in connecting religion and its ministers with its practical system.

6. REV. F. L. HAWKS, D. D., was a polished scholar, a refined Christian gentleman, an eloquent orator. He was a distinguished minister of the Episcopal Church, and author of a history of North Carolina. He was once a resident of Holly Springs, and a nominal presiding officer of a classical academy in that town, and afterwards was called to a church in New York. He was made a Bishop, but died without entering upon the discharge of the duties of the office.

7. HON. A. H. PEGUES was born in South Carolina, and for many years was prominent in the councils of the State of Mississippi as a Senator. He served the University with

marked fidelity as a trustee for sixteen years. He was a citizen of the county of Lafayette, and held a high place in the esteem of his fellow-citizens on account of his patriotic devotion to the true interests of his country. He passed away universally lamented, in the full communion of the Episcopal Church.

8. HON. WILLIAM Y. GHOLSON was appointed by the Senate a trustee from Aberdeen, Miss., but removed from the State at an early period, and died in Cincinnati, Ohio.

9. HON. ALEXANDER M. CLAYTON, as I learn from a memorial card published after his death, was a native of Virginia, January 19, 1801, and died in Benton county, Miss., September 30, 1889, in his eighty-ninth year. He had been a devoted faithful public servant of his country in many capacities from his early manhood. He was a judge in Arkansas when it was a Territory; then, successively, Justice of the High Court of Errors and Appeals of Mississippi for nine years; Consul to Havana under President Pierce; drafted the Secession ordinance when Mississippi severed her connection with the United States; Confederate States judge under appointment of President Davis. After the war between the States he was elected judge to the Circuit Court, and served in that office until he was removed by Governor Ames, during the times of the reconstruction of Mississippi and the other Southern States.

Judge Clayton was always a devoted friend of the University, and was always present at its meetings, anxious and zealous for its welfare. He was for some years previous to his death one of the two surviving members of the chartered Board of Trustees, the other being myself. We met in Oxford at the Commencement of 1889, and within three months thereafter, "when the summons came, he laid his burden down, and, in the peacefulness of the hope of a glorious resurrection, passed through death to immortal life." Full of years, he was laid in his grave, without a spot upon

the brightness of his honor, and lamented by all who knew him.

10. HON. JACOB THOMPSON was born in North Carolina, and was graduated from the University of that State at Chapel Hill. He held the office of tutor in that institution, but removed at a comparatively early age to Mississippi, and established himself as an attorney at law in the northern part of the State, and spent many years of his life in the town of Oxford; was an active trustee until his removal to Memphis, in 1864. During his residence in Mississippi, and his membership of the Board, he was active, zealous, and devoted to the duties of trustee. He was long a member of Congress, and was Secretary of the Interior in Mr. Buchanan's cabinet. He was singled out as an arch-rebel by the Federal government, and charged by the voice of public sentiment of the North with many accusations of treason and disloyalty, which were utterly false, and originated from the extreme madness and ignorance of the people, as well as the unscrupulous malignity of the party in power. Mr. Thompson spent his last years in Memphis, in private life, possessed of great wealth, and passed away among devoted friends, and surrounded by his own family, after having reached more than the allotted period of human life, threescore and ten years. He was a member of the Episcopal Church for many years before his death, and died in that communion.

11. Of PRYOR LEA, ESQ., so little is known to me that I am only able to state that he resided in Jackson, and I think he was a practitioner of law. He resigned his place on the Board in 1846.

12. HON. JAMES M. HOWRY was a native of Virginia, his birth-place being Botetourt Courthouse, and the time of his birth being August 4, 1804. He resided in early life in Nashville, Tenn.; he settled in Oxford, Miss., in 1836, and was elected circuit judge of that District in 1841 over two

distinguished competitors. He practiced law, after leaving the bench, in Oxford, until the year 1860, when he retired, with a handsome fortune. Like many other fortunes, this was swept away by the rude hand of war throughout the South. He was one of the original chartered Board of Trustees in 1844, and he served the University with great fidelity for more than a quarter century; he served the people in both branches of the Legislature. He died at his home, in Oxford, on April 15, 1884, in his eightieth year. He was an eminent member of the Masonic fraternity, and an elder of the Cumberland Presbyterian church. His end was peace.

CHAPTER XXI.

Financial History.

SOMETHING more minute in detail in reference to the financial history of the University than has thus far been recorded is now in order, if the true state of the case is to be known. I premise by stating that my authorities on this subject are found in the Journals of Congress of 1819; in Hutchinson's Mississippi Code from 1798 to 1848; and in a message of the Hon. John J. McCrae, Governor of Mississippi, addressed to the Legislature on February 6, 1856. From these sources the following facts have been gathered, viz.: In accordance with an act of Congress of February 20, 1819, a township of public land was granted to the State of Mississippi for the express purpose of establishing a seminary of learning; that the right should be vested in the Legislature, *in trust*, for this purpose; that the Legislature accepted the trust; that after the selection of the lands, which was judiciously made, the State pursued the policy of leasing them until March, 1833, at which time an act of the Legislature was passed, providing for the sale of the thirty-six sections; that the sale was made in 1833, on one, two and three years' time, and the notes were made payable on November 1, 1834, 1835 and 1836, respectively. The next legislation in regard to this fund, which is of importance, is that recorded in the eleventh section of "An Act for the Collection and Investment of the Seminary Fund," whereby it is made the "duty of the State Treasurer to credit the University Fund with interest at the rate of five per cent. per annum, upon all moneys heretofore paid into the treasury, from the time when so

paid to the passage of the act; and, thereafter, to credit said fund with interest at the rate of eight per cent. per annum upon all moneys due from the State to said Fund."

Upon this subject there has been a great deal of discussion and feeling on the part of many, and the question has been extensively debated even of late years. It will be my object, under this state of the case, to record only the facts of history, together with their natural and legitimate inferences. Accordingly, it is a well-known fact that, after the sale of these lands, and during the crisis consequent upon the wild and reckless financial management of the State, very nearly all the proceeds of these sales were lost, the remnant saved from the wreck amounting to less than two hundred thousand dollars!

Again, I quote next from the message of His Excellency, Governor McRae in 1856, these words, viz.: "By applying the rule laid down in this law to the ascertainment of the condition of the fund on the 1st of January, 1856, it is discovered that the sum due from the State to the University Fund was at that time $1,077,790.07. The Governor then proceeds to deduct the appropriations made from time to time by the Legislature for the establishment and support of the University, computing interest upon those advances by the same rule as had been followed in computing interest upon the fund itself. The amount of these appropriations, with interest added as above computed, reached the sum of $203,465.58, which, deducted from $1,077,790.07, leaves as the actual sum due seventeen years ago, $874,324.49.

This calculation, I very well remember, was made by my immediate predecessor, Dr. F. A. P. Barnard, at that time Professor of Mathematics, whose skill in such calculations no one ever doubted. This state of facts was made to the Legislature, but that body persistently refused to acknowledge the indebtedness of the State to the University to

that amount. The utmost that could be obtained from the Legislature was the recognition of the sum of less than $200,000, referred to above, on which the State had been paying interest, amounting to about $11,500 per annum.

From an article contributed to a magazine in 1856, published by the students of the University, before the war, the author of which, I think, was not given at the time (yet known to me), I quote the following, and of the truthfulness of its statements there is no doubt:

"To the honor of the Board of Trustees then in office, a bill was prepared and introduced into the State Senate, acknowledging this amount, of $874,324.49, as due to the University from the State, when, forthwith, opposition of such a character was manifested as to induce its friends to accept a poor substitute, and to withdraw the original temporarily. The substitute passed the Senate, no one dissenting, but when it reached the House it encountered a fierce, bitter, and almost malignant opposition. After a long and arduous struggle, however, it was passed by that body by a majority of two, and received the signature of the Governor. The amount thus appropriated, $20,000 annually, and was accepted by the Trustees, very properly, under protest. The Legislature considered this only as an appropriation, and not by any means an acknowledgment that the State was under the slightest obligation to pay, either principal or interest, of the debt claimed by the Trustees. The Board, on their part, did not ask for on *appropriation*, they only demanded the payment of a just and lawful debt.

In my capacity of a chronicler of the history of this institution, I record, as the next fact which marks its financial life, that since the war, at a time when the University was in great need, a similar effort was made by the Board of Trustees to obtain an acknowledgment of the States's indebtedness to the institution, which was again defeated, and in lieu thereof, a similar appropriation of $20,000 per annum

then was nominally granted. During my term of service as Chancellor a calculation was carefully prepared by my esteemed and distinguished colleague, L. C. Garland, LL. D., at my request, which makes the indebtedness of the State to the University at that time over a million and a half of dollars, after deducting all appropriations. I may just here make the history of this subject complete, in so far as my personal connection with it is concerned, by stating the following fact, which occurred after the war, during the military and provisional government of Mississippi, usually denominated in political circles "The Carpet-Bag Dynasty." During the term of service of the Hon. James L. Alcorn as Governor, and when the Legislature was overwhelmingly "Radical" in its political complexion, the affairs of the University engaged a large share of the attention of the Legislature, and, with other of its interests, the material aid and support of its practical work was much discussed. The Governor being a Southern man by birth and interest, was, in my judgment, a true friend of the University, when others of different professions gave him no credit for the possession of any such feelings. At all events, he recommended to the Legislature the passage of a bill appropriating the sum of $50,000 annually for ten years to the support of the University, and in the body of the act it is carefully inserted that this is in lieu of the annual appropriation made by law for the adequate support of the University. The question was raised whether this includes the $11,500 annual interest on the remnant of the debt saved out of the financial wreck of the original indebtedness, which was also acknowledged in 1844, or whether it refers only to the $20,000 of which the University had been the recipient for many years by appropriation. The latter was undoubtedly the true and just construction to be placed upon this clause of the act.

I have thus placed on record so much of the financial his-

tory of the University as had actually been realized during the term of my service as Chancellor. But a few additional facts cognate to this subject will be here submitted, in order that the whole may be presented at once and an intelligent view may be taken of the matter.

The appropriation of $50,000 per annum seemed at the time so ample for all purposes, and so munificent withal, that at a meeting of the Board of Trustees subsequently a resolution was passed by which the tuition fee (only $50) was abolished, throwing the halls of the University open to the free access of all Mississippi students. This, though done with the very best intentions, proved, in its practical working, to be somewhat disastrous to the finances of the University.

To go back a few years, it is known that previous to the war the income from all sources amounted to about $40,000 in cash, and very frequently in gold. After the war, for some years, the same amount was generally realized from the same sources, viz.:

1. Interest of the acknowledged debt.....	$11,500
2. Appropriations, including Law Department,....	22,000
3. Tuition fees, say	8,000
	$41,500

Now, although the income had become nominally $50,000, it was paid in State warrants, at a discount of twenty-five to thirty per cent., the State loses $12,500 to $15,000 annually; so that the $50,000 only gave to the University $37,500, and often $35,000, *less* by $4,000 to $6,000 than it was before the appropriation had been made. Obviously thus, at that time, the abolition of the tuition fee operated to the damage of the University.

A consideration has been urged against the recognition of the indebtedness of the State, and the consequent obligation to pay the annual interest, and that is, *the poverty of the*

people. The fact may be admitted, and yet the debt may be acknowledged. A part was acknowledged at the outset, and interest was regularly paid over to the trustees for years. If the State owed any part, it owed the whole; if it be a just debt, the State had no right to repudiate one dollar of it upon the simple plea of poverty. The whole debt might long since have been acknowledged, and a rate per cent. decided upon that would have been reasonable, and which the people would have been abundantly able to pay. Even four per cent. on the entire amount would have yielded $65,000 or $70,000, a sum amply sufficient to have met the necessities of the University, and entirely within the resources of the great State of Mississippi.

Let one remark be added to all that has been written thus far. The University was not endowed by the State, but its endowment was furnished by the Congress of the United States. The State, by its Legislature, is declared to be merely the trustee of the fund. It was accepted on the condition that it was to be managed for the benefit of a seminary of learning. Coming to the facts of history, it appears that not even the interest has been paid. It is, therefore, not one of the schools that are supported by *taxation* in the proper sense of the word.

At the close of my administration, in 1874, the debt remained in the same unrecognized condition. It was, however, pressed ceaselessly by the trustees upon the consideration of the Legislature; and as there were several prominent alumni of the University members of the Board and of the Legislature, it is gratifying to learn that the authorities of the State were finally prevailed upon to acknowledge the indebtedness of the State in the sum of $544,061.23, by the income of which the institution is supported in a manner far more in accordance with the claims of such an establishment than it has ever been before.

CHAPTER XXII.

Statistical Statements.

TO resume the regular statement of the progress of the University, we may now briefly record some of the statistics connected with its affairs. It began its prosperous career from the auspicious period of the accession to office of the second President, the eminent and beloved Longstreet; for although the number in attendance during the second session (which was the first of his administration) was small, yet in all the elements of true prosperity, in orderly deportment, diligent application, and successful intellectual progress on the part of the students; in fidelity and success on the part of the Faculty, the institution was far in advance of its status during the first session. The patronage of the University during the actual operation of its work can only be accounted for upon the fact that the confidence of the people of the State had been steadily increasing. The following is a condensed statement of the number in attendance during its successive sessions. It must be remembered that the Law Department was not put into actual operation until 1854, and the number of students previous to that year and to the year 1856–'57 is credited only to the Department of Arts. The number of students registered during the first session, in

1848–'49	80
1849–'50	76
1850–'51	134
1851–'52	144
1852–'53	130
1853–'54	158

1854–'55	173				
1855–'56	225				
1856–'57	264	In the	Law	Department	10
1857–'58	178	"	"	"	17
1858–'59	168	"	"	"	12
1859–'60	216	"	"	"	13
1860–'61	226	"	"	"	29
1861	....	"	"	"	19

This brings the statement of patronage to the opening of the war in 1861, when the exercises of the University were suspended until October 2, 1865. During these four disastrous years the history of the University has little to attract interest. Professors Quinche and Hilgard had, in some nominal way, charge of the grounds, buildings and apparatus of all kinds. But one fact may be recorded as extraordinary in the story of similar invasions by a victorious foe, and even where the military bodies may not be hostile. The fact to which I here allude is, that although the large body of General Grant's army were encamped around Oxford, on the campus, the buildings being occupied, to some extent, by officers and private soldiers, for some time during the winter of 1862, the amount of damage that was done, as the result of this occupancy, was far less than was apprehended. True, some injury was inflicted upon the surroundings, but by the overruling kindness of Divine Providence in protecting the interests of the University, it was made an exceptional case, widely differing from the fate of other institutions of learning in the South; as it was more frequently than otherwise the case that dire disaster followed the line of march of the enemy wherever it led them in the neighborhood of such institutions, from which, in some cases, they never recovered. Accordingly, when the war closed, and the foot of the invader no longer trod the soil of the South, the University was found to be almost intact, and ready to pursue its assigned career as the leading school of the State for the instruction of its youth.

We may resume the statistical statements by anticipation and dismiss that topic.

The attendance in the first session after the close of the war was in

1865–'66	193	In the Law School	—
1866–'67	246		1
1867–'68	231		24
1868–'69	214		13
1869–'70	208		15
1870–'71	120		6
1871–'72	260		3
1872–'73	302		11
1873–'74	208		14

It will appear, from the list just given, that two of the sessions show the number in attendance to have been under two hundred, and one of them (1870–'71) to be exceedingly diminished. This admits of easy explanation. The session during which there were in attendance 193 students, was the first session after the close of the war, when the whole State was reduced to distressing poverty, and the means of the people at large had been so utterly exhausted that it could not possibly be expected that the University could be very extensively patronized. It was indeed a most gratifying surprise to its friends that the patronage attained the high figures of 193 at such a time of distress in its pecuniary condition. As to the session of 1870–'71, the small number, 120, is accounted for very easily and naturally from the fact that it occurred during the existence of what is known as the Provisional Government of the State, or what is more easily remembered, the "Carpet-Bag Government," when there was a general or widely extended apprehension prevailing among the people that colored students were to be forced upon the University. This state of feeling, however, did not continue long, as the theory to make the University a mixed school was never carried into effect, so the very next session the number reached 260.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Changes and Additions in the Faculty from Time to Time.—Danville Theological Seminary.—Other Changes in the Course of Study, and Other Facts.

IN the year 1853 occurred the first resignation of office in the Faculty. Dr. John Millington, who was Professor of Chemistry and Natural Philosophy in the first Faculty, tendered his resignation of the office, after having held the chair only five years, during which he had served the University with fidelity and zeal, and established a character of unblemished purity, and had won the affections of all who had been his associates, whether in the Faculty, among the students, or in the community around him. He had been called to occupy the Professorship of Chemistry and Toxicology in the Memphis Medical College, then in its incipient existence. The sequel of his life and labors is given in a preceding chapter.

In the succeeding year (1854) Dr. A. T. Bledsoe resigned the Professorship of Mathematics and Astronomy, and entered upon the duties of the same chair in the Faculty of the University of Virginia, succeeding Professor Courtenay, deceased.

Dr. Bledsoe's vacancy was immediately filled by the election of F. A. P. Barnard, D. D., LL. D., who was then filling a chair in the University of Alabama. Dr. Barnard remained incumbent of this chair in Mississippi until 1856, when he was elected to the Presidency of the University upon the resignation of Dr. Longstreet. He filled this position as President until 1859. After this year he served under the title of Chancellor until 1861, at which time he

resigned the position, on the outbreak of the civil war, and returned to the North, as already related.

This is the proper place, I think, to record an event of some interest and importance in my life, and to which I sometimes recur, as affording me much honest gratification. I do not believe that it ministered to any increase of vanity or self-conceit, for the simple and sufficient reason that the honor conferred was one which, strictly speaking, I did not deserve, since my conscience assured me that, at the time of my election, I was much better qualified to teach Latin and Greek than to fill the chair of Pastoral Theology and Church Polity in a Theological Seminary.

It was at the meeting of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in Buffalo, N. Y., in the year 1854, seven years previous to the disruption of the church which occurred in consequence of the civil war, that I received, by unanimous election of that body, the Professorship of Pastoral Theology and Church Polity in the recently-organized Theological Seminary at Danville, Ky. No intimation of such a state of things being in prospect had been communicated to me, and the intelligence of this action of the Assembly was sudden and unexpected. Many were the communications received by me from official and other sources of the fact. But I was not long in doubt as to the course to be pursued under the circumstances. I respectfully, but most positively, declined to accept the position tendered me so honorably by the Assembly. My reasons were based upon several grounds, any one of which appeared to me to be valid and sufficient. In a general sense, I felt a reluctance to leave the South, to go even so far north as Danville. I felt, too, that the field in which I was then laboring was one full of promise of great usefulness before me. I was known, and had already succeeded in securing the cordial esteem and attachment of a large constituency in my work for the people of the State, and I felt greatly attached to them.

Besides all this, the work of instruction in which I was serving the public at Oxford was that for which I felt myself more competent, as I had spent my life, in large measure, in that form of teaching; that I had never turned my mind to the subjects required to be taught in that Professorship so as to be accomplished sufficiently to fill the chair to the credit or benefit either of myself or of the Seminary. For these reasons, while I felt truly grateful to my brethren for the high consideration which led them to confer upon me the honor of such a distinction, I felt constrained to decline its acceptance.

In the appendix to this memoir the correspondence upon this subject is given in full, if any one may desire to read it. I did feel honored by it, as the vote by which I was elected was practically unanimous, and such men as Robert J. Breckinridge, Edward P. Humphrey, John T. Edgar, and J. E. C. Doremus, R. B. McMullen and James Park, and many others, wrote urging me to accept the office. Nevertheless, I felt that I could not conscientiously accept it at the time, and considered my reasons *then* strong and satisfactory. I have, I think, great cause of thankfulness *now* when I review the subsequent history of events that have passed throughout this region of country, that I was divinely guided in this decision, and guarded from doing that for which I should have been led into troubles not then foreseen, but which have since been fully developed.

That I might have accomplished myself, by hard study, to fill that chair, I did not doubt, but be it remembered that I would have found myself, at the very outset, surrounded by an atmosphere of theological learning and critical acumen from which I could not expect to escape criticism, and to which I did not desire to expose myself, accompanied by whatsoever fraternal charity on the part of others. I was unwilling, therefore, to exchange a work for which I had prepared myself by years of hard and incessant appli-

cation and practice in the impartation of instruction to students, and in which I was giving satisfaction, for one which was to be subjected to an ordeal so severe.

In the year 1856, after I had filled the Professorship of Ancient Languages for eight years, the Board of Trustees decided to separate the joint chair into the two Professorships of "Greek Language and Literature," and of "Latin and Modern Languages." The privilege of making a choice of these two languages, that which I preferred, was granted me by the Board, and I, accordingly, selected the Greek, and filled this chair only one year, making my first term of service in the Faculty of the University just nine years. My work was by no means light while serving in the first arrangement of instructing all the classes in both languages. This I kept up during seven years, from 1848 to 1855, at which time the Board appointed as a tutor in this department, George Tucker Stainback, who was a young preacher of ability in the Cumberland Presbyterian church, and who had been graduated with distinction in the class of 1854. On the separation of Greek and Latin, and my being assigned to the chair of Greek, Mr. Stainback left the Faculty, and the Trustees appointed as my tutor, Wm. Alexander Eakin, who had been a classmate of Mr. Stainback's, and who had graduated with the highest honors of his class. I will add just here, that Mr., or (as he afterwards became) Dr. Eakin, had been, when quite a boy, a pupil of mine in the Montrose Academy, and from his early youth to the day of his untimely death, he was among the most unexceptionable characters with whom I was ever associated. We were together again in the Synodical College at La Grange, Tenn., and although he had attended a regular course of medical lectures, and had been a practicing physician, he considered it his duty to enter the ministry. Such was his modesty and humble estimate of himself, that he said to me once, that he felt as though he was only fit to preach, if at

all, to the colored people. But just while he was studying the subject prayerfully, and before he had taken a decided step in the direction of the ministry, it pleased the great Head of the church to call him away to a scene of higher service above. He died in 1861.

The changes which occurred in the University Faculty before the war, and up to the time of my resignation, in 1857, consisted of the organization of a chair of Metaphysics and Ethics, the first incumbent of which was Rev. N. M. Crawford, D. D., a classmate of my own, who was graduated from the University of Georgia in 1829, and a sketch of whose career I have given in a preceding chapter. He filled this chair only one year, being called to the Presidency of Georgetown College, in Kentucky. This Professorship was subsequently filled by Rev. G. W. Carter, D. D., and by Hon. L. Q. C. Lamar, LL. D., successively, until the war of 1861–'65. There was also an Instructorship of Modern Languages established by the Trustees in 1850, and to this position was elected a foreigner, by name Adolph Sadluski, as the first incumbent, but whose health was so deplorably feeble that he was prevented from ever entering upon the work of instruction at all. He was succeeded by a very unsuitable man, by name William A. Strozzi, also a foreigner, who was in office only two years. Both of these men came recommended as competent for the position; but perhaps there have rarely been found such complete failures as they both proved to be. The Board decided to combine the instruction in the modern languages with the Professorship of Latin, and in 1854 elected Wilson Gaines Richardson to that chair. Mr. Richardson had been graduated with distinction from the University of Alabama, and had filled the place of Tutor of Languages in the service of his Alma Mater for some time. He had also spent some years in France, and had perfected himself in the knowledge of Modern Languages. He held the office first of Modern

Languages alone for two years, and after the combination of Latin languages, in 1856, he served in this chair until 1859. He was a fine scholar, but did not succeed in the management of students. He was successively a member of the Faculties of Davidson College, North Carolina, and of Central University, Kentucky, and of Austin College, Sherman, Texas. In his later years he entered the Presbyterian ministry, and died after a brief service in that sphere of effort. He had charge of but one field of ministerial labor, and his churches were greatly pleased with him as a minister and his work was fruitful of good results, and he passed away deeply lamented.

There was also established previous to my resignation a School of Governmental Science and Law in 1854, and to this chair was called, as the first Professor, William F. Stearns, LL. D., a very prominent and eminent lawyer, who was a Northern man by birth, but had spent many years in Mississippi in the practice of his profession. He held the office with great efficiency as an instructor until 1861, when the exercises of the University were suspended. He committed suicide after the war.

The vacancy in Dr. Millington's chair was occupied very briefly and very inefficiently by a minister of the Baptist Church, Rev. J. C. Keeney. He was elected in 1853, and resigned, by request, in 1854. His class was one consisting of young men of rather extraordinary intelligence, and his want of qualification was so excessive as to be obvious upon slight test in his lecture-room, and this led to the resolution, on the part of the class, to invite him to resign. He declined the invitation of the young gentlemen, but at the ensuing meeting of the Board of Trustees he became convinced that "discretion was the better part of valor," and he decided to succumb.

His place was filled in 1856 by the appointment of Capt. E. C. Boynton, a graduate of West Point, who held the

office before the war until the suspension of the exercises of the University of Mississippi, when he returned to the North. He was an accomplished chemist, but a profane swearer, and under provocation gave full vent to his irritation in words unbecoming any man under any circumstances, but far more unbecoming an instructor of youth.

On my resignation of the chair of the "Greek Language and History of Greek Literature," the vacancy was filled by the election of Professor Henry Whitehorn, A. M., in 1857, which he filled until the occurrence of the war, when he also went North. My acquaintance with him was very slight. I only knew he was an Englishman, and had been teaching in Holly Springs some time. As to his accomplishments as a Greek scholar I had no knowledge; but I was impressed by a little incident that occurred in my lecture-room just previous to his election. Being on a visit to Oxford, he called at my room very naturally, in order to ascertain my mode of instruction. It was my custom to teach prosody in all the poetical authors read by the students in both languages. As the class was pursuing the study of some one of the Greek tragedians, not now recollected, I practiced them in the scansion of the lines in the trimeter verse. At the close of the hour he volunteered the remark that "if it was expected that he would teach prosody, it must be understood beforehand he would not do it." I learned afterwards that when he went North he was made Greek Professor in Union College, Schenectady, N. Y.

Other professors held office during my ante-bellum term of service, and up to the time of the war. Among them, I recall the name of Lewis Harper, who was placed in the chair of "Agriculture and Geological Science." He was a German, and the degree of LL. D. had been conferred upon him by some unknown authority, but he seemed to take peculiar delight in appending it to his name on all occasions.

He disappeared from our circle after serving two years —from 1854 to 1856. He was located somewhere in the Northern States after leaving the University.

On the promotion of Dr Barnard to the Presidency, Jordan M. Phipps, who had passed successfully through the University classes from 1848 to 1851, and having earned high position among the graduates, and had been appointed Adjunct Professor of Mathematics in 1852, now succeeded to the full Professorship of Mathematics in 1856. He held the office also until 1861. Professor Phipps was, after the cessation of hostilities, an attorney-at-law and Mayor of Oxford. My last knowledge of him is that he was a citizen of Florida. He was a quiet, unassuming gentleman, and was much esteemed as a faithful and competent teacher.

There were in service of the University before the war, only two adjunct professors, both of Mathematics. There were, however, eight tutors during the same period, but how they were distributed among the departments is not recorded.

This brings the history of the University down to the opening of the civil war.

CHAPTER XXIV.

Review of Private and Domestic History from 1848 to 1857.

AT the time of my election to the chair of Ancient Languages in the University of Mississippi, in 1848, mine was a family circle consisting of the beloved wife of my youth, who for sixteen years had been the light and joy of my home. She had been the sharer of my bright and prosperous days, the sympathizing comforter of the many seasons of my gloom arising from changes of fortune that have been referred to in this record. She had felt, with me, the heavy burden of parental grief in the death of two lovely little boys just as they were growing more and more winning and attractive, and we were still the happy parents of four children, two daughters and two sons. Mary Robertson, whose birth has been recorded on page — of this memoir, and who was now our eldest living child, as Moses, our first-born, had died in 1839, and John Newton, our fourth child, had passed away in 1846. Mary was now eleven years of age, and had always been remarkable for her fondness for books and perseverance in pursuing with earnestness all those studies which are ordinarily adopted in the best training-schools, even though for some of them she might not have manifested any considerable native taste or talent. As an illustration of this, she certainly was not naturally a musician, but she did not hesitate for a moment to embrace the fine opportunity afforded her of pursuing with ardor the study of music; so that she became proficient as a performer, and was thoroughly acquainted with the principles of the science. As she afterwards became a teacher, she had a number of pupils in this delightful

study, and, as in every other department of her course of instruction, she was always successful as a teacher. Her career may form the subject of a future chapter.

The other little girl, Elizabeth Woodson Pleasants, was born on June 16, 1840, at our Alabama home, and was now in her ninth year. She was a very timid and sweet-tempered child, and had inherited her mother's gentleness and her intellectual brightness. These two, with their two little brothers, George Robertson, named for his maternal grandfather, nearly four years old, and John Gray, called for Rev. Dr. John H. Gray, of Memphis, who married my wife's sister Jane. Then, to render our circle complete, the mother of my wife, and the grandmother of these children, Mrs. Mary Collier, was also an honored and beloved member of our household.

It was under such circumstances of domestic prosperity and comfort that I entered upon the discharge of my professional duties. I was in my thirty-seventh year, in fine health, and with a bouyant spirit, which, although rather easily depressed, was as easily restored to its normal tone. When I review that period of my life, after long years of vicissitudes since experienced, it seems to me that I was then just so situated as to enjoy life in the sense of enjoyment, as that word should be understood by a rational being. I had a happy family, a wide circle of attached friends, who watched my new career with profound interest and kindly anticipations of my future success. I was surrounded also with all those outside circumstances calculated to advance and to facilitate my progress, a competent salary, and a comfortable home.

As I have not referred to my finances minutely for a considerable space, I will take leave of that subject just here by stating that my remnant of indebtedness for Alabama lands was still unsettled when I entered upon my term of service at Oxford; but by the kindness of my friend, Mr. William

M. Lewis, then of Gainesville, himself a member of the Land Company which held my promissory notes, I was enabled to make an honorable compromise of the entire amount of my liabilities and to settle it on terms perfectly easy and satisfactory. Thus, by a kind Providence, I was enabled to find myself, in due time, relieved of the whole debt which had burdened my heart and life as a horrid incubus for so many dreary years. I was then free from all such incumbrances for an interval of years, and was only brought under financial pressure again by the misfortunes which fell upon the South, resulting from the issues of the war of 1861–'65. These come into review in their proper place, and to them no allusion need be made further for the present.

Things moved on with comparative smoothness in the University, and nothing that need be related here occurred beyond the preservation of the even tenor of our way as an institution of learning. The orderly deportment of the student body was commendable, as a general thing, and the discipline of the University would compare favorably with that of any contemporaneous school of the higher learning.

In 1850, there was brought into a very great state of excitement the discussion of slavery, growing out of the question before Congress of the admission of California as a State, and of New Mexico and Utah as territories. The canvass for political elections in Mississippi became extremely bitter, and the two parties were arrayed against each other under the names of Unionists and Disunionists. During the progress of the political excitement, much that was to be deplored occurred in the State, under the pressure of hostile feeling, among which was the assassination of the venerable and beloved President of Oakland College, Rev. Jeremiah Chamberlain, D. D. There had been held an election for members of a State convention in Mississippi, a card was published in Port Gibson, asserting that a student

had been expelled from Oakland college for expressing Disunion sentiments in a speech. This statement was at once contradicted by Dr. Chamberlain and a trustee in a published card. The author of the charge gave as his informant an individual of the neighborhood by the name of B——. The latter went on the 5th of September to Rodney much excited, and after drinking deeply, left for home, and called on his way at Dr. Chamberlain's house. The doctor suspecting nothing, met B. and stood talking with him at the gate. Two of the doctor's family—his wife and daughter—sitting on the veranda, heard part of the conversation that took place, and that B. called their father repeatedly a liar, to which he replied: "That you will have to prove." Upon this Briscoe leaped from his buggy, and with a loaded whip felled Dr. C. to the ground twice, and as he rose from the second fall, stabbed him to the heart with a bowie-knife, and then jumping into his vehicle left the spot. The doctor was just able to get back to the house, and on being asked if he was hurt, answered, "I am killed;" fell and expired. The death of Dr. C. was universally lamented, and the cruelty of the deed struck the community and the State with horror and amazement. A vast concourse of mourning friends assembled to pay the last tribute to his memory on the next day, the 7th of September, as he was laid to rest in the college cemetery. A writer who gave an account of the dreadful occurrence in a journal, adds the following:

"On the afternoon of the same Sabbath Briscoe was found by a negro in a thicket in a dying state, giving every indication of having poisoned himself. He lived a few hours after being found, and then passed to the bar of his Judge."

I allude to this sad event for the two-fold reason that, First, it is a very closely-connected fact with the history of education in Mississippi, of which Dr. Chamberlain had

been one of the most distinguished pioneers, and a most laborious and successful promoter. Second, his death made a vacancy in an important position, to the supply of which the Board of Trustees found themselves confronted with great difficulty. Only a very brief space of time had elapsed after Dr. Chamberlain's death, when I most unexpectedly received the following dispatch: "Dr. Chamberlain has been murdered. Will you entertain a proposition to become his successor?" To which I immediately replied, "I cannot entertain such a proposition. Will write."

I had many reasons for declining the proposition, which need not be mentioned—all of them—but the leading and most influential objection with me was, that I shrank from the weighty responsibility which I felt was inseparable from the presidency of any college or school of the higher learning. This was among the most earnest of many calls to induce me to leave the University, but I had no disposition to comply with this or any other at that time.

But this I mention as but an incident of no greater importance than the evidence it furnishes that I was becoming better known as an educator, and was somewhat in demand. During this period of my life I was supplying the Presbyterian church in Oxford every Sabbath. My labors as the stated supply of that church commenced soon after my arrival, being invited by the session to take charge of it, as it had just been made vacant by the dissolution of the pastoral relation existing between the church and Rev. S. I. Reid. This was my field of regular labor as a minister of the gospel. I, however, frequently spent a Sabbath at other points with my brethren and in attendance upon the meetings of the Presbytery of Chickasaw, of which I had become a member by dismission from the Presbytery of Tombeckbee. I also attended the meetings of the Synod of Memphis, Chickasaw being one of its constituent Presbyteries. This reference to my ministerial office brings to

mind a fact which seemed at the time to create some dissatisfaction in certain quarters. It will be remembered that the President, Dr. Longstreet, was a minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In this capacity he was very naturally invited by his brethren to visit them and preach in their churches. He also (as I was in the habit of doing in my church), made it a point to attend, when convenient, the ecclesiastical meetings of the M. E. Church. But in these occasional calls from our place of labor, neither he nor I ever absented ourselves from duty for any time that was lost to the true interests of the University. Our classes lost no appreciable advantage, as we were not absent simultaneously, and, indeed, our visitations abroad among other bodies of our brethren and fellow-citizens evidently tended to increase the interest of the people of the State and communities around us in the University. But this habit of ours, for some reason not exactly known to me, gave offence to some member or members of the Board of Trustees, and they passed an act at one of their meetings annexing, as a penalty to such absences of the members of the Faculty during the session a fine of ten dollars for each day so lost from duty. The effect of this action of the Board was offensive to Dr. Longstreet, insomuch that he immediately determined to tender his resignation. I did not regard the matter in quite so serious a light, for the reason that it would not, in my opinion, ever be enforced, because I was convinced that when it became known to the public that such an act had been passed, it would be denounced by all right-thinking men, and knew that the Board would not be willing to defy public sentiment to such an extent. On Dr. Longstreet's views on the subject being made known to an influential trustee, he made such representations to Dr. Longstreet as convinced him that the action would not interfere with the freedom of the Faculty; and so the matter was quieted, and no further provocation being offered, Dr.

Longstreet withdrew his intention to resign. I made no demonstrations of any intention of resigning, but was strict in keeping an account of my days of absence from the University, so that, at the close of the summer session, when the half of my salary fell due, I presented my claim to the Treasurer for payment, giving the University credit for ten days' absence at $10 per day, making $100, which, deducted from $1,000, left me entitled to only $900. The Treasurer glanced at the paper when I presented it, and, laying it aside somewhat lightly, he paid me the salary as usual, taking my receipt for one thousand dollars. So ended this incident, at one time wearing a rather threatening aspect; but nothing more of fines inflicted for absence was ever mentioned. In the year 1850, when I had been connected with the University about two years, my attention was called by a friend to a notice published in the *Herald*, a journal edited in Louisville, Ky., by Rev. W. W. Hill, D. D., stating that, at the commencement of the University of Nashville, the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity had been conferred upon me by the authorities of that institution. This printed notice of the honor was the first intimation I had received that such a thing had occurred; nor had I ever received the slightest intimation that any of my friends had contemplated such a suggestion to the Trustees as bestowing upon me this distinction.

But enough of this, and I only add that the man who has no more tenable claim to honor and esteem than that which is the result of the accidental attainment of a title, or a degree, is to be pitied. Such distinctions, whether of a civil or military, or even ecclsiastical origin, have become of late years so plenteous and almost universal as to have lost their value, if, indeed, they were ever possessed of much.

"Act well your part, there all the honor lies!"

But it was not the will of my heavenly Father that I should live a life of entire freedom from trial and trouble. So, that I

might realize more and more that this world is not the rest of God's people, I was destined soon to realize another series of afflictive providences. A sweet little boy, sent to us in 1849, after passing about one year with us, sickened and died. Two years after this, my dear wife, as the result of the premature birth of her eighth child, passed away, and left our circle in impenetrable gloom. The infant survived its entrance into this scene of suffering only thirteen hours. Mother and two infant boys lie sleeping in the cemetery of College church, near Oxford. "Lovely and pleasant in their lives, in their death they were not divided!" Thus passed away one of the truest, purest, and holiest of her sex. A devoted mother, an affectionate sister and daughter, an exemplary and tender wife, an indulgent mistress, a conscientious Christian, all the warmest affections of her husband, children, mother and sisters were concentrated upon her. Her servants were so attached to her that they only needed to know, in order to do her will, and there was no service that would have been deemed too hard for them to perform for her. For nineteen years we had lived together in as much real happiness as is allotted to mortals here in this world. Sure am I of one thing, that if ever I was unhappy in any degree during this period it could not be traced directly to her as the originating occasion. Such inevitable events of an afflictive character as occasionally were experienced, were shared one with another; but she never caused me a pang of grief, except when I laid her away in her grave. Then it was that I became conscious of the truth of the trite and worn line of the poet: "How blessings brighten as they take their flight!"

These regrets are unavailing now. It is the common experience of most of us that we might have done more to brighten the lines of the dear departed when we look back over the returnless track of past life.

Time wore on sadly enough with me under these circum-

stances, and I had now to learn what I had never known before, the true meaning of the word loneliness, the loneliness of the heart! My professorial course passed on without any interruption until August, 1854, when, on the 24th of that month, I was married to Miss Mary A. Werden, of Richmond, Berkshire county, Mass. This lady had been in the South for some years, as a very fine teacher, and had been known to my first wife and myself from 1849, and in consequence of a peculiar state of her mind in regard to the salvation of her soul, she had been the object of our kind regard and sympathy. I still continued my services as stated supply of the Oxford Presbyterian church, and as she had attended my ministry, she had been much affected and very deeply distressed during a season of a revival meeting that occurred about that time. I had frequent occasions to converse and pray with her. She received very little comfort from all this intercourse, as her feelings seemed profoundly melancholy. She became better satisfied however, in process of time, and made a public profession of religion, and connected herself with the Oxford Presbyterian church. I was impressed with her as a lady of fine talents and culture, her piety and the general excellence of her character, and after three years we were married. But her health, from being frail and delicate, grew worse and worse after marriage, bidding defiance to the skill of the most eminent physicians South and North, whose services I could secure. She continued in this condition for over seven years, and during these years I had placed her first under the care of the then eminent surgeon and specialist, Dr. Marion Sims, of New York. Afterwards she was under the care of Dr. Parker, of the same city, and all to no purpose. I finally accompanied her, in the early months of the year 1861, to her native place, our design and plan then being that she should spend the spring and summers in the North and her winters in the South. Soon after her

arrival in Massachusetts, having seen her comfortably located among her friends, I returned to our home, and not long after this the terrible civil war began its devastations and ravages, and all communication by travel and by mail was stopped between the North and the South, save that a single page of epistolary intercourse was allowed between parties, which was first to be submitted to the inspection of Federal officers appointed for that purpose. While this was better than no interchange of letters, it was unsatisfactory. Several letters of this kind passed between us during 1861, but after one received from her in January, 1862, I heard from her no more until, by letters from her friends, the intelligence of her death, on the 10th of April, 1862, was received by me long after it occurred. In a letter from her sister I learned that she grew more and more feeble, until she ceased to write, and passed away calmly trusting in her Saviour. It seemed that in her feebleness she had been attacked just three months previous to her death with a violent cold, which settled on her lungs and carried her off in rapid consumption.

Of one thing I feel some satisfaction, and that is, she had been abundantly provided by me with the necessary funds in gold to meet all her wants, and the testimony of her friends in our last intercourse is that she lacked for nothing whatever. It pleased God in this way to cast this shadow of her broken health upon the period of our wedded life. But I humbly accept it as among the "all things" that He has declared "work together for good" to us.

CHAPTER XXV.

Establishment of a Church College by the Synod of Memphis.—Election of a Faculty.—Discussion in Relation to the Location.—Choice of La Grange, Tenn.

ABOUT this time there had arisen among the people of the region now covered by the territory of the Synod of Memphis, and embracing the Presbyteries of Northwestern Mississippi and those of Western Tennessee, extending as far as the northern boundary line separating the State from Kentucky, very considerable discussion of a scheme for the organization of a college, to be strictly controlled by the Presbyterian Church. The subject was brought before the Synod, and it was known that such an institution would be organized at the earliest possible period consistent with prudence and favoring prospects. The result was that various towns presented proposals to the Synod inviting the body to locate the college in their midst, and offering inducements to that effect. Among those places there were prominent the city of Jackson and the town of La Grange. The former place had, for many years, been the seat of a college, which was one of three institutions founded by the State of Tennessee, viz., East Tennessee University at Knoxville, now known as the University of Tennessee; Nashville University in the centre, and West Tennessee College, at Jackson. This last institution was in possession of an endowment of $40,000, which was yielding an interest of $2,400, punctually and promptly paid. It had also been tolerably successful in securing respectable patronage. But being a State institution, it was sometimes under a president of one denomination, and

again under a different administration. At one time it had been under a minister of the Episcopal Church (name now forgotten), and at another time under the Rev. James Holmes, D. D., a man of very great reputation as an educator, the fruit of whose labors in the field of education are still found in every walk of prominent usefulness in the land. He was succeeded by Rev. Charles S. Dod, once pastor of the Presbyterian church in Holly Springs, Miss., a gentleman of fine abilities and of considerable experience as a college officer. Reference will be made to this institution at a subsequent period of this history. Sufficient for our present purpose it is, to state that the trustees of the West Tennessee College, at Jackson, proposed to the Synod of Memphis to enter into a joint partnership, whereby they should furnish to that body the use of their endowment, as to the annual interest, and a good building already erected, as an inducement to its location in Jackson, upon condition that the Synod on its part should raise a like sum of $40,000 as their part of the endowment. In passing, let it be noticed that these Trustees did not make this offer of their money and other franchises as a gift, but only as a loan, inasmuch as it was a State institution and could not become the property of any denomination.

The proposition from La Grange consisted in the offer of a subscription list of $37,500 made by the Masonic fraternity to the Synod, to induce the body to locate the college at that place. The Masons had been engaged in endeavoring to establish a college under their own auspices for some time before this enterprise of the Synod was inaugurated. But they had found it a difficult matter to accomplish; and, no doubt, felt that the prestige of the church would greatly facilitate the object in view, and that the establishment of a college under the name and endorsement of Presbyterians would induce many to subscribe to the endowment, and so render it certain that the college

would be a success. But it proved that it was more in appearance than in reality that this proposition was advantageous. For while it seemed that the amount of the subscription offered by the Masons was nearly as large as that offered by the Jackson Trustees, there was this material difference between the two propositions: the La Grange subscribers were not required to pay the principal of their subscriptions, but only the interest annually due at six per cent. On the other hand, the proposal made by the Jackson people was of an amount already paid in, and well secured, which was yielding the annual interest punctually and promptly. Now to many persons it appeared the plain and prudent course for the Synod to close in at once with the offer made to them by the Trustees of West Tennessee College, which was a certainty, and which admitted of immediate occupation, and the inauguration of the proposed church college without any delay. Accordingly, at a special session of the Synod of Memphis, which was held at Ripley, Miss., in the summer of 1856, the question of location was discussed, and all the proposed inducements were fully considered, in earnest and animated debate, and the decision reached by Synod was to accept the proposition of the Masonic fraternity, and to locate the college at La Grange, Tenn. Justice to the Synod demands that it should be stated here, that the paramount objection against the offer from Jackson was that the college there was a State institution; that the funds constituting its endowment were given by the State, and that these funds were not furnished by Presbyterians alone, but by the tax-payers at large, and that the endowment was not offered to the Synod in fee simple, but only as a loan, which might be withdrawn at any time; and that other denominations through the State might object to this partnership of church and State; therefore, the Synod should avoid this sort of co-operation and accept the offer from La Grange, as the Masons made

no conditions, but that the Synod should establish their college in the town of La Grange, and they surrendered to the Synod all the property and franchises possessed by them. The Synod of Memphis accepted these proposals and determined to proceed at once to organize a church college at the town of La Grange, Tenn.

At a meeting of the Synod, subsequently held at La Grange, on or about the 23d of October, 1856, the subject was discussed, and it was at this meeting that the election was made of a President and a Professor of Ancient Languages. For the former office the Synod unanimously selected Rev. John H. Gray, D. D., who at that time was pastor of the Second Presbyterian church of Memphis. The universal popularity of Dr. Gray drew upon him the attention of the entire Synod, both of the laity and the ministry, and, indeed, the people of the community of all the various classes, both secular and religious. He was made President, and was commissioned soliciting agent on this occasion, although the full organization and opening of the college was necessarily postponed until the 1st of October, twelve months thereafter. Dr. Gray signified his willingness to accept the call of the Synod, subject to the decision of the Presbytery of Memphis. After a great struggle and opposition to this movement, on the part of the Second church, the pastoral relation was dissolved. He occupied the intervening time in building a residence in La Grange, and visiting various parts of the Synod in prosecution of his agency for raising the endowment of the college, and he removed to La Grange in 1857, and entered upon the discharge of his duties as President of the college and stated supply of the Presbyterian church in that place. The Synod, as above stated, had filled the Professorship of Ancient Languages at the same time, in October, 1856. To that position I was called—not being a candidate—but I gave no intimation of any willingness to accept, nor did I

encourage my friends to expect that I would do so in the future. I remember that during the progress of the discussion in Synod at La Grange great enthusiasm was manifested by all, and among others who took prominent part in the consideration of the subject, Col. E. H. Porter, an elder of the Third Presbyterian church, Memphis, made a most stirring speech, which he closed by placing at the disposal of the Synod 10,000 acres of Arkansas lands as his donation to the college to aid in its endowment. This created quite a sensation, and every one felt elated by the prospects opening before the college.

CHAPTER XXVI.

Reluctance on my part to Leaving University of Mississippi.—Inducements Held Out.—Resignation and Removal to La Grange.—Action of Faculty and Students on my Resignation.

I RETURNED to Oxford, however, with not the least desire to leave the University of Mississippi. I had peculiar views in regard to college and university life. During the presidency of Dr. Longstreet, my close and intimate association with him as a colleague and a friend, led me to realize that the responsibilities inseparably connected with the office of President were exceedingly weighty, and that the successful discharge of the duties of that office required qualities rarely possessed. Hence, whenever it was suggested to me, as was often done (particularly by Dr. Longstreet himself in casual conversation), that I would most probably succeed him as President, I invariably shrank from the thought of such an event. I did not conceive myself at all, by natural constitution or experience, fitted to occupy such a position. I had found the chair of a professor sufficiently responsible for my qualifications, both as a teacher and disciplinarian, but I had become sufficiently self-assured, and perhaps self-confident in my ability to meet the requirements of the subordinate office, so that I felt quite at home in my position in the University, and was by no means dissatisfied with my surroundings. In addition to all this, I was most comfortably sustained in the matter of salary and home, as well as in my standing with the Board and Faculty. I allude to these facts merely to show why I did not feel inclined to change my sphere of effort, or my field of labor. In others words, I greatly pre-

ferred the chair of Ancient Languages in the University of Mississippi to the position of President of that institution, or of any other, and I considered it greatly preferable to the same chair in an untried and unestablished institution, such as the Synodical College at La Grange. This view of my entire satisfaction with my position at Oxford will serve to explain my reluctance, or, perhaps, a better word would be, indifference, toward La Grange. I gave no decision of the question of acceptance, however, for many months. During the summer of 1857, Dr. Gray, while on the agency to which he had been appointed, in soliciting funds for the endowment of the college of the Synod, came to Oxford during the exercises of the annual commencement of the University, on a visit to me. He was very earnest and pressing in his appeals to me to accept the professorship at La Grange, and go at once, on the *nominal* salary of $2,000, without a house. My salary at the University was $2,000, promptly paid, and a very good residence, rent free. I was not in a pecuniary condition to live without my salary, and the prospects held out at La Grange were by no means flattering as to a support. I finally said to him that the verbal promise of the Board at La Grange was not sufficient, as they had no endowment from whose returns the salary could be realized, and that, although I entertained the most exalted estimate of their integrity, as well as of their regard for me personally, I could not consider them individually responsible, nor was there any wisdom in depending upon the arrangement as matters now stood. My position surprised him, as he was a man of confiding temperament, and always believed that what men promised they would perform. I had not such faith in men—not even in Presbyterians. The steadiness of my refusal to go on the terms presented so wrought upon him that he proceeded to apply at once to certain men, friends of his, and myself also, who pledged themselves to guarantee my salary for five

years, at $2,000 per annum. Accordingly, after much prayer and deliberation upon the subject, I accepted, not without some misgivings as to the wisdom of the plan.

I tendered my resignation to the Trustees, then in session, which, at first, they declined to accept. They appointed a committee to wait on me to request me to withdraw it. But on my persisting in resigning, they expressed a wish that it should take effect at once, as it was important to have the vacancy filled during their session then in progress. The reason for this last intimation was that I had proposed that my resignation should not take effect until January, 1858.

It will not, I trust, be regarded as savoring too much of egotism that I refer at this point in the narrative to the testimonials voluntarily presented to me on occasion of my resignation, by various parties with whom I had been associated for nine years. Those who accorded to me these parting tokens of friendly regard and esteem were: First, the Trustees; second, the Faculty; and third, students of the University. In all these papers, such were the expressions of regret on the subject of my dissolving the relations which had so long held us in close association, and the terms of high appreciation conveyed to me of my services, that I could not but feel a sympathetic and responsive awakening of sadness at the idea of departure from a scene of so much congeniality in my surroundings, and I acknowledge a pang of regret at the thought that the step had been decided upon which would then bring to an end so pleasant a period of my life. But there was now no alternative, and not many days passed until I bade adieu to the campus, and the buildings, and all the familiar scenes where I had dwelt in such mingled peace and care, such toil and success, such joy and sorrow, such times of comparative happiness and times of *deep affliction.*

My removal from Oxford to La Grange occurred in the vacation of the University. My family, consisting of four

children—Mary Robertson, Elizabeth Woodson Pleasants, and the two little boys, George, aged thirteen, and Gray, ten, with their grandmother, Mrs. Collier—went to La Grange on the first passenger train that passed from Oxford northward over the railroad, whose name then was the Mississippi Central railroad. I remained a day longer in order to settle all my private affairs, and having chartered two freight cars, loaded them with my furniture, books, and papers, and went up on the next day, arriving at La Grange about the 22d of August, 1857. Just previous to this the Trustees of the college had elected two additional professors, viz.: Professor John R. Blake, of Georgia, and Professor James L. Meigs; the former to the chair of Natural Philosophy and Chemistry, the latter to that of Mathematics and Astronomy; Professor Meigs having served as chief engineer on the Memphis and Charleston railroad. Of these two gentlemen it will be my pleasure to write more fully hereafter. The college was now furnished with as full a corps of instructors as the means of support in possession would justify.

CHAPTER XXVII.

Visit to the North and Opening Prospects of the College in 1857.—General Train of Work.

THE first service which I was called upon to perform in my new field of labor, was to go to the Northern cities on an agency to purchase an apparatus for the departments of Natural Philosophy and Chemistry, and to secure, if possible, some contributions for a library.

I arrived in La Grange about the 22d of August, 1857, which was on Saturday, and preached in the Presbyterian church twice on the Sabbath. On Monday, the 24th, I took the train on the Memphis and Charleston railroad for a tour North. The most travelled route at the time was *via* Chattanooga, Atlanta and Augusta, Ga., etc. My only stop on the way was at Greensboro', Ga., where I met for the first time Professor John R. Blake, Professor-elect at the new college at La Grange. He was then professor in a very flourishing female college, presided over at that time by Rev. I. S. K. Axson, D. D., afterwards pastor of the Independent Presbyterian church of Savannah, Ga., for so many years. Of Professor B. I shall have occasion to write more hereafter. At this point, I continue the account of my trip North. I spent several weeks in Boston, New York, and Philadelphia. In Boston I made a purchase of one thousand dollars' worth of scientific apparatus and instruments, paying five hundred dollars of the purchase money in cash, which was the whole amount at the command of the Trustees at that time, the remainder being allowed on short

credit, and paid fully and promptly at the time due. On my visit I met with many of the prominent ministers of the Presbyterian Church, among them Rev. Dr. Potts, of New York, and Dr. John Leighton Wilson, who died in the service of the Southern Presbyterian Church, at the head of the Committee of Foreign Missions, in 1886. At the time I met him in New York he was acting as Assistant Secretary of the Board of Foreign Missions of the Presbyterian Church. This, it must not be forgotten, was four years previous to the separation of the Southern Presbyterians from the Northern Presbyterians, and the organization of the Presbyterian Church of the United (Confederate) States. Dr. Wilson had been a missionary in Western Africa as far back as 1837, and perhaps earlier than that period. But was obliged to return on account of the loss of health of his family. When the late civil war began he returned to South Carolina, his native State, and on the convention of the Southern Presbyteries to constitute a Southern Assembly, meeting in Augusta, Ga., in December, 1861, he was made Secretary of Foreign Missions, and served in that capacity until his death, in 1886. I also met for the first and only time, Rev. Charles Hodge, the venerable and beloved Professor of Theology at Princeton, N. J., where I spent two days, during the vacation in the college, but after the opening of the session of the Theological Seminary, as I was present at the afternoon Sabbath conference conducted by him in the lecture-room of the Seminary. I remember walking with him through the Princeton cemetery, and having pointed out to me the graves of the Presidents of Princeton College, Burr, Edwards, Davies, Finley, Stanhope, Smith, and Green, besides the first professors of the Theological Seminary, the venerable and saintly Alexander and Miller. I stopped a few days also in Philadelphia, where I met my friend, Dr. Cortlandt Van Rensselaer, then conducting the *Presbyterian Magazine*, devoted to the cause of

Christian education. He was also Secretary of the Assembly's Board of Education at that time. He made the college a present of a fine bell, and through his influence I obtained quite a contribution of valuable books from the publishing house of Lippincott & Co. I then left for La Grange, where I arrived about the 3d of October.

The college opened about this time with the following Faculty:

JOHN H. GRAY, D. D., *President, Professor of Ethics, Metaphysics and Sacred Literature.*
JOHN N. WADDEL, D. D., *Professor of Ancient Languages.*
JOHN R. BLAKE, M. A., *Professor of Natural Philosophy and Chemistry.*
JAMES L. MEIGS, M. A., *Professor of Mathematics and Astronomy and Civil Engineering.*
GEORGE R. GRANT, M. D., *Lecturer on Physiology.*
HON. JOHN W. C. WATSON, *Lecturer on International Law.*

The two last gentlemen were not regular members of the Faculty, but promised to deliver lectures as they found opportunity, Dr. Grant being an eminent physician of Memphis, and Mr. Watson equally eminent at the bar, residing in Holly Springs, Miss.

The Board of Trustees appointed by the Synod consisted of three classes, composed of ministers and elders in equal numbers. Each class contained eight members, whose term of service expired after the first appointment in three years, subject to reäppointment. The President of the college was *ex officio* President of the Board of Trustees, and the other officers of the Board were a Treasurer, Assistant Treasurer, and Secretary.

It is a noteworthy fact in the history of La Grange Synodical College that it opened with the full number of the regular college classes: Senior, Junior, Sophomore, and Freshmen, and, besides, a scientific class and a primary school. The Seniors were *seven;* the Juniors, *seven;* the Sophomores, *fifteen;* the Freshmen, thirty; the scientific class,

fourteen; and the primary school, forty-six; the total in all departments numbering 119. Of these there were from Tennessee, seventy-three; from Mississippi, forty; from Louisiana, four; and from Arkansas, two—total, 119. The location of the college, just near the line separating Mississippi and Tennessee, accounts for the large proportion of students from the former State. At all events, it was a fact that three of our newly-organized Senior class left the University of Mississippi, and three of our Junior class had also been students in the same institution, and entered at La Grange. No effort was ever made by our Faculty, or by our Board of Trustees, to draw off students from the Mississippi institution. It is to be attributed to the fact that this new enterprise was a church college, which caused a rally of the Presbyterians of the two adjoining States to its patronage and support, and the further fact that the people were satisfied with the manner in which the college had been organized. Its Faculty were all well known to the surrounding community, except Professor Blake, whose endorsement was of a high order of excellence from Georgia, and who was not long in taking high rank among his colleagues. The Trustees were men of the highest character in the ministry and eldership, and the confidence of the people of the immediate community speedily became enthusiastic, and almost universal in the success of the college. My many warm friends in the churches of Oxford and Hopewell (near Oxford), to which I had been so long ministering, and to whom I had been warmly and deeply attached, manifested great attachment to me and seemed very unwilling that I should dissolve the pleasant relations which had existed for nine years in uninterrupted harmony. It was, therefore, settled that I should still supply these churches with preaching, going down every Saturday by rail, and returning on Monday morning, by the early train, in ample time for my duties in the college. This arrange-

ment, by which I preached to Oxford and Hopewell on the usual Sabbaths of our engagement, continued until the close of the year 1857. Then, as my labors became unusually heavy in the fact that I was obliged to add a horseback ride out to the country to my railroad ride, whenever it became the time for that appointment, I gave up the country church, and continued to supply Oxford twice in the month and the La Grange church twice per month, in which latter church Dr. Gray preached during the alternate Sabbaths. But the labors of the year 1858 were very heavy indeed on me; so much so, indeed, that at its close I felt that it was gradually undermining my health somewhat seriously. I felt obliged, under these circumstances, to give up Oxford. I thenceforward confined my labors to the church at La Grange, still dividing the supply of that pulpit with Dr. Gray, and riding down to Lamar, a very weak and poor church in Mississippi, south of La Grange a few miles, every alternate Sabbath, and preaching to the few excellent Presbyterians who resided in that neighborhood. I recall the fact now, that on nearly every day when I preached there, Judge Alexander M. Clayton, whose fine country home was near the church, attended with his family. The judge and I had been long associated in the University of Mississippi, he and I having been members of the chartered Board of Trustees, and then from 1848 to 1857 he still was an influential Trustee, and I a member of the Faculty. I was always happy to number him among my friends in whom I had confidence. Before dismissing this part of my record, I will mention a very pleasing incident connected with my reminiscences of Oxford and its excellent and always beloved people. At the close of the year, when I ceased to preach for them, the ladies of the Presbyterian church sent me a beautiful present of a silver pitcher, two goblets, and a large handsome salver, and accompanied the present with a beautiful letter, as follows:

"Oxford, Miss, *January* 25, 1859.

Rev. J. N. Waddel, D. D. :

"Dear Sir,—When in the Providence of God we were called upon to sever the ties which had bound you to us through so many happy years, it was with the sad conviction that we were losing a wise counsellor, a faithful friend, and an affectionate pastor, that we resigned ourselves to the will of God. We strove, without repining, to bid you farewell, following you with our prayers and blessings, to that new field of labor in which we knew you might find more numerous and powerful friends, but in which we felt sure you could find none more ardent and attached than those who, in this little church of Christ, have been for years guided by your counsels, encouraged by your exhortations, and edified by your example. Time has only served to strengthen these feelings, and to perpetuate, as far as may be, by the the simple gift which accompanies this note, the remembrance of a relationship which God has blessed abundantly to us, and, we trust, rendered happy to you. Be pleased to accept it as a slight memento of our confidence and affection, a perishable token of the imperishable gratitude and regard which we will ever cherish toward you.

"With the warmest wishes for your future usefulness and happiness, Truly and kindly yours,

"(Signed), "J. E. Rascoe,
M. A. Wendel,
S. Isom,

"*Committee in behalf of the Ladies of the Presbyterian Church, Oxford, Miss.*"

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Sketches of the Members of the Faculty.—Rev. John Hannah Gray, D. D.—Professor John Rennie Blake, A. M.—Professor James L. Meigs, A. M.

AS I gave sketches and reminiscences of my colleagues in the University of Mississippi, it is but due to the love and esteem I have always entertained for those with whom I was associated in this college, so intimately and harmoniously for four years, that I should attempt some portraiture of their characteristics as presented in the positions they occupied. I propose in this place to insert a very full and minute account of the life and labors of Dr. John H. Gray, the first presiding officer of the college. This notice of him was published not long after his death, which occurred in 1878, a period never to be forgotten by those who recall the fearful desolation and ravages of the fatal yellow fever epidemic prevailing in Memphis and the surrounding country during that year. I make no apology for inserting it here, inasmuch as I am its author, and hold it as being, with all its faults, true to the lamented subject, about whose character there is no fear that anything too good can be recorded. He has been released from his toils on earth, and has long since entered into his heavenly rest, and while those who knew and loved him and profited by his "work of faith, his labor of love, and his patience of hope," need no aid in recalling him to memory, as "the righteous shall be in everlasting remembrance," let his name and his life be perpetuated to those who come after, as the model of imitation for all who may read this humble narrative.

1. Rev. John Hannah Gray, D. D., First President of La Grange College.

The subject of this sketch was one of a class of men—always few in number, but still to be found—witnesses for Jesus Christ, of the loving and beautiful fruits of the Christian religion. Some represent that religion as "the Pauls," others as "the Peters," and yet others as "the Johns," among the disciples. Of this last class, Dr. Gray was universally admitted to be a shining member, "a living epistle, known and read of all men," insomuch that he was lovingly and affectionately styled by his more intimate friends, as 'the beloved disciple.'"

He was born in February, 1805, in Abbeville district, South Carolina, within the bounds of Hopewell church, of which his parents were prominent members, and his father an honored and leading ruling elder. Descended from such parents, it is not by any means surprising to find that Dr. Gray was, at a very early age, made by the Holy Spirit a subject of that grace of God the fruits of which he displayed in a most extraordinary manner during his whole subsequent life, both as a private member and as an eminent minister of Jesus Christ. His heart and mind were at once turned to the gospel ministry as his future life-work, and he was sent for his literary preparation to the University of Georgia, then under the presidency of Dr. Moses Waddel, father of this writer. There Dr. Gray pursued his course of collegiate study to his graduation, which he accomplished with high distinction in 1823, in the nineteenth year of his age. Being in due time licensed and ordained, he entered upon the great work of preaching the gospel, having found as his first field of ministerial labor, the then newly settled and attractive region of Western Alabama. Here he spent twelve or fifteen years of laborious and successful toil in the work of the ministry. He was for many years pastor of the church of Mesopotamia, and afterwards

of Bethsalem, both in the county of Greene, and then, in the hope of securing better health for his family, he removed to Jasper county, Miss., in 1841. Thence he was called to the pastorate of the Presbyterian church of Vicksburg, and removed to that city in 1843, and resided there for about two years, when, in obedience to another invitation, he went to the young and rising city of Memphis. Here he organized the Second Presbyterien church, and conducted the services for some time in a building near the river bluff, temporarily converted from a warehouse into a house of worship. Here his labors were blessed, and his devoted and enterprising people resolved to "arise and build." In this church Dr. Gray served God and His people for fourteen years with eminent success, universally esteemed as a model pastor. His blameless life, his tender sympathy with all classes of sufferers, his fidelity to the duties of his sacred office, his tender, affectionate, and wise pulpit ministrations, all combined to clothe him with an influence and a power for good such as few men have ever wielded in Memphis. His name is still as ointment poured forth among the survivors of those days when he dwelt among them, and went in and out before them, as first pastor of the Second Presbyterian church of Memphis. It was during his residence as pastor here that the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred upon him by the University of Nashville, then under the presidency of the eminent scholar and divine, Philip Lindsley, D. D. In a former chapter of this memoir is recorded fully the account of the dissolution of this happy and fruitful pastorate, consequent upon the call of Dr. Gray to the presidency of the Synodical College at La Grange. The success of the college under his presidential administration from 1857 to 1860, was unparalleled. The prosperity which marked its career, in the fact that the average number of students for the few years of its existence was far beyond what is usual in young colleges, and

that the advancement and orderly and gentlemanly deportment of the students proved to be so creditable to themselves and to their Faculty, are attributable, no doubt, in great measure to the wise and judicious management of the President, in which he enjoyed the cordial co-operation of his attached colleagues.

The close of the disastrous "War between the States" found Dr. Gray again in his La Grange home, surrounded by the ruins of the college and the town, and the material work in entire desolation, and all that could be reached by the ravages of war passed away "among the things that were!" But gathering up his last energies, he zealously devoted himself, "heart, soul, mind, and strength," to the work of the ministry, during ten years of toil, preaching in the weakened churches—La Grange, Saulsbury, and Middleton—as often as possible, until increasing debility, arising from a chronic affection of some years' standing, compelled him reluctantly to cease preaching altogether. His last days were clouded and saddened by the loss of the devoted wife of his youth, and so, by slow and increasing infirmities, he passed to his rest, on Sabbath, September 22, 1878, aged seventy-two years, seven months and seventeen days.

Let us sum up the prominent traits of his character, that they may be left on record for the future character of the church's history.

1. Naturally amiable and affectionate, these traits, refined and elevated by grace, made him a devoted husband, a tender and loving father, a faithful and constant friend, a sympathetic pastor, an earnest, beseeching pleader with men to seek the salvation of their souls. If he had an enemy, it was unknown.

2. "The chastening of the Lord," which he had borne in the loss of wife and nine of their eleven children, and many others dear to him as kindred and friends, wrought upon him the influence of rendering him only more tender and

gentle, weaning him more entirely from the things of earth, and attracting him more eagerly to heaven. He said to one, "I pray for resignation to live!" Such was his longing "desire to depart and be with Jesus."

3. As a preacher, he never "served God with that which cost him naught." His sermons he very diligently prepared, especially accompanying his studies with prayer, realizing the great Reformer's experience, "*bene orasse, est bene studuisse.*" His pulpit exercises were abundant in gospel truth, and his exhibitions of God's love in Jesus Christ were peculiarly tender and impressive, uttered in a voice exceptionally sweet and winning, while his naturally noble face was irradiated with the spirit of burning love to God and man. One of his ministerial brethren, who often heard him, once remarked, after one of his happiest efforts, "I surely never preached, so different are my sermons from this."

4. He was the very soul of benevolence. It will never be known until the great day what he accomplished in this line of Christian work—how many tears he dried, how much suffering he relieved, how many wounded hearts he aided in binding up, how much he contributed of his substance to the treasury of the Lord; but it is written in "the Book of God's remembrance."

His remains lie in Elmwood cemetery, in the family lot, beside those of the dear departed who preceded him, and his released spirit has doubtless been welcomed to the presence of his divine Master with "Well done, good and faithful servant; enter thou into the joy of thy Lord!"

2. JOHN RENNIE BLAKE, A. M.

The gentleman whose name heads this part of the history is a native of South Carolina, and at the time of his election to the Professorship of Natural Philosophy and Chemistry was in his thirty-second year. He was a graduate of the

University of Georgia, of the class of 1846, closing his term of scholastic training with high distinction in a class remarkable even then for intellectual and scholarly ability, many of whom attained eminence in the various departments of professional life. Professor Blake was a student of the Lawrence Scientific School at Harvard University, taking special courses under the celebrated Professor Agassiz, and was a private pupil of Agassiz in his laboratory on the seashore at Nahant, Massachusetts; and on his nomination by Professor Agassiz, he was elected corresponding member of the "Boston Natural History Society." He was also a pupil of the great chemist, Horsford. He was elected, as already stated, in 1857, to the chair of Natural Sciences in La Grange Synodical College. On the dissolution of the College, in 1861, he was elected Professor of Natural Philosophy and Astronomy in Davidson College, North Carolina. He served during the administrations of Drs. J. L. Kirkpatrick and G. W. McPhail in this chair with such eminent success as an instructor and practical manager that, on the death of Dr. McPhail, Professor Blake was appointed chairman of the Faculty of Davidson College. In this capacity he served the college with signal ability and phenomenal success until 1879, when, on the change of this provisional form of administration, to which Professor Blake had always been opposed, he became, by election, Vice-President of the College. In 1884 he tendered his resignation of the chair he had so long filled, but was induced to withdraw it by the earnest appeals of those interested; but renewing his resignation in 1885 persistently, the Board accepted it, with complimentary expressions of high esteem and regret on his severance of a laborious term of faithful service of twenty-four years.

The above running sketch of the life and labors of this most excellent and successful college educator is given as a clear demonstration of the estimate placed by the friends

and patrons of education upon his services, talents, and learning, of all which La Grange was the recipient for only four years. I do not consider, however, that full justice will have been accorded to him without something additional, first, as a statement of his standing and character at La Grange, and then as to the estimate placed upon him at Davidson College. For the first I am responsible, as it consists of a true statement of my own knowledge of his course during his brief sojourn with us of the four years passing between 1857 and 1861.

Professor Blake's connection with La Grange College began in October, 1857, and from the very outset of his career to its close he manifested the utmost devotedness of all his energies, intellectual and moral, to the work of building up the cause of Christian education. Of his qualifications, by personal training and study and experience, we have already made ample mention; and no man with whom I have ever been associated was ever more zealous and successful in imparting the benefits of his own learning and acquisitions to those under his instructions. He was faithful, as all who knew him can testify, as a disciplinarian; and while sufficiently rigid in exacting of his pupils the requisite diligence and devotion to preparation for all scholastic exercises and just in awarding to all the credit due to their performances, he was courteous and approachable on all occasions by the students. He was much beloved and highly esteemed as a member of the Faculty by his colleagues, never shrinking from the assumption of his full share of all the responsibility devolving upon himself. The characteristics thus displayed in his daily work and association with the college department of his life were as clearly manifest in the community and in the church of La Grange. He was, at an early period of his settlement there, made an elder of the small body of believers in the town, and carried out the full details of duty marked out as belonging to that

highly-honored office. He was in this office, as in all others in which he was called to serve, "not slothful in business, fervent in spirit, serving the Lord." As a Christian, he was esteemed as devoted, and ready for every good word and work, and as upholding the ministry by his prayers, counsel, and sympathy. As a citizen, he was faithful and conscientious in all the demands of his country; and from the beginning of the terrible civil dissension of 1861, which resulted in the temporary ruin of the material interests of his native South, he was an unhesitating and open believer in the righteousness of our cause. While I write he still lives, retired from all the responsibilities of the teacher's life, but at his own homestead in South Carolina, *in otio cum dignitate*, enjoying the entire confidence of the community and the church around him. After a tolerably long, and, assuredly, a well-spent life, he is surrounded by the friends of his early boyhood, awaiting, not in idleness, but in active application of all his powers to usefulness in every way, the tranquil old age, or the peaceful summons to the gracious reward provided for all those who hold out faithful unto death.

I am indebted to a work called *Semi-Centenary Addresses—Davidson College*, published in 1887, for some authoritative statements in regard to Professor Blake, of which I gladly avail myself. I make no apology for devoting thus much of my history to this sketch, as I hold that it is but carrying out in reality the injunction to give "honor to whom honor is due." Says Rev. Dr. Rumple, of North Carolina:

"Professor Blake's administration was characterized by excellent order, attention to study, harmony among the Faculty, and thorough scholarship among the graduates. He governed by the Faculty, whose executive officer he was, and the College never had a more satisfactory or successful period than those six years."

Rev. Mr. Milner, of Georgia, remarks in reference to Professor Blake: "His subsequent promotion to the presidency of the institution sufficiently evinces the fact that his chair was ably and honorably filled."

From the long and eloquent tribute to Professor Blake furnished by Colonel A. R. Banks, of South Carolina, to whom had been assigned, as his part in the programme of the semi-centenary, the history of the chairmanship administration, the following: "In his twenty-six years of college work he taught in every department of the college, from the geography of the preparatory to the philosophy of the senior. Not once during this whole time did he remit the Bible. . . . . For all these *extra* duties and labors Professor Blake received no *extra* pay. Nor was he ever heard to complain of insufficient salary. 'In labors more abundant, in duties above measure,' he toiled bravely on; the interests of the college were his interests, her advancement his highest aim, asking no better reward than the confidence and regard of his co-laborers and the Board whom he served. Could we call back those who labored with him, now gone to give an account of their stewardship, ... they would, with one accord, give to John R. Blake the plaudit, "Well done, good and faithful servant!"

E. C. Smith, Esq., of Raleigh, N. C., in a passing compliment, speaks of him, in his history of Dr. Hepburn's administration, as "the learned, wise, and earnest Blake."

Much more might be written of Professor Blake, but these facts will be sufficient to show that the crowning excellence of a teacher is not simply that he be a learned man, a splendid scholar, and a successful instructor, important and essential as these qualities always are, but that he be a man of earnest Christian character, teaching by example as by precept, living out, in his daily intercourse with his pupils, the life of Christ, and thus training them by not only *conscious,* but by *unconscious tuition.*

3. James Lamme Meigs, M. A.

This gentleman, whom I have mentioned among the members of the first Faculty of La Grange College, was a native of the town of Athens, in East Tennessee. He was born on February 25, 1827. His father, the well known jurist, Return Jonathan Meigs, was author of several works, long held as eminent authority in the legal profession, being Supreme Court Reports. The removal of this gentleman from Athens to Nashville in 1835 furnished ample opportunities for the education of his children. There the subject of this sketch was, in due time, entered as a student in the University of Nashville, and was graduated from that institution, which, under the presidency of the celebrated Philip Lindsley, D. D., became the Alma Mater of so large a number of the distinguished citizens of Tennessee and neighboring States. At the early age of twenty-one Professor Meigs began his career as a teacher in that city, On account of impaired health, he became engaged in engineering surveys on the Memphis and Charleston railroad in 1850, and continued in the service of that company until the completion of the road, in 1857. In 1854 he had been elected Professor of Mathematics in the University of Nashville, but his previous engagements prevented his acceptance of this call. It was just at the time of his completion of the term of service as engineer on the Memphis and Charleston railroad that the Synodical College at La Grange was organized and the Faculty of four Professors was filled. Mr. Meigs was unanimously elected to the chair of Mathematics in the new institution, and filled that position with distinguished success and to universal acceptance during four years, until, by the occurrence of the civil war, its exercises were brought to a close. After this Professor Meigs was occupied during the progress of the war in teaching, having been first superintendent of the public schools in Nashville, and then in

conducting a private school until the war closed. He was again called into the service of the Memphis and Charleston railroad as engineer in rebuilding the part that had been destroyed during the war. In 1868, '69, and '70 he was engineer of the Memphis and Little Rock railroad, and in 1871–'74 of the Paducah and Memphis railroad. Since that time he has been engaged in teaching and in river and harbor surveys on the Gulf Coast, in the employment of the government. He has been twice married, and was the father of a son and a daughter, the former only surviving.

The foregoing are the mere particulars of his life, but I feel that it is due to him and to the public he served to give the record of his moral traits, which are indelibly stamped upon my memory, and which endeared him to all who knew him.

Professor Meigs was naturally a man of amiable and high-toned principle, yet of most decided traits of virtue and honor. He was, in my judgment, one of the purest men I have ever known; but in addition to all that, he was a man of deep and ardent piety—a devoted Christian. As a public character, in charge of most important trusts, his integrity was incorruptible, his honor unimpeachable; as a disciplinarian, he was firm, and yet kind; as an accomplished scholar and successful teacher, he had no superior; as a Christian gentleman and a faithful friend, universally esteemed and beloved.

CHAPTER XXIX.

SECOND SESSION.—GENERAL CHARACTER OF THE WORK DONE.—MODE OF DISCIPLINE.—PROGRESS OF THE ENDOWMENT.

WE closed our first session, 1857–'58, very successfully, by graduating seven young men. The first honor was given to a young man who had left the University of Mississippi to join the La Grange College at its opening. Of the students who shared the second honor one of them was from the University of Mississippi, and the other from the West Tennessee College, at Jackson. We closed, as already stated, with 119 students on our roll, in all departments. The second session opened under the same Faculty, in the college proper, but the preparatory school was now organized under two instructors, both of whom were originally students of the University of Mississippi, the principal being James J. Quarles, who was first honor man of the first graduating class of that institution in the year 1851; the assistant being a graduate of 1856 of the same. There was not only no diminution of patronage, but an increase of fifty-one over the total of last session. The distribution of the number in attendance, by classes, the second session, was as follows, viz.: Seniors, 7; Juniors, 15; Sophomores, 31; the Freshmen, 33; Scientific Class, 23; the preparatory school, 61; total, 170. The distribution of this number, by States, was as follows. From Tennessee, 86; from Mississippi, 73; from Arkansas, 4; from Louisiana, 4; from Texas, 2; from Alabama, 1.

The session was characterized by a creditable devotion to study, and a gentlemanly deportment on the part of the students, so that everything seemed to move on without

friction of any kind. The work accomplished by the Faculty was by no means the perfunctory discharge of duty, but each officer seemed to feel the responsibility resting upon him for the very best work which could be done under all circumstances. Not a single instance of college discipline was recorded, and peace, harmony and cordiality prevailed throughout the college community.

The College continued its career of usefulness for about three regular sessions, with an attendance of 126 students in the third session, and the number in the broken term of 1860–'61 cannot be stated, in which last year the regular operations of the college closed in April, by reason of the war, which began then. So that the result of patronage of the four sessions (including the one interrupted thus) may be summarized as amounting to something over 500 students. As the war had commenced in the spring by the firing of the first gun from Fort Sumter, and the proclamation of President Lincoln calling for seventy-five thousand soldiers to meet the South, the exercises of the session were brought to a close in the month of April, 1861, and we graduated a class of about thirteen. The catalogue of the college for the session of 1860–'61 was regularly made out, and sent to New York for publication, and I learned was actually printed and ready to be sent down to us, but it was considered *contraband of war*, and was never received. The consequence is that the number in attendance cannot be recorded save by conjecture.

For the following statements in regard to the endowment of the College I am indebted to the Rev. A. H. Caldwell, the energetic and devoted agent appointed by the Synod to solicit funds:

"January 20, '90.

"1. In relation to the scholarships of the Masonic fraternity ($37,500), the whole contribution was considered, after one or two years' trial, as an incubus on the institu-

tion. The owners of scholarships who lived not far off were inclined to put in students at such a price for tuition as to lessen the income of such students to the amount of $20. With the advice of friends of the College, I, as agent of the College, compromised with scholarship holders, returning their scholarship notes for what cash I could get. I tried to displace the scholarships within six or eight miles of La Grange. I sold some of the notes for $200 and others for less. None of those scholarships were ever paid in any other way.

"2. The salaries of Professors for the last year were not fully paid. I had a large amount of railroad stock, which I turned over to them, but they made but little out of it.

"3. The ten thousand acres of land were returned to Mr. E. H. Porter. I had sold and taken notes for the amount of $35,000, of which all was lost by the war.

"4. The trustees made application to Congress for damages to the amount of $32,000. The Synod still keeps up the corporation, and I, as President of the Board of Trustees, call a meeting every Synod and make a report.

"Gilbert Moyers, of Washington city, is our attorney, and he encourages us to hope that there is still some prospect of success. What was left of the property after the war was all turned back to the original contributors."

CHAPTER XXX.

Resignation of Dr. Gray.—Election of His Successor.—Correspondence with Davidson College Authorities.

IT will now be proper to retrace our record so as to bring to view some events that transpired during the last years of the College, so as to make its history complete. We had found, by the gradual increase of our patronage and the extent of the territory from which it was drawn, that there was occasionally introduced into our body of students an element of evil-disposed and badly-trained young men and boys who became troublesome and difficult to control. This is the experience of such institutions, and under such a malign influence, it is generally the case that much of the same spirit of insubordination is found diffused among the other students. La Grange College did not form an exception to this state of things; for while there was never experienced there any very extensive state of disorder among the students—none, in fact, comparable to those recorded of other colleges whose history is given—yet enough of trouble of this sort was in existence to require vigilance and to demand the exercise of discipline on the part of the Faculty; yet it was always readily and justly disposed of by them. After the first three sessions had been successfully brought to their respective endings, I was approached on a certain occasion, just previous to the annual meeting of the Board of Trustees at Commencement by the President, Dr. Gray, with a communication which surprised me not a little. He announced his intention to place his resignation of the office of President in the hands of the Board at their ensuing meeting. I gave it as my decided opinion that he ought

not to resign, and combated his proposed course by every consideration drawn from the fact of his administration having been successful, and that he was the chosen representative of the Synod by a unanimity which no other man could command. But he resolutely persisted in his determination, and could not be moved by any representation that I could make. He then added, further, that his object in this movement was to have me made President. To this I at once objected, as it was a position I had never coveted, and that it had no attractions for me whatever; but the responsibilities inseparable from it were altogether repulsive to my tastes and inclinations. His reply to that was, that unless I would agree to accept the office he would not only resign the presidency, but he would abandon the institution. The matter thus remained in an undecided position, without my having given any intimation of a change of views on the subject, until the Board met, when he put his plan in execution, tendered his resignation, and it was accepted by the Board. On his proposal I was put in nomination, and unanimously elected his successor.

I knew very well that Dr. Gray's main and influential reason for offering his resignation was, he felt the annoyances and vexations of the government of the college as exerting too fearful a pressure upon his nevous temperament, and that the very act of restraint which he felt to be binding upon him as President over the student body, and which he saw to be called for so frequently, and then the execution of penalties adjudged as the consequence of violation of rule, all assumed in his view, and before his tender and gentle disposition, an almost frightful aspect. His three years' experience of college presidency had only served to confirm the convictions of his judgment as it was swayed by all his feelings and habitudes.

When the action was communicated to me, I signified, very decidedly, my unwillingness to accept the office of

President. But I was allowed reasonable time in which to make up my final answer. The vacation of two months was on us, and matters remained in this state of indecision until the fall meeting of the Synod of Memphis.

It was just about this time, when all this was in progress at La Grange, that a very singular condition of affairs was occurring in a distant part of the country, made known to me in the following series of letters, directed to me by the Rev. R. H. Morrison, D. D., of North Carolina, and others, bearing upon a similar subject.

As introductory to this series of letters, I present the following communication, dated "April 24th, 1860":

No. 1.

"MY DEAR BROTHER: Rev. Dr. Lacy, who has been President of Davidson College for several years, has given notice of his purpose to resign, in consequence of feeble health. My object in this note is to ascertain if you would accept the presidency of our college, if elected.

"Davidson is strictly a Presbyterian institution, under the care of three Presbyteries in this State and South Carolina; is now well endowed, having received over two hundred thousand dollars from the legacy of Mr. Chambers. It is worth nearly $300,000. We are now about completing perhaps one of the most splendid college edifices in the United States, costing over $80,000. . . . . You would find with us the co-operation of as interesting a Presbyterian community as can be found in the South, and might, by God's blessing, do a great work for the prosperity of the church and the good of society.

"I should be pleased to hear fully from you on this subject, and will give you any information in my power. The election, I presume, will be at our next Commencement, in the month of July. . . . . I hope soon to hear from you, and would be delighted to hear in favorable terms.

"Very truly your brother in Christ, R. H. MORRISON."

In reply to this wholly unexpected letter, I stated to Dr. Morrison very frankly, that I could not possibly accept the presidency of Davidson College, even if elected; that I was bound to serve La Grange College *five years* by the very terms of my acceptance of the chair to which I had been elected. In answer to this, which I regarded as sufficiently plain and decisive to end the correspondence, I received from Dr. Morrison the following letter, bearing date,

No. 2.

"Cottage Home, *June 26th*, 1860.

"Rev. and Dear Brother: I had a letter from Dr. B. M. Smith, a few days since, in which he expressed the opinion that if you should be elected as President of Davidson College, and strongly solicited, you might accept the post.

"Your letter to me was so frank and explicit, in expressing a different opinion, that I then concluded that it was not necessary to continue the correspondence.

"It is the wish to leave no probability of success untried that induces me to address you again. Of course, I seek not to induce you to depart from any assumed obligation. But it has occurred to me that possibly your friends might be willing to release you from your pledge to stay five years at La Grange. I doubt whether they had any right to exact such a promise. If you think you cannot be honorably released, of course I have nothing more to say. If you could be, I would feel well assured of your election, and that you would do a great and good work for the church in our midst. We are sadly in the dark, as we know of no Southern man fully qualified that can be obtained. . . . . Dr. ————, of ————, is spoken of, but some of the trustees are not satisfied with him. Various others are thought of, but not with that regard which will secure a united vote. If you have anything further to say, I would be very glad to hear from you.

"Our election will be about the 16th of July. There is time to hear from you again, if you write without delay.

"Very truly, your friend and brother,

"(Signed), "R. H. MORRISON."

To this I made no reply at all, as I had said in my first communication all that I had to say in answer to his first proposition. I heard nothing more from Dr. Morrison on the subject of these two letters, until some time after the close of our Commencement, to which reference has been made in preceding page, at which time, being about the first week in July, 1860, the Trustees of La Grange College had, by a unanimous vote, elected me to the presidency as Dr. Gray's successor. The following letter was, in due course of mail, received by me from Dr. Morrison, being the third communication from him:

No. 3.

"COTTAGE HOME, *July 12th*, 1860.

"REV. AND DEAR BROTHER: I have just returned from a meeting of our Trustees of Davidson College.

"As an election for President had to take place yesterday, I much regretted not having received from you a reply to my last letter.

"Deeply impressed with the importauce of having a first-rate man at the head of our institution, I ventured to lay your claims before our Board, and I am happy to say you have been *unanimously* elected President of our college. The salary has been raised from $1,500 to $2,000, and the use of a good house, &c. I am gratified to say that the vote was not only unanimous, but ardent and enthusiastic, as much so as I have ever witnessed. As proof of this, many of our best ministers were most solemnly affected with the deep conviction that it was the interference of God's Providence which led to your election. For some time before the vote we were engaged in united and ear-

nest supplication to God as a Board for the guidance of His Spirit. To do all we could to remove the difficulties in the way, we appointed a delegate to visit you very soon to lay the facts before you, and to prevail on your friends to release you from all obligations to remain longer with them, when, as we think, God calls you to a wider field of usefulness.

My son-in-law, Rufus Barringer, Esq., was appointed our commissioner. . . . . And now, dear brother, in view of all the facts, we think the call of God is manifest that you should come to our College, and there do a noble work for the Church of Christ. . . . . We have received, or will receive, from the legacy of Mr. Chambers, about $220,000, making us worth, in all, about $300,000. We have about the best Presbyterian population in this State and South Carolina to sustain us that can be found in the United States. I refer you to our delegate for additional information. We confidently hope for a favorable answer. I think the hand of God is in it. May the God of all wisdom show you the path of duty.

"Very truly your brother in Christ,

"(Signed), "R. H. Morrison."

It will surprise no reader of this record that I was deeply impressed with these various communications from such a source. Dr. Morrison, as is well known throughout the entire church, was one of the most revered, esteemed, and beloved ministers of the South, a man of great personal weight of character and influence, in whose judgment universal confidence was reposed. Davidson College also was then established upon a secure financial basis, and held a high place in the affections and regard of the people of North Carolina. Moreover, the letters of Dr. Morrison were very shortly after followed by letters from the following individuals, more or less closely connected with the College. A brief mention of the names of the writers will suffice to

show the influence that was brought to bear upon me in this matter.

A very strongly-written and earnest communication was received, dated July 14, 1860, from Messrs. Rockwell, Kerr, and McIvor, who were then Professors in the Faculty of the College, urging my acceptance. Dr. Lacy, the retiring President, was urgent in a similar letter. Communications of the same class poured in upon me from others, with some of whom I had slight acquaintance, and of others I knew very little, if anything at all. Besides the official notification of my election from Dr. E. Nye Hutchison, of Charlotte, secretary of the Board, I received a long letter from Rev. B. M. Smith, D. D., Professor in Union Seminary, Virginia; one from Rev. W. W. Pharr, of Statesville; two from Rufus Barringer, Esq.; one from Edwin R. Harris, Esq., &c., all pressing the call upon me most strongly in language complimentary and kind, expressive of the exalted estimate in which they were pleased to hold me.

I answered, I suppose, all these letters, as I never failed to do during my life, when the letters received required an answer, as I considered these communications all preëminently merited my special and grateful notice. But I kept no copies of my replies. My final response, after bestowing upon the subject most mature and prayerful consideration, was, as far as I now recall it, about to this effect: I expressed my deep and abiding sense of the unusually flattering manner in which I had been honored and the favorable impression which I had received, and even went so far as to withhold a final declinature of the office to which I had been elected. I placed my hesitancy still upon the ground of my existing pledge to the Trustees of La Grange College, but proposed to postpone an answer until after the approaching meeting of the Synod of Memphis, when the subject of my election by the La Grange Board would be reported to the Synod, and the entire subject in connection with my ac-

ceptance or declinature would be decided. To this letter, addressed to Rev. Dr. Morrison, President of the Davidson College Board, I received in due time the following answer:

No. 4.

"Cottage Home, *August* 13, 1860.

"Rev. and Dear Brother: Your kind letter of 23rd of July was received in due time, and as you requested that I should reply to it after the meeting of our Board, I will do so without delay. I am gratified to say that our trustees are so anxious to leave no fair means untried to obtain your services that they did not go into another election, but agreed to await the result of your decision after the meeting of your Synod. You will infer, I trust, from this fact, our united and earnest anxiety to have you take charge of our College, and our decided hope that Providence may remove the obstacles in your way. . . . . I will be gratified to hear from you at an early hour after the action of your Synod.

"And now, dear brother, may the great Head of the church direct you and all concerned in this matter to such results as may be for His glory.

"Very truly, your brother in Christ,

"(Signed) R. H. Morrison."

CHAPTER XXXI.

Routine of College Work.—Boarding System.—Dormitory Plan Discussed.

AS regards the general outline of the system of the College at La Grange, it did not differ materially from the ordinary routine of departmental work from that pursued in other literary institutions of that day. We have it recorded already in a previous part of this memoir that the students of the College were arranged into the regular four classes, with the usual names to designate them, viz., Senior, Junior, Sophomore, and Freshman, and with the usual appropriation and assignment of studies belonging to each class, and each requiring an academic year for its completion. There, as was common in colleges pursuing the regular curriculum, we found it necessary, (in order to meet the various demands of the educating community around us, which preferred a more practical course of instruction for their sons,) that we should provide a system of English and scientific study for such students. Hence we added what we called the Scientific Class. Moreover, the deficiency of schools preparatory to a collegiate course which existed induced us to establish a Primary Department, wherein boys should be prepared for the college or for business pursuits, as parents might elect. The Scientific Class was taught by the regular Faculty, but the Primary School was kept entirely separate, under the control and management of its own instructors, and still forming a part of the whole system, under the same Board of Trustees. Besides this, there was adopted, from the very beginning, a different mode of management of the boarding and lodging system of students. The old, time-

honored plan of the dormitory for the accommodation of students, with its necessary accompaniment of "Commons," or "Steward's Hall," was ignored by the founders of La Grange College, and for two reasons:

1. They had no funds provided for such purpose. To be sure, there seemed *then* a fair prospect of raising money for the endowment and investing it in productive stock, so that the salaries of the Professors might be promptly paid; and that seemed to the Trustees to be the first and most important object to be secured. So that, having obtained an eligible lot of sufficient extent on a beautiful eminence in the eastern part of La Grange, a large building of brick was erected, consisting of a basement sufficiently capacious to accommodate the Primary Department, and two stories above that. On the first floor above this basement there were four large rooms for the purposes of recitation and apparatus, and also four of the same size on the second floor above. The two rooms on the front were occupied by the two Literary Societies, whose names were the Phi-Mu and the Eunomian; the two in the rear of these were appropriated to the Library and to recitation uses. The chapel was a large room, the dimensions of which were more than sufficient to accommodate all the classes at morning prayers, and, on Commencement occasions, a very large audience could be easily seated. Having accomplished this, the funds could not with safety be applied to any additional building. It is due to the students, however, to record that, partly from a desire to have the halls for regular meetings of their Literary Societies more secluded from the main building, and partly from their pride in the more respectable and imposing aspect it would give to the College campus, they resolved, each Society for itself, to erect a fine building, to be located the one on the north and the other on the south side of the avenue leading from the front gate to the entrance or portico of the College building, and in convenient distance

from it. They had gone so far with the enterprise as to have raised, by subscription, very nearly the amount required to erect the buildings, when this, with every other material improvement, was arrested by the discouraging prospects of the civil war, and nothing further was attempted in this line of operations.

2. Another reason for rejecting the dormitory system was the evil moral influence exerted upon a student body by having them thrown together in one building in large numbers, separated from the genial and humanizing influence of the family circle; so that the arrangement was, from the beginning, adopted, that the students were to be received by the families of the citizens of La Grange, boarding and lodging with them as members of the household. The objections to the dormitory system are, in the opinion of many experienced educators, numerous and weighty. A few of them may be mentioned.

It is *unnatural*, because it substitutes the crowding together of young men and boys, instead of the divinely ordained assembly which is recognized as *the family*. It is notorious that nothing is more demoralizing, even in the case of mature *men*, than that they gather in crowds in any capacity habitually, in clubs, from which are excluded the more elevated class of females. This is found to be more universally the case among boys and immature young men.

This danger is greatly aggravated by their being congregated together in adjacent sleeping chambers at night. Instead of spending their time in application to study, which is the prime object in view in this system, they are tempted to visit each other, to play at unlawful games, or to go out, under cover of the darkness of night, to places utterly ruinous to health and morals.

But in reply to this it has been supposed, and urged as a preservative influence, that members of the Faculty are generally on the ground, and that it is made a part of their duty to visit the rooms of the students, especially at night,

and thus to enforce the requisitions of the law in regard to keeping their rooms and studying. In answer to that, while I admit that the system of the dormitory for college students seems to demand something of this sort, I hold at the same time that it constitutes one of the most serious and grave evils connected with it. It makes the Faculty a police force, and presupposes that the students are unworthy to be trusted. "Give a boy a bad name," and he will be tempted to win and wear that name, and he will be alienated at once from his professor, and the professor himself will lose his self-respect, and feel degraded by such a system of espionage. If such a thing must be carried out, better convert our literary institutions at once into military encampments, and our professors into sentinels. I have heard a professor, who was trained in the West Point Academy, say that, even under the strict regime demanded there, midnight debauchery and dissipation was by no means rare among the cadets. This, from the very nature of the case, could not occur so frequently and in so aggravated a manner with students domiciled in refined and respectable families. It is true that it is not to be denied that the attractions found in such families are sometimes powerful temptations to excessive social intercourse, to the neglect of study and preparation for scholastic duty, and it may be true that some students may be found boarding in such families who cannot be influenced, by such surroundings, to anything good. *That* is incident to human nature, and as there are, in all classes of mankind, those who break over all restraints, it will not be expected that boys, as a class, are to be exceptions to that which is universal. Yet, after all, it is indisputable that of the two systems—the cloister, or the family—whatever disadvantage may be found incident to the latter is certainly overbalanced, and, in some measure, compensated by the confessedly refining influences inherent in it, and the absence of the more lowering, and (sometimes) degrading effects growing out of the former.

CHAPTER XXXII.

The Meeting of the Synod in 1860, and the Final Decision of the Question.—The Election of Lincoln.—The Close of the Fourth Session of the College, and the End of the College.

THE question on which I was now to give my final decision was one of grave importance, and the consideration of the subject gave me great concern. The arguments that urged me to decide in favor of La Grange were, that I was committed to this enterprise, and, without considering myself as any more essential to its success than any other member of the Faculty, the fact was that no one of the corps of instructors could be spared from the College, as such an event would be considered a confession of want of confidence in the success of the institution. Then there was my pledge given to the authorities that I would continue in their service for five years, upon their pledge of support, which thus far had been fulfilled. In addition to these facts, I felt that the Synod should put forth more united and determined and earnest efforts to render the endowment a success, and I made up my mind to remain, accepting the presidency of La Grange College, on condition that the endowment should be, as soon as possible, raised to $200,000, and the salary of the President fixed at $2,500. This last item was added in consideration of the fact that no house was provided by them for the President, whereas the salary of the President at Davidson was $2,000, and a residence rent free. When the Synod met at Germantown these terms were agreed to, and I signified my acceptance of the presidency to which I had been chosen in July.

I remarked, in my answer to Dr. Morrison's last commu-

nication, that the same thing on which he very naturally laid such emphasis in my election at Davidson College, viz., that the unanimity of the vote immediately followed upon a solemn season spent in earnest and united prayer by the Board, had occurred in the conduct of the La Grange Board, that prayer offered by them was followed by the very same result, viz., my unanimous election. Moreover, that the interpretation placed upon the action of the Davidson board by Dr. Morrison and others was placed by the La Grange Board upon their action, that it surely indicated the clearest call of divine Providence on me. It could only be decided, therefore, by other considerations, as they presented themselves. I accordingly felt constrained to accept the call of La Grange, highly as I felt myself honored by the Davidson Board, and grateful as I acknowledged their kindness through the whole transaction.

On the adjournment of the Synod we resumed work in the College, with full numbers, and with no audible mutterings of the coming storm in the political sky until in November, 1860, when the whole southern part of the country was, as by an earthquake, shaken to its centre by the election of Abraham Lincoln to the presidency of the United States.

The effect of this event upon the progress of the finances of the college was disastrous, as has been already stated in the former pages of this memoir. Yet, strange to record, few of the people of the South felt apprehensive of actual war. I even recall a public meeting (not very largely attended, it is true,) when a certain speaker took the ground that there was no reason for serious apprehension; that Mr. Lincoln would make a wise and good President, and all things would come right, etc., etc. But when South Carolina was rapidly followed by State after State in secession ordinances, and all efforts for a peaceful adjustment by conventions of committeemen in Washington City failed to effect any satisfactory arrangement, and war seemed inevi-

table, then we began to realize that perilous times were upon us and before us.

The excitement, which was spreading far and wide over the country, was quickly felt among all the student-bodies of the Southern colleges and universities. Our students were greatly aroused, and at a meeting called to consider the state of matters, especially as concerned those of them who were old enough to enlist in the army, a very animated discussion was engaged in, strong and eloquent speeches were delivered by leading and influential speakers. The object, which was a foregone conclusion, was that the exercises of the institution would be necessarily closed, but the matter in debate was, as to the proper manner in which this object should be brought about. Some of the most ardent and fiery disputants were in favor of summarily ending the college operations by an unceremonious leave-taking and departure. But better and wiser counsels prevailed; it was decided that a communication should be laid before the Faculty, representing the state of things, and requesting that the Senior Class should be permitted to take their Degrees of B. A., and that a day should be set for an examination of that class. The anniversary of the Eunomian Society being published for the 25th April, and not far from this date was suggested as the proper time for a delivery of the diplomas to the class. To this proposal, after some deliberation, the Faculty agreed, and accordingly we made the arrangement to anticipate the usual annual close of the term by some two months. We examined the Senior Class of thirteen, assigned the first honor to W. C. Gray, son of Dr. Gray, and decided to divide the second distinction between Charles V. Thompson and Henry M. Payne, the former of Tennessee, and the latter of Mississippi. As the two societies had elected their anniversary orators some time previously, viz : Henry M. Payne for the Eunomian, and George W. Hope for the Phi-Mu, they delivered their orations, and

with the public delivery of diplomas we dismissed the students and closed our exercises on April 25, 1861.

The students who were old enough became greatly excited, and many of them at as early a period as possible after reaching home volunteered, and joined the various companies that were being organized and drilled for the Southern army.

Professors Blake and Meigs of course, retired from service, but as we "broke up in much admired disorder," there were no regular resignations, as there was no Board of Trustees to receive them, but the dark and dismal future lay out all undiscovered before us. Dr. Gray and I were now left alone, so far as work was concerned in the college, and we were spending a quiet summer in La Grange, yet watching with deep interest and anxiety the progress of affairs throughout the land, both North and South. Thus ended the fourth regular session of La Grange College. But as yet no hostile tread of the enemy had marked the beginning of war's desolating march over our Southern soil, but ominous notes of preparation were heard in the distance, and the South and the North were assembling their forces and accumulating their resources, and massing their armaments for the deadly conflict soon to be joined.

The Synod of Memphis held its annual sessions at the the time to which it had adjourned, and the place of the meeting was in the College Church, then a strong body of Presbyterians in the county of La Fayette, Mississippi, about five miles distant from Oxford. Among the matters of business demanding the attention of the Synod was the state and prospects of La Grange College. The question as to the continuance of its academic operations under the discouraging out-look and disturbed condition of the country, was, after consideration, decided to the effect, that Dr. Gray and I should reopen the College and advertise for students. We were authorized to appoint to the vacant chairs

of the Faculty, two professors, and call them into service. At the earliest possible period after the adjournment of Synod, we met and invited to the chair of Mathematics and Astronomy, Henry F. Scott, a young man who had been graduated in 1859, with the highest honors of his class in the college. To the chair of Chemistry and Natural Philosophy, we invited Rev. Edwin Cater, then pastor of the church in Somerville, while Dr. Gray held his chair of Mental and Moral Philosophy, and I continued to teach the ancient languages. Thus organized, we began our work with those young boys of the ages varying from fourteen to seventeen who were still in their La Grange homes, but not long after we opened the school students began to arrive from distant parts of the country. We had students from the neighborhood of Natchez and Vicksburg. Two of those who had belonged to the Junior class of 1860–'61 returned and formed our Senior class. The entire number present during the term did not exceed thirty. We continued our work in this way until the fall of Fort Donaldson. It was felt *then* that the seat of war was drawing so near to us that it would be imprudent to undertake our college work, and we closed up the institution summarily, and after a creditable final examination of our two seniors admitted them to the degree of B. A. It was soon after this that Tennessee and Kentucky were invaded by the Federal troops, and the disastrous battle of Shiloh was fought, which ultimately opened the way to the overrunning of Tennessee and Mississippi to a considerable extent. La Grange was visited on some three or four different occasions by raiding parties, but it was not permanently occupied until toward the close of the year 1862, when after the fall of Corinth the Northern army was massed in heavy force on the Memphis and Charleston R. R., covering a stretch of country some ten miles in length, and even more planting themselves in force at various points, to the terror and distress of the inhabi-

tants. The town from that time was never free from a garrison, more or less numerous and troublesome, until the close of the war. I remained in the place with my family, consisting of my two daughters and my youngest boy, (the elder son, George, having volunteered just after the fall of Fort Donaldson,) and was subjected to very great aggravations and annoyances. I was forced to give up my house as the head-quarters of the notorious Gen. John A. Logan, who allowed me two back rooms for my own use, and another for my daughters, while he occupied the parlor for his own use, and my study was the office of his chief of staff, or A. A. G. He remained there three weeks, and while he did not subject me to any insult or outrage, yet he and his aid kept the house and the yard crowded with squads of private soldiers by day, and they were frequently engaged in Bacchanalian revels at night. The consequence of all this was that when the General with his troops evacuated the premises, the rooms occupied by them presented the appearance of having been occupied by any class of tenants but that of gentlemen. The furniture was injured, carpets, etc., were trampled by muddy feet of soldiers, as it was held by Logan during a spell of rainy weather, so that there was nothing decent about the premises. I will only add, by anticipation, to this, that the Federal soldiers who were left in La Grange (when the main body of the army was ordered South through Mississippi), as they remained there, successively in one set or another as a garrison, tore down the College building and used the bricks to build huts, and chimneys to their tents, until there was hardly a vestige left, or trace of the La Grange College to indicate the spot where it once stood. With this ends the story of La Grange College.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

FURTHER NOTES OF WAR EXPERIENCE IN LA GRANGE, AND MY ESCAPE FROM THE LINES.

AFTER the advance southward of Grant's army, including the corps commanded by General Logan and that of General Sherman, I remained in La Grange surrounded on all sides by the rude soldiery, and suffered much grievous annoyance from them. There resided in La Grange a Southern man, a merchant, who was a Union man, wholly unprincipled, and when the army of Grant occupied the town he was among the first to make fair weather with the Federal authorities. It so came about that, being personally a devoted friend of Dr. Gray, he interceded with the commander to allow Dr. Gray to take a modified form of allegiance, and thus be protected from the marauding bands. He had formed an idea, too, that such a privilege would be accorded to me. But the officer, an upstart in a little brief authority, refused to admit me to any such leniency, as he decided that I was too great a rebel. On a certain Saturday morning, as I was seated in my room, I had placed in my hands by an orderly a communication from this Provost-marshal, who was in command at that time in La Grange, which was thus expressed:

"PROVOST-MARSHAL'S OFFICE,
"LA GRANGE, TENN., *Dec.* 13, 1862.

"REV. J. N. WADDEL,

"SIR: Until you have identified yourself as a citizen of the United States, by renewing your allegiance to the gov-

ernment and constitution thereof, you will discontinue your labors as a minister of the gospel in this place.

"You have hitherto used all the means in your power to aid this 'wicked' rebellion, and your labors have been successful in creating suffering and death amid a once happy people. Instead of being an humble follower of our Saviour, endeavoring to save a dying world from their sins, you have stirred dissensions, created estrangements in families, and urged 'vile treason' toward the best government that God ever created upon earth.

"Instead of proving yourself a bright and shining light, you have sown the seeds of darkness, disunion, dissensions, and death. All your blessings have changed into curses. I trust you have seen the error of your ways, and that you will acknowledge the justice of these plain-spoken words.

"Respectfully, your obedient servant,

"F. F. Peats, *Major and Provost-Marshal.*"

When I read this note, I was convinced that it was designed to frighten me into doing what was then considered the deepest disgrace among Southerners, viz.: the taking the oath of allegiance, and as I not only was unwilling to take a course such as to incur the odium of such an act, as I was determined not to violate my conscience, I made up my mind to avoid any collision with the authorities. Dr. Gray and I had never discontinued our alternate preaching in the church on account of the presence of the Federal army, who had attended divine service in large crowds during their occupation of the place. I had an appointment to preach in the La Grange church for the very next day (Sabbath, 14th December), and had made no other calculation than to fill the pulpit as usual. But the receipt of this order from the redoubtable Major Peats, brought me to a decision which induced a reconsideration of my plan, not only in regard to the next day, but also in connection with my future course,

for an indefinite period. I determined to remain at home on the next day and decline to fill the appointment. I believed that there had been a plan concocted by the Major and others to allow me to enter the pulpit and then to arrest me for disobedience of orders, and the next step would be to require me to take the oath of allegiance, and if I should refuse to do so, I took it for granted that I should be sent to some Northern prison. I had no opportunity to consult with friends, but committed the whole matter to God, imploring divine guidance and protection. Accordingly, at the usual hour for Sabbath-school services, my children went to the church, and, by my authority, stated to the superintendent that I should not preach that morning. I spent the time alone during the hours devoted to the Sabbath-school. I learned that there was the usual crowd of Federal officers and soldiers in attendance, and, if my conjectures in regard to the proposed arrest were correct, there perhaps was a disappointment felt by those who were admitted to a knowledge of the plan, that I failed to carry out the part of the programme that had been assigned to me. But perhaps I may not have interpreted the authorities correctly; I knew that such things had occurred with others, and I supposed that they might occur in my case. At all events, I had no more intercourse with Maj. Peats, or any other of the officers then in La Grange, with regard to my acting as a minister, or on any other subject whatever. But the conclusion to which my mind was tending, and to which it was ultimately brought, was, that La Grange was no suitable place for my residence; and I formed the resolution to make my escape from the Federal lines at the earliest possible period.

I shaped my course deliberately and in consultation with only two of my friends, one of whom was my brother-in-law and devoted friend, Dr. Gray, and the other friend was my kind and prudent neighbor, and family physician, Dr. J. J. Pulliam. With these friends I held frequent conferences,

and the plan ultimately adopted will now be stated. Two or more matters of prime importance were to be provided for, and arranged to make every part of the plan a success.

1. As I must leave my children behind, it was necessary that some place should be secured for them, as I knew that all my household would be ransacked and everything accessible would be confiscated as soon as my escape should become known. It was arranged that they should be taken at once to the residence of Dr. Gray, and make that their home until I should be enabled to make other arrangements.

2. Transportation by private conveyance must be obtained, as even if the trains should be running, it would be manifestly impossible for me to take that method of escape, as my movements must be of the most secret nature. It was so ordered, in the providence of God, that a friend of Dr. Gray's had not long previously made him a present of a very fine horse, and there was an absolute certainty, or, at least, the strongest probability, that if the horse should be kept in the stable, or on his premises, it would be taken by the soldiers who occupied the town, and that he should lose his horse. It was decided, therefore, that I should take the animal and ride him on my unknown journey. Furthermore, Dr. Gray's son-in-law had just come to La Grange a short time previous to its occupancy by the army, and was on a visit to his family, from some post where he had been stationed by the Confederate authorities. Of course, it was a matter of the last importance that he should leave the lines of the Federal army at the earliest period possible. He had his own horse already provided, and only waited the proper time for a secret departure. He and I agreed to go together, but when, and by what route, remained to be determined.

3. There were three young boys, one a son of Dr. Gray, another a son of a friend of ours in La Grange, and my youngest boy, Gray, who, on Wednesday morning, 17th De-

cember, were directed to go out and ascertain at what points on the north side of the corporate limits of the town the picket sentinels were stationed whose business it was to halt all persons attempting to pass out of the lines. They reported that the pickets were stationed on the line about a half-mile apart, and just where parties would probably pass who should attempt to go outside the lines, and, very fortunately for us, there was a deep valley of forest between the two points guarded. We made our arrangements then, that at a late hour in the afternoon we should pass through this valley afoot, without baggage, while our friend, Dr. Pulliam, who had a pass from the Provost-Marshal, to practice his profession outside the limits of the town, agreed to have our horses conveyed through the region where the army was encamped, and along the high road, which he did without risk, and without suspicion, Our destination for that night was at the hospitable home of a wealthy planter, Captain J. W. Jones, a warm friend, and as he had a large crop of cotton, the Yankee cotton buyers, who were camp followers, always, of the Federal army, had made a purchase of him, and a neighbor of ours was employed to go out and bring the cotton in with his wagons. So Dr. P. joined the wagon train with our horses, one of which was to be coupled alongside of the team, and the other (my saddle horse) was to be led by some outrider, and we were to meet the cavalcade after our tramp through the intervening valley. Our plan succeeded admirably, except in a single point—the horse to be ridden by my companion utterly refused to be a party to the arrangement, and had to be sent back to town. This did not break up the plan at all, for my fellow-traveller mounted the wagon and I received my horse as prepared, and so, without further interruption, we reached Captain Jones' hospitable mansion, and spent the night safely and comfortably. We were still far from being secure, as we were distant only six miles from headquarters, and we felt

that there was a possibility of our being pursued and arrested should it be discovered that we had left. Our good friend, Dr. P., managed to hire a servant to ride the recusant horse out to our retreat after dark, and so we found ourselves ready to pursue our journey south on the next morning, after a night of refreshing rest.

Having furnished myself with money, both of Confederate and greenback currency, we commenced our journey on the 18th December, 1862, and by a kind Providence were enabled to leave behind all peril of pursuit, and we paused nowhere until we reached Central Mississippi, and from that time until the close of the war I lost sight of the Federal army, both in whole and in part.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Effect of the War upon the Presbyteries of the South.—Dr Spring's Resolutions.—Atlanta Convention.—Organization of the General Assembly, on December 4, 1861.

IT becomes necessary now that we should retrace the history, and take up some of the "dropped threads" of the narrative, in order that the events of those troublous times may move on as nearly *pari passu* as may be, considering the varied and diversified interests, and departments which were so deeply affected by the terrible convulsions of war. Among those matters which were brought into collision in this disastrous period of our history, none were more seriously affected and threatened than those of the churches, and especially the Presbyterian Church. The condition of the country, both North and South, in the Spring of 1861, after the beginning of hostile preparations, was such that the Northern people were perfectly infuriated toward the South, and the various ecclesiastical bodies of the Southern Presbyterian Church felt little inclination to send commissioners to represent them in the General Assembly in May. Indeed, few went to the Assembly from the South. When those who did attend were known to be in Philadelphia, irresponsible ruffians issued anonymous proposals to hang them as rebels and traitors to the lamp-posts on the streets. When, therefore, the famous "Spring Resolutions" were presented in the Assembly, and, with slight modification, passed, though under solemn protest by Dr. Hodge and others, the die was cast as to Southern sentiment among Presbyterians; and it was but a question of time as to a

definitive dissolution of the bond of ecclesiastical union between the Southern and Northern Presbyterians. At separate meetings of various Presbyteries, from Virginia to Texas, resolutions were adopted withdrawing themselves from the Northern Presbyterians, and, as the proceedings were published all over the land, a proposition was made to send delegates from these bodies to Atlanta, to meet in convention, and discuss the situation and concert measures for united action. This was adopted by eleven Presbyteries, and, accordingly, the delegates met in the First Presbyterian Church of Atlanta, and continued in session during the 15th, 16th, and 17th of August, 1861. After much consideration, touching the state of the church, the following recommendations were, on the third day, unanimously adopted, viz.:

"1. That all the Presbyteries which have passed an act dissolving their connection with the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States of America, at the ensuing Fall sessions, declare their adherence and submission to the Confession of Faith, Form of Government, Book of Discipline, and Directory for Worship, with the single change of the phrase from that of 'Presbyterian Church in the United States of America' to that of 'Presbyterian Church in the Confederate States of America'; and that such Presbyteries as have not renounced the jurisdiction of the General Assembly aforesaid by a formal act, should at the ensuing Fall sessions take such action as may be necessary to effect a union in a General Assembly with their sister Presbyteries in the South.

"2. That these Presbyteries send commissioners, according to the former rule of representation, to a General Assembly, to be held in the city of Augusta, in the First Presbyterian Church, on the fourth day of December next; and that the Rev. Dr. B. M. Palmer, as principal, and the Rev. Dr. Wilson (pastor of said church), be requested to

preach the opening sermon, and to preside until the Assembly be organized, and a moderator and clerk be chosen.

"3. That the Rev. Drs. Waddel and Gray, of the Presbytery of Memphis, and Dr. Joseph Jones, of Augusta, Ga., ruling elder, be a Committee on Commissions, to examine the credentials of all who may present themselves at that meeting; and that these brethren be requested to be present, in the First Presbyterian Church, in the city of Augusta, on the evening previous to the meeting of the General Assembly.

"4. That the Presbyteries which have passed an act renouncing the jurisdiction of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States of America, do declare, that in that act they did not design to withdraw from their sister Presbyteries in the South, nor to dissolve their Synods.

"That all the Presbyteries in the Confederate States send up their records to their respective Synods, for review, and that the Synods confirm the action herein proposed"

The Convention (in explanation of the motives for organizing a New Assembly), after quoting what is known as the "Spring Resolutions," adopted the following:

"By this act of the Assembly (at Philadelphia, May, 1861,) a large proportion of the churches under its care felt themselves aggrieved, not because they disputed the right of the Assembly to give a deliverance upon any question of duty growing out of their several relations, civil, social, and ecclesiastical, but because, during a state of war between two sections of the Confederacy formerly known as the United States of America, one of which had found it necessary to withdraw from the other, to establish an independent government of its own, and to resort to arms in maintenance of its rights, and in defence against threatened invasion of barbaric character, the Assembly assumed the right of

determining the political status of every member of every church under its care, a right inherent in the State, and not in the church; and in the assumption of this right, enjoined upon said members the performance of acts which, as to those residing within the Confederate States, were absolutely treasonable, in view of the political relations established for them by those States.'

I am not absolutely certain that the Presbytery of Memphis, to which I belonged, was the first to renounce the jurisdiction of this Assembly, which adopted the Spring Resolutions. If not the first, at any rate, that Presbytery was among the first to decide upon withdrawal. It cannot be improper to insert a copy of the famous document known as the "Spring Resolutions," which was productive, in its influence upon the Southern Presbyteries, of their withdrawal from the Presbyterian General Assembly of the United States of America. Few of the younger generation of the Southern Presbyterians know exactly its nature and spirit, and it is well to preserve a copy of it for reference. It is as follows:

"*Resolved*, That this General Assembly, in the spirit of Christian patriotism which the Scriptures enjoin, and which has always characterized this church, do hereby acknowledge and declare our obligation to promote and perpetuate, so far as in us lies, the integrity of these United States, and to strengthen, uphold and encourage the Federal government in the exercise of all its functions under our noble constitution; and to this constitution, in all its provisions, requirements and principles, we profess our unabated loyalty. And to avoid all misconception, the Assembly declares that, by the term 'Federal Government,' as here used, is not meant any particular administration, or the peculiar opinions of any particular party, but that central administration which, being at any time appointed, and inaugurated according to the forms prescribed in the constitution of the

United States, is the visible representative of our national existence."

It must be stated that this action of the General Assembly was taken after nearly all the Confederate States had seceded, and so the entire body of the church within the bounds of those States was in effect driven out of the connection and fellowship of the Presbyterian Church. I proceed to say, using the language of Dr. J. R. Wilson, in his memorial address, delivered by him on the occasion of the Quarter-Centennial Anniversary of the Organization of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States. Speaking of the convention just referred to, Dr. Wilson says:

"It was in response to a request on the part of this exceptional body of trusted brethren, that *all* the Presbyteries addressed—not one excepted—were here not many months afterward, regularly represented in accordance with the ancient forms, and in every instance by a delegation of ministers, in whose number there was not a single blank, as also, save in the case of a few of the far-distant constituencies, by a full commission of ruling elders, making altogether an authorized membership of ninety-three, and possessed, as a whole, it soon became apparent, of an unusually high average of Christian character and mental ability, whilst some of them, conspicuous above the many, would have adorned the church in any age or country. On a mild Tuesday morning, although it was now the beginning of winter, this novel assemblage was, at eleven in the morning, "called to order" by one of the most dignified of its members, but of whom, being now present, I may not, without indelicacy, say anything further —Rev. Dr. John N. Waddel—and who, you are glad to know, is expected to take a leading part in these memorial services. He, with two others—Rev. Dr. John H. Gray and Dr. Joseph Jones—had, with well-directed judgment, been named by many of the Presbyteries, as likewise by the At-

lanta convention, to constitute the Committee on Commissions; and, as chairman of this committee, it became his pre-arranged duty to utter the inceptive words of organization. And, upon his motion, the Rev. Francis McFarland, D. D., one of the most venerable commissioners present, and who, five years before, had been the singularly able Moderator of the old Assembly, was appointed temporarily to preside."

It will be remembered that, in the Atlanta convention, it was recommended unanimously, that "the Rev. Dr. B. M. Palmer, as principal, or, the Rev. Dr. Wilson (pastor of the church), be requested to preach the opening sermon, and to preside, until the Assembly be organized and a moderator and clerk be chosen."

I resume Dr. Wilson's words here:

"The opening sermon on that solemn occasion was preached from the admirably-chosen words of inspiration found in the first chapter of the Epistle to the Ephesians: "And gave him to be head over all things to the church, which is his body, the fulness that filleth all in all."

"I go on, therefore, to say that on the day following that on which Dr. Palmer delivered his remarkable sermon, he was, by acclamation, elected to the moderator's chair, and two days subsequently Dr. Waddel and your present speaker were respectively chosen to fill the offices of stated clerk and of permanent clerk.

"Thus, with the addition of the Rev. Dr. D. McNeill Turner as temporary clerk, the first Assembly was duly and fully organized."

This brings into view the method pursued and adopted by the Southern Presbyteries in the organization of what was then known as the "General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the Confederate States of America," but, after the close of the war, when the "Confederate States" as a government became a thing of the past, the title of the

Assembly was so modified as to read thus: "The General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States," leaving off the two words, "of America." Still the church was known by the former name all through the war, and was not changed to the present title until the meeting of the Assembly in Macon, Ga., in December, 1865.

The proceedings of the first General Assembly, in Augusta, Ga., were characterized by great dignity and solemn earnestness of purpose, accompanied by much fervent prayer for divine guidance. Conspicuous among the commissioners and *facile princeps*, as a leader in every important measure, was James H. Thornwell. He was a member of many important committees, and his influence was weighty and effective in the deliberations of the body. The Assembly, at an early period in its sessions, resolved, on motion of Dr. Thornwell, to appoint "a committee consisting of one minister and one ruling elder from each of the Synods belonging to this Assembly to prepare an address to all the churches of Jesus Christ throughout the earth, setting forth the causes of our separation from the churches of the United States, our attitude in relation to slavery, and a general view of the policy which, as a church, we propose to pursue." Of this committee Dr. Thornwell was appointed chairman, and prepared and read an elaborate address, which was received and adopted. Three thousand copies of this address were ordered to be printed for the use of the Assembly, and that the original address be filed in the archives of the Assembly, and that it be signed by the moderator and members of the Assembly," all of which was done. This address is found in the Appendix to the Minutes of that Assembly, occupying ten closely printed pages, beginning on page 51.

The bodies having charge of Missions, Home and Foreign, Education, Publication, etc., were styled "Executive Committees," not "Boards," as is the plan pursued by the Northern Assembly.

Dr. Palmer's opening sermon was published also by order of the Assembly, in the Appendix to the Minutes, and will be found on page 61.

Dr. J. Leighton Wilson was elected Secretary of Foreign Missions; Dr. John Leyburn, of Domestic Missions; Dr. John H. Gray, of "Education," and Dr. William Brown, of Publication.

Columbia, South Carolina, was chosen as the location for the Executive Committee of Foreign Missions; New Orleans for Domestic Missions, Richmond, Va., for Publication, and Memphis for Education.

These Executive Committees continued to act as four separate and distinct bodies, with each its own secretary and treasurer, at the several locations as above stated, until the session of the Assembly in May, 1863, at which time it was decided to combine theExecutive Committees of Education and Publication together, with the same secretary, treasurer and members, and location, and to make the same arrangement in regard to the Executive Committees of Foreign and Domestic Missions. Dr. Gray having resigned the secretaryship of Education, and the city of Memphis being within the enemy's lines, and the same thing being true of Dr. Leyburn, that his location was in the hands of the Federal army, and the Committee of Domestic Missions in danger from that cause, on the occasion of the meeting of the Assembly in Columbia, it was determined that Education and Publication should be united at Richmond, Va., and as Dr. William Brown had resigned the office of secretary of Publication, Dr. John Leyburn was elected his successor. The Committee of Domestic Missions was transferred to Columbia, South Carolina, and combined with that of Foreign Missions. Both were put under the care of the original Executive Committee, with Dr. J. Leighton Wilson as secretary. This was designed, however, as a temporary arrangement, to which the Assembly was forced by the pressure of the

times. These items of information are all accessible to the curious, as they can be found in the Minutes of the General Assembly of 1861, and of 1863. To these Minutes I refer all inquirers, and only add to these items and facts some things of less public interest, but which will be found to have close connection with this history.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Return to La Grange—Continuation of the War Record, and Personal Incidents.

AT the close of this first Assembly, I found myself within fifty miles of my native soil, in Abbeville District, South Carolina, and as I had met in Augusta several of my old friends, who were there attending as spectators, I received pressing invitations to go up and pay them a visit before going west. I accepted their call, and spent a week, more or less, in that familiar old region of country. I preached during the time in my father's old church, visited my mother's grave, where her dust had been resting for more than thirty years, saw many old friends, who were young when we parted, a quarter century before, and some who were in childhood then who had come to maturer years, and outgrown my knowledge altogether; and again I set my face westward.

At the time to which I refer La Grange was free from hostile occupancy, and I returned, and began the year 1862 with my family and friends, in peace and tranquillity, "with none to molest or to make us afraid." But these quiet times were of short duration. On the 17th of February, of that year, Fort Donaldson fell, and very soon after that Federal gunboats ascended the Tennessee river, and reached Florence, Alabama. We have already recorded the fact that we had closed the supplementary exercises of the La Grange College just at that time, after the regular fourth session had been interrupted prematurely, by anticipation, on the 25th April, 1861. We also, as already stated, held an examination of the only two young men who had belonged to our Junior Class of 1860–'61, and who had returned after the

battle of Manassas and had been admitted to the Senior Class. We admitted them to graduation in February, and closed the college for the time. This was followed by the enlistment of both these young men in the army. One of them was James D. West, who had married my oldest daughter just before the battle of Manassas, and, in half an hour after the marriage ceremony, performed by myself, on Sabbath morning, had taken the train on the M. & C. R. R., and left his bride with me, and joined the Southern army in Virginia. To make the story short, let me say, that he arrived in time to take his place in the ranks on the field of battle, and came out unscathed, only to fall into camp-fever, which came near to a fatal termination. On the following week, or perhaps ten days after the battle, I received a dispatch from a friend of his from Lynchburg, Va., stating that he was dangerously ill at the house of a friend. As soon as possible I left home, with his newly married wife, and reached Lynchburg on Sabbath morning, just two weeks from the day of their marriage, and found him prostrate and unconscious, under the hospitable roof of Samuel McCorkle, Esq., a noble patriot and elder of our church, who was afterwards a member of the Assembly of 1861. We remained with my soldier son-in-law three weeks, and, by the blessing of a kind Providence, he became convalescent, and we returned to La Grange. As he was regularly discharged on account of his sickness, he employed the time in finishing his scholastic course of study in the college at La Grange, preparatory to the gospel ministry. The other young man who was graduated at the same time with young West, was William F. Markham, a first-class student, of great promise, who joined the army soon afterwards, and met his death in one of the battles that occurred in the neighborhood of Atlanta. J. D. West also re-entered the army in Mississippi, and was in the Division of General J. E. Johnson when near Marietta, and was captured, with some others, in some of the many skirmishes

thereabouts, carried to Johnson's Island, and held as a prisoner until the close of the war. He had pursued his studies in camp, under the direction of the Presbytery of Cherokee, and had been licensed, just before his capture, having obtained leave of absence just long enough to pass his examination by the Presbytery, at Marietta, Ga.

On the occasion of the closing of our school, in February, 1862, not only did West and Markham enter the army as soldiers, but Professor Scott, one of the teachers, and my son, George, then seventeen, with Robert Loughridge, son of the missionary to the Creek Indians, also enlisted in the army, and I accompanied them to Columbus, Ky., where General Polk was encamped with a division of the Southern army, and they were enrolled as volunteers for the war. I soon ascertained that this encampment was about to be broken up, and the place was to be evacuated at once, having been ordered to Jackson, Tenn. This arrangement rendered it necessary for me to go along with the army, and return to La Grange by rail, instead of by the Mississippi river. All this movement of Polk's division was only a part of the preparation then going on, in various parts of the army, to concentrate a large force at Corinth (where the Mobile and Ohio Railroad crossed the Memphis and Charleston Railroad), preliminary to the battle fought at Shiloh, on the 6th and 7th of April, between General Albert Sidney Johnson, of the Southern forces, and General Grant, of the Northern army.

I rode on a freight-car loaded with tents, etc., and accompanied by many soldiers, and with a long train of freight-cars laden with the munitions of war, all the way to Jackson, the weather being extremely cold, as it was late in March. After the battle of the 7th, we received a telegram at La Grange from W. C. Gray, to the effect that he and my boy, George, had escaped safely, but that their companion, Loughridge, was badly wounded. We had just returned

from the Spring meeting of the Presbytery of Memphis, when we met the sad tidings of that disastrous battle. The death of General Johnson, on the field, shed intense gloom over the land, and then the capture of General Prentiss, of the Federal army, with over three thousand prisoners, and immense quantities of stores gathered up, all created great excitement among the people. Accordingly, on Tuesday afternoon, in company with crowds of passengers, going to Corinth to look after their friends in the army, Dr. Gray and I, having packed up a goodly store of provisions, took passage on the train for Corinth. We reached that point about midnight, in the midst of a terrific storm of thunder, lightning, wind, and rain. I have often thought, on recurring to the scenes of that night, that they were certainly invested with as many of the elements of gloom and horror as I had ever witnessed. We made our way through mud and mire to the hotel, a large wooden building near the depot, and on the platform and veranda we found multitudes of sick, weary, and wounded soldiers, who

> "Had sunk on the ground overpowered,
> The weary to rest, and the wounded to die."

All was dark, and the storm still raged. Ever and anon, the roar and crash of the loud thunder, and the vivid lightning-flash added increasing horror to the scene. Not a light was visible, save one dim ray, streaming with difficulty through the almost palpable darkness, from a tallow candle in a room on one side of the house. Thither we directed our steps, and inquired of a sleepy, weary woman, who sat alone amid a surrounding mass of the sick, dying, or dead, if she knew anything of the Thirteenth Tennessee Regiment? Our boys belonged to that regiment. She knew nothing of them. Turning back we made our way to a large room, which might have been the reception-room, or bar of the hotel. And here we were met with the same

sights, of the dirty, muddy floor, covered over with sleepers; so we concluded to go up stairs (as we gathered no tidings of our boys), and rest contented, if possible, till the dawning of the day, when we might renew our search under more favorable auspices. We sat on the steps, having no spot large enough to admit of lying down at full length, half-reclining and half-sitting; we remained in this condition, until the first light of day broke in on us. In this condition we were unable to sleep; for, ever and anon, groans and curses were heard from many a poor wounded soldier, and persons were passing up and down the stairway, stepping on and over us, and the droppings of their their shoes and boots falling upon us. As soon as we could see to walk we abandoned our filthy quarters, and ascertaining that the camp of the Thirteenth Tennessee Regiment lay three miles north of Corinth, and learning nothing of our boys at the hotel, we walked out to the camp. It was a dark and gloomy morning, and our route lay up the track of the railroad, and as the ground was muddy and slippery, and as I carried a large pair of saddle-bags filled with provisions, it may be readily believed that, by the time we reached the camp, I was somewhat exhausted. We found our boys there resting, after the battle of Shiloh, or, as it was also named "Pittsburg Landing," and spent the day in camp. Dr. Gray remained there until young Loughridge (who had been left behind after the battle among the wounded) was brought back, more dead than alive. The other boys of our set were left in camp as they were unhurt. But he was conveyed carefully back to La Grange, and tenderly nursed in the home of Dr. Gray, until, contrary to all expectation, through assiduous care and the best medical skill and attention under God's blessing, he was, after long convalescence, so far restored as to return to service, but never sufficiently so to enter the ranks. He became usefully

employed in the hospitals and in clerical work, to the close of the war.

On the way back to La Grange, Rev. R. R. Evans and I took a flat car, as there was no better mode of travel offered, all the cars belonging to a long train being filled with the sick, wounded, and dying soldiers, and after reaching nearly the end of the route to La Grange the train was derailed, and several of the cars containing the wounded were thrown off the track and some of the soldiers dreadfully crushed. We were thrown off our flat, and deposited in safety ten or twenty feet from the track upon a sand bank; making a marvelous escape by the kindness of our Heavenly Father; and with no further accident we reached our homes. The long train, after being replaced on the track, proceeded to transport its freight of the wounded and helpless soldiers to the hospitals along the route, where they were to be cared for.

The Confederate army lay at Corinth after the battle of Shiloh, recruiting and awaiting the further movements and orders from headquarters, for nearly two months. They evacuated the place on the 30th of May, as a Federal force of 100,000 men, under the command of General Halleck, was led against them. Fort Pillow was abandoned June 4th, and Memphis was captured on the 6th, after our little flotilla was destroyed. And as New Orleans had been captured on the 25th of April, we, in our La Grange homes, were threatened north, east, south and west, by hostile forces.

It was about this time that the General Assembly of the Southern Presbyterian Church was to meet, according to adjournment, in Memphis; but the fact that this was rendered impossible in consequence of the invasion of the entire region around the city, led to the necessity of our meeting in Montgomery, Ala., as that city was, at that time, undisturbed by war, and had been the place voted for as desirable, next to Memphis. Inasmuch, therefore, as I had been

made, at the Augusta Assembly, Stated Clerk, I made all the needed preparations to leave home, and to be present at that meeting. I left home in ample time to have reached there, and I had gone so far as to Oxford, Miss., my old home, when, upon deliberation, and seeking counsel above, I decided to return, as I had every reason to apprehend that, by pursuing my journey, I should be entirely cut off from home by the Federal troops before the time of my return, and so be unable to join my family. In this way I failed to be present at the Montgomery meeting of the General Assembly.

I have already referred to the fact that I spent the summer of 1862, and until December of that year, in La Grange, during which period there were occasional raids upon us by the Federals. But about the latter part of April, previous to the evacuation of Corinth by our troops, quite a number of sick soldiers were sent up from camp to the hospital at La Grange, one of whom was my son George, and with him a young man from Mississippi, by name Walker, both of whom I took into my house to be nursed and attended. As there were a good many of our soldiers in hospital there, I prevailed upon those who had control of the transportation on the railroad to send up a sufficient number of box cars to La Grange to convey them down into Mississippi, for the reason that there was no doubt of the speedy advance of the enemy to the place, and the result would be the capture of all these sick soldiers as prisoners. I then had my two sick men placed in comfortable cots on board of a close car, and accompanying them myself as far down into Mississippi as Oxford, left them in the hands and care of friends until they recovered sufficiently to rejoin the army at Tupelo, on the M. & O. R. R. I returned in time to witness the entry of a large body of hostile troops into La Grange, on the 13th of June. This body of the enemy remained in the possession of the place until somewhere about the middle of July, when,

for some cause or other, I know not why, they evacuated the place. Just before they left, as I had every reason to believe they were there for permanent occupation, suspecting that they would begin very soon depredations, and persecutions of all who were not *loyal*, I left, without their knowledge, and visited the army at Tupelo, and spent the Sabbath preaching to the troops. After a day or two spent there, I learned that the enemy had left La Grange, and I secured a safe return to my home, and there remained, with various interruptions from the Federal raids, until some time in November, when a larger body of Grant's army took possession of the town and country, as already stated, and, with one garrison after another, held possession of it until the close of the war. I have now brought my history of these eventful times of the country and of the church, evenly up in parallel columns, to the time when, as already related, I effected my final escape from the hostile lines.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Resumption of the Narrative of the Escape, and Mode of Life in Mississippi.—First Occupation, and Service until the Spring of 1873.

WE—that is Mr. J. O. Hardeman, the son-in-law of Dr. Gray, and I—found ourselves, on the morning of the second day after our escape through the Federal lines, mounted, and leaving the premises of our kind and hospitable friend, Captain Jones. And although we were, in one sense, safe, yet we were by no means without some apprehension in regard to our success in prosecuting our onward journey south. Marauding and irresponsible parties of these reckless soldiers were known to be roving through the surrounding country, in search of booty, or mischief, and it was with some misgivings that we commenced our ride on that morning. We avoided all public roads at the outset, and after winding about through paths and unfrequented and unsettled parts of the country along the borderland of Tennessee and Mississippi, we found ourselves, about noon of that day, south of the little hamlet of Saulsbury, only nine miles from La Grange! Not long after we reached a public road leading south. As we began to breathe somewhat more freely, we espied a Federal soldier, as we supposed him to be as he approached, just before us, coming on horseback in our front, and meeting us. We now felt that we were probably at bay, and that we should be arrested. But, unaccountably, he passed us without interruption, and we went on our way without any further incident, and with our minds relieved and our hearts lightened. We had decided before we left La Grange to divest our-

selves of every external kind of baggage, lest it might awaken suspicion that we were refugees, should we fall into company with any person or persons unknown to us. Hence we had nothing like saddle-wallets, or portmanteaus, about us, but would have readily passed for persons near home, or within their own region of country visiting. The consequence was that we were clothed with just as many pairs of underwear and upper garments as we could draw over our persons; and in this way, while we added to the *mass* and *bulk* of our persons, it became somewhat inconvenient and uncomfortable as a style of dress. Still, we bore it in the prospect of making our successful journey out of a place rendered hateful by the sight of the "Boys in blue," and in hope of getting to the free land of Dixie!

We arrived in safety about dark at the residence of an old friend of mine, a gentleman by the name of Blackwell, a planter, whose hospitality I had enjoyed on former occasions, and where I was sure of a cordial welcome. But on first arriving we learned to our dismay that the husband and father of this worthy family had been arrested by a roving band of Southern Yankees, as they were styled, and carried as a prisoner to the camp of the Federal army in Tennessee, and for no other reason than that he was a secessionist in principle, though a non-combatant by reason of being over age. My recollection now is that, as I afterwards learned from others who knew the facts, he refused to take the oath of allegiance, and was kept a prisoner until he died of exposure and severe privation of all comfort. The lady of the house, not recognizing us at first, and being apprehensive of all visitors, in consequence of the state of the country, and by reason of her recent experience, declined to entertain us. But as soon as I made myself known to her she was glad to receive and take care of us, and felt herself thankful for our visit.

When we heard from her the story of her husband's cap-

ture, and that this roving band of Southern robbers were in that part of the country, committing the same kind of outrages at other points, we were again thrown into fresh apprehension lest we might still be overtaken and arrested. We rested quietly through the night, and at an early hour after breakfast, on the next morning, we mounted and resumed our onward journey. As we proceeded, however, we were met by continual rumors of Yankees being ahead of us, and that they had possession of Pontotoc, a town directly on our route, and through which we were expecting to pass. Nor did we lose our apprehensions until we were met by the men of Van Dorn's command, on their way to Holly Springs, to cut off the supplies of Gen. Grant's army, which then had possession of Oxford, Mississippi. Then we dismissed all our fears and felt secure, for the time, of reaching our journey's end in perfect safety. A description of this expedition of Van Dorn and his brigade will repay perusal, as it certainly was among the most brilliant exploits achieved during the war.

It was at the time when Grant was projecting an invasion of Mississippi, through the interior of the State, so as to capture Vicksburg on the land east of the Mississippi river. He had massed a very large force in and around Oxford, and while he held possession of the town, General W. T. Sherman was holding his headquarters not far distant in the country. Relying upon the Mississippi Central Railway for transportation of his supplies, he had stationed a garrison of some 1,500 men, under command of Colonel ————, and had accumulated an immense quantity, and vast stores of all sorts of provisions and munitions of war, at the town of Holly Springs, distant thirty milus north of Oxford, on the railroad. As it was known throughout the country that such was the fact, a body of the Confederate cavalry, under the command of General Van Dorn, were secretly collected with the plan of cutting off the supplies of the army of inva-

sion, and thus to compel General Grant to abandon his grand expedition through Mississippi. Accordingly, with about 2,500 cavalry troops, Van Dorn made very quietly a circuitous march far to the east of Grenada, and having arrived at a sufficiently safe distance from the enemy, he turned northward, through Pontotoc and Chickasaw counties; then winding again westward, he made his way through the south-east corner of Marshall county, and about daylight of the 20th or 21st of December, he dashed into Holly Springs with his men, and capturing, by complete surprise, the entire garrison of 1,500 men, proceeded to destroy the whole amount of the accumulated stores of General Grant's army, by burning and destruction in every way. It was reported that these stores, piled up in the court-house and in the railroad depot building, and standing on the ground from the town to the station, consisting of barrels of flour four deep in a row, and other needful supplies, were estimated at a value of millions of dollars, and of all this nothing was saved.

Whatever truth or exaggeration may have been found to be the case in these reports, the result proved to be that General Grant was compelled to break up his entire plan of a Southern campaign, and to retreat with his grand army precipitately to the northward, in the direction of Memphis, where he employed himself in concerting and preparing other, and more promising, plans of campaign.

As Van Dorn had no artillery and no transportation, he seemed to be satisfied with the success of his expedition, and made his way on the west side of the Mississippi Central R. R. safely down to Grenada, whence he had begun his march.

To return from this digression, Mr. Hardeman and I had fallen in with Van Dorn's men, in straggling companies of three or four, as they were on the way to Holly Springs, and from them we learned that our way south would be quite safe. They told us, furthermore, that the cavalrymen of the enemy

had been to Pontotoc, but having heard something of Van Dorn's expedition, they returned in great haste to Oxford, to report to Grant. But they were too late, Van Dorn had reached Holly Springs and had accomplished his purpose. We rode on without anything to obstruct our journey, until Wednesday, 24th of December. We separated on that day, as we arrived at Shuqualak, a station of the Mobile and Ohio R. R. Here Mr. H. relieved me of my faithful friend, Dr. Gray's fine horse, and he stopped with a relative who resided there. The train passed shortly, and I took a seat for Meridian, whither I was bound. I was unexpectedly gratified to find on the train my friend and brother, Rev. W. C. Emerson, a Presbyterian minister, on his return to his home near Meridian, having been on a trip up the country. We arrived at our destination about 11:30 o'clock P. M., and, on his invitation, I spent the night at his house comfortably and pleasantly. I met at Meridian several of my old friends of former days, and was kindly welcomed by them all. As Mr. Emerson was at this time the stated supply of one of the churches to which I had been for several years preaching statedly, Mt. Moriah, when my home was in Jasper county, Miss., during the interval from 1841 to 1848, I was very easily persuaded to accompany him on the following Saturday to his appointment. There I had the pleasure of meeting many old friends, who had been my parishioners fourteen years previously, and among them was my devoted friend, Mrs. Watson Evans, at whose house I had the great pleasure of making my home during much of the time of my war pilgrimage, from 1862 to 1865.

My first and most earnest desire, now that I felt myself safe among friends in the South, was to get some employment in which I might be useful. It was suggested that it would be well to pay a visit to my friend and brother, Dr. J. R. Wilson, of Augusta, Ga., with whom I had been closely associated in the organization of the General Assembly in

the previous year. I remained for a few days in Mississippi, with my old friends, visiting and preaching among them, and then turned my way to Georgia. Passing through Atlanta, I found my son George there, in the hospital, after the battle of Murfreesboro, but convalescent. I was with him one day, and after furnishing him with some needed clothing, I pressed on to Augusta. Here, after conference with Dr. Wilson and the Committee of the Bible Society of the Confederate States, I was appointed agent of the Society for the West, which I gladly accepted, and returned to Mississippi, made the necessary preparations, and began the work of the agency on the 7th February, 1863. In this work I continued for three months, presenting the cause to the people of Columbus, Brandon, Meridian, Enterprise, Jackson, Grenada, and to the country churches of that region, successfully, as the people of all these places were very zealous in the interest of the Confederacy, on every account. As the General Assembly had adjourned at Montgomery, Ala., to meet in Columbia, S. C. on the 7th of May, and as I was stated clerk, I suspended the work of the agency to attend that meeting. On my way to Columbia, in passing through Augusta, I presented my report of the first quarter of my work, and settled my accounts with the committee.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Appointed Commissioner of Army Missions in the Mississippi Army. —Two Sad Events of the Year.—Arrival of My Children from La Grange.

THE third annual meeting of the General Assembly occurred, according to appointment, in Columbia, S. C., on May 7, 1863, and there were in attendance during its sessions forty ministers, and twenty-four ruling elders. Only thirty-five of the forty-five Southern Presbyteries were represented at this meeting; the Synod of Arkansas had but one of its four Presbyteries represented; the Synod of Nashville only two; the Synod of Texas none at all, as the enemy had possession of the river, and of the city of New Orleans. But it was quite an important meeting, as may be seen by reference to the Minutes of 1863. Among other measures adopted at this meeting was the inauguration of a system of chaplaincies, to be managed by the Executive Committee of Domestic Missions, to supply the religious wants of the army. On motion of Dr. B. M. Palmer, the Assembly resolved to engage for one hour in a free conference upon that subject. Dr. Palmer had received a communication addressed to the Assembly by Mr. Samuel Barnett, of Georgia, in which this subject was presented for consideration, and he had sent at the same time, by letter, the sum of five hundred dollars collected in Washington, Ga., for the purpose of assisting in the support of army chaplains who might be appointed under the authority of the General Assembly. The result was, that the Standing Committee on Domestic Missions, in their report, recommended that we proceed to es-

tablish the office of commissioner to each of the grand armies of the Confederacy, whose duties are pointed out as follows: "(1,) To labor as chaplains; (2), to select, and secure other chaplains; (3), to procure commissions for those chaplains; (4), to welcome and employ other ministers on temporary visits to the army, and give them opportunities for usefulness; (5), to circulate books and tracts, etc.; (6), to organize this work, so that our church should have the opportunity of doing good in this interesting field of labor."

Rev. B. T. Lacy was appointed Commissioner to the Army of Virginia, and Dr. Palmer was appointed "provisionally to the Army of Tennessee." He was appointed in this way because he stated that he must be "left to his own discretion with regard to the length of time, and he proposed to serve "on his own charges." It was also left to the Executive Committee to appoint other commissioners to the other great armies of the Confederacy.

Under this last provision, I was appointed Commissioner to the Army of Mississippi, then under the command of General Polk. Whereupon I resigned the agency of the Bible Society, and entered at once upon the discharge of the duties of the new office of commissioner to the army. My time was spent in visiting brigades and preaching to the soldiers, every facility for this being allowed by the commanding officers; and visiting hospitals where our wounded and sick men were confined; paying the salaries of our chaplains, and aiding in every way in the work of preaching and instruction of the army within my assigned field of labor. I can give only a brief statement of the work actually done by me during the year while I held the office. I preached then not less than one hundred sermons, and to do this I had to travel from one brigade to another, many miles apart; and from hospital to hospital, located in Montgomery and Meridian, and Selma and Marion and Jackson, and in these places, not once only, but repeatedly, and so, with some in-

terruptions upon other work assigned by the Assembly, I was not allowed much time to rest.

The Assembly of 1863 acted also on an overture from East Hanover Presbytery, recommending that the Assembly take measures to secure a union between the Old and New School branches of the Presbyterian Church. It was, therefore, agreed that a commitee, consisting of Rev. R. L. Dabney, D. D., Rev. J. N. Waddel, D. D., Rev. William Brown, D. D., Rev. J. B. Ramsey, D. D., Rev. E. T. Baird, D. D., Col. J. T. L. Preston, and F. N. Watkins, Esq., be appointed to confer with a similar committee, should any such be appointed from the United Synod of the Presbyterian Church, touching the matter of a union between that body and the General Assembly.

Accordingly, about the twenty-fifth of July, this committee met a committee from the United Synod, in the city of Lynchburg, Va., and under the joint chairmanship of Dr. Dabney on our behalf, and the eminent Dr. J. C. Stiles on their part, we prayerfully and candidly discussed for some days all the doctrinal points which might be supposed to be at issue between the two bodies, and agreed to report favorably to the two separate bodies at their next annual meeting in 1864.

My time was spent in these various ways most generally in Mississippi, but occasionally in adjoining States, as it was a part of my duty as commissioner to visit the churches, and lay before them the wants of the army as to religious instruction and preaching, and to raise money for the salaries of those chaplains who were sent to the army by our Executive Committee of Domestic Missions. I was much on the various railroads, passing through the territory occupied by Gen. Polk's division, and spent a part of my time in Montgomery, where my eldest brother, Prof. James P. Waddel, lived, and sometimes in Jackson, Mississippi, in both of which cities were large hospitals. On one of my visits to

Jackson I met the intelligence of two deaths which occasioned deep distress to me. The one of these was that of a very dear and intimate friend of mine, Rev. John H. Miller, of Pontotoc, the pastor of the Presbyterian church in that place. I give this as an incident of very deep interest on two accounts: (1), The loss of a noble and gifted character, who was the centre of not only a large circle of admiring friends in the community of his residence, and of devoted church members whom he served as their spiritual leader and devoted friend, but the almost idolized husband and father of a large family, who regarded him with most tender affection, and profoundest reverence and esteem. The other consideration justifying a narration or record of his death is the fact that it furnishes an illustration of the fearful horrors of the brutal and unnatural war of 1861–'65. The death of Rev. Mr. Miller was on this wise:

He was an ardent Southern patriot, and on the call for troops by the State authorities, he volunteered as a cavalry man, and was elected captain of a company, and served in Kentucky for a while. He very soon was promoted to a colonelcy, but he soon also made the discovery that, on account of the uncontrollable wickedness of soldiers in camp, he was sadly out of place, and he resigned and returned home. He was on a ministerial visit to Ripley, to aid the pastor, Rev. Wm. A. Gray, in conducting a sacramental meeting. He had the appointment to preach on Sabbath morning, when the intelligence reached him, on Saturday evening, at the house of Judge Rogan where he was entertained, that Ripley was occupied by a body of cavalry commanded by the notorious Hurst, who, though a citizen of Tennessee, had entered the Federal service, and had raised troops from among his neighbors for the scourging and ravaging of the country. Mr. Miller, of course, abandoned the appointment of the next day, and after remaining and spending the night with his friend in safety, the question of the best course for him

to pursue under the circumstances, was discussed. His host strenuously insisted on the propriety of his remaining secreted on his premises until the raid under Hurst should be finished and the raiders should have departed. But Mr. Miller insisted on going on home at once, as he felt sure that he would get safely on his way. In pursuance of this determination he mounted his horse and in a short time he met one of Hurst's lieutenants, with an attendant Federal soldier, having two Confederate soldiers as prisoners, and he was captured. As they were then on the way to Ripley, Mr. M. made the attempt to grasp the pistol from the holsters of the officer as they rode on abreast, whereupon he was immediately shot, and again, after falling from his horse, was shot a second time, and the body was left lying in the public road, dead, after they had robbed him of his horse, his watch, and a sermon, for which last article they, doubtless, had very little use!

Thus this most excellent man, and influential and useful minister, was ruthlessly murdered by a vagabond raider, who was only a vile traitor to his country, and the community deprived of a high-toned citizen, and a most virtuous and lovely family plunged into the deepest grief. The body lay exposed during half the day, until discovered by a friend, Mrs. B., living near, and then it was carefully taken and transported to Pontotoc, where it was placed in the care of the disconsolate family, and consigned by sorrowing friends to his last resting place.

The other case, one of a more private nature, was the death of William C. Gray, the eldest son of Dr. Gray, of whom we have recorded on a previous page that he had been graduated in the Class of 1861, of La Grange College. Willie, as he was called by us all, was a very remarkable youth. Lovely and amiable in his disposition, attractive in person and gentle in manner, he was bright and promising intellectually, and, to crown all his other traits, he was a modest,

earnest Christian. He was among the first to volunteer for the war, and I remember the morning when he and his classmate, Charles V. Thompson, were standing at the depot, awaiting the arrival of the train that was to convey them to camp, and where they were to enter the lists and encounter the perils and hardships of war. Prof. Meigs and I standing near, the remark was made by one of us, and affirmed by the other, "Is this not costly food for bullets?" And so it was. They were comrades in many an army experience, but Willie never returned to his home and dear ones. His ending of earthly life and work was as follows:

In the latter part of July, 1862, after the evacuation of Corinth by Beauregard, and the arrangement made by which General Bragg was to invade Kentucky, the army was marched in force into Kentucky, and, on the 30th of August, General Kirby Smith, with a division to which our boys belonged, met the enemy at Richmond,, Ky., and achieved a victory. After this fight, and Bragg's battle with a Federal force, at Perryville, under Buel, the Southern troops retreated through Cumberland Gap, carrying with them immense quantities of supplies of every description, but having gained no other advantages whatever. Our boys, Willie Gray, George, my son, and their companions, West and Thompson, came safely out of the battle of Richmond, but on General Kirby Smith's continuance of his march towards Covington, Willie Gray was taken sick and left on the way for recovery, at Cynthiana, Ky., so that when the army of General Smith was on the retreat, he was unable to go with the rest, and the enemy following on the track of our army, found Willie and took him prisoner, and he was taken to Cairo, where he died and was buried. Of all this, his father was utterly ignorant until the winter of 1862, or spring of 1863. Dr. Gray, having heard in some way that the Federals had stopped in Cairo, thinking that probably Willie was there, took the train and went up to Columbus,

Ky., soon after I had made my escape from La Grange. But when he arrived there he learned that all possible chance to reach Cairo had been cut off by reason of a panic that prevailed in Cairo, on account of a report that Forrest, with an immense cavalry force, was approaching. So he returned, and came down through Mississippi, and went on to Vicksburg, having learned that an exchange was to be made there, and hoping to find Willie there. When he reached there, he found, indeed, that the exchange had been agreed upon, and that many of our boys were there on their way home, paroled; but, alas! his boy had been left in his grave, at Cairo. After the war, to end the story, Dr. Gray succeeded in recovering Willie's remains, and having them brought to Memphis and buried in his family lot, in Elmwood Cemetery.

As I have said in a previous part of this chapter, I learned all this on the occasion of one of my visits to Jackson. It so happened that I reached Jackson just in the evening of the day on which Dr. Gray had left Jackson, to return home to La Grange. He learned in Jackson that I was expected in that place, and he left letters explanatory of all his movements subsequent to the time of my departure from La Grange. Among other letters, I found one from my daughter, Mary West, informing me that she and her sister Bessie, and her brother Gray, had come out of the lines of the enemy, and were at Pontotoc at that time. My joy may be imagined more truly than can be expressed by me in words. I hastened back to my home at Mrs. Evans', packed up and took the train for Meridian, thence to Okolona, and then, by hiring a mule, I rode on to Pontotoc, and found my children safely resting with the bereaved family of my murdered friend and brother, Miller.

Let me state a fact for my abolition friends to explain. With my children when they came, one of my old servants, without any expression of such a wish on their part, came

out with them, determined to share their lot whatever it might be, leaving her own children behind. To dismiss this point, she remained with them all the rest of her days, taking care of them until she closed her faithful life of service, and was nursed kindly and tenderly in her last illness, and buried decently, with the assistance of friends, at their home in Mississippi, and there she rests in peace until the morning of the resurrection. She died in faith. She would hardly have left her own children had she not loved these children that she had "raised;" and she would hardly have loved them if she had been so cruelly and unjustly treated as the falsely so-called friends of the colored people delight to represent.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

More Perils and Escapes.—Residence at Meridian and at Montgomery.—Wanderings.—Change of Work.—In Danger of Capture.

DURING this year, 1863, several of the more disastrous and disheartening misfortunes came upon the Confederate government. Among them was the fall of Vicksburg, which was surrendered on the morning of the 4th of July by a capitulation, the parties to which were General Pemberton, of the Confederate army, and General Grant, in command of the Union forces. After this event there was a general expectation that the armies under Grant and Sherman would march across Mississippi, eastward from Vicksburg, and such an expedition did advance as far as Jackson, and rumors reached Meridian that the forces were on the march, having crossed Pearl River. As might be supposed, great panic seized the people about Meridian, and nearly all were flying from their homes and temporary places of refuge. As my children were at the time making their home near Meridian, with my friend, Rev. Mr. Emerson, I also removed them, as speedily as possible, to Montgomery, Ala., and placed them there in my brother's family. In this place they had a comfortable home for nine months, while I was almost entirely devoted to the work of visiting the various points of the western army and the many hospitals in Alabama and Mississippi, making my headquarters at Montgomery. I spent the year 1863 in hard work among the soldiers and chaplains, in this way having little time to rest, and often suffering from loss of sleep, and being obliged to

avail myself of modes of transportation of the most uncomfortable and disagreeable sort. I was received most cordially always by the officers and private soldiers, and the church chaplaincy with which I was charged as commissioner and superintendent, during 1863–'4, was, I have no doubt, attended with great benefit to the army, as I know that many of our most godly and zealous ministers devoted themselves to the work of preaching to the soldiers in camp and in visiting the hospitals and ministering to the spiritual wants of the sick and wounded, and soothing and cheering the last hours of many a brave and gallant soldier.

It was previous to the fall of Vicksburg that I determined to pay a visit to our boys, J. D. West, C. V. Thompson, and my son George, in camp at Shelbyville, Tenn. I left Montgomery on June 12th, and reached Chattanooga on Saturday evening, and spent the night there. Here I met with some of my La Grange friends in the hospital, who gave me a considerable budget of news in regard to the state of matters in our old home. On awaking, I passed through a mental conflict on the subject of my duty as regards prosecuting my onward travel on the Sabbath. I arrayed the arguments *pro and con* about as follows.

1. The evils of going forward on the one side, and those of resting on the other: 1st, If I remain I shall incur additional expense. 2. Be lonely: 1st, If I travel I shall fall in with uncongenial company; 2nd, Shall be apprehensive of peril for travelling. 3. My conscience will condemn me. What are the reasons for travelling? 1. I shall be with the boys; 2. May attend divine service in camp, perchance even have the privilege of listening to Dr. Palmer. Even with these thoughts passing through my mind I saw that the decision was that I should remain in Chattanooga. But when I considered, 1st, that by remaining I should enjoy the privilege of reading my Bible; 2nd, could attend divine service in some of the churches; 3rd, the travel was not a work

of necessity or of mercy; 4th, I should have a clear conscience; 5th, it was certainly *right* to remain; I hesitated no longer as to this question, and spent the Sabbath reading my Bible, attending preaching both morning and evening, by a young brother then a stranger to me, but since then well known as Rev. H. B. Boude, D. D., pastor of several churches in various parts of the Southern Presbyterian Church, and President of Austin College, Sherman, Texas. At the time to which I refer he was a chaplain in the Confederate army. His text of the morning was Matt. xvi. 26. In the evening heard Rev. Mr. Boude again, text not now remembered.

I reached Shelbyville about 6 o'clock P. M., and by the kindness of a friend, who was Post-commandant, I obtained the use of a horse, and rode out to the camp, about three miles, and found the boys well, and glad to see me. I remained in camp and in the town about a week, during which time I preached to the soldiers of Vaughan's and Walthall's commands four times, and had the pleasure of meeting Dr. Palmer and of hearing him preach to a vast assembly in the open air; and as he stood upon a rocky mound, and the audience stood, and sat, and lay upon the slope before him, the scene was unspeakably solemn, and the sermon equally solemn and impressive. Among the various regiments I met many of my old pupils, former students of the University and of La Grange College, some of whom survived the war, and others passed away during its continuance, either in battle or in the hospital.

In leaving the camp, Dr. Palmer and I called on General Bragg at his headquarters, and were received courteously. I obtained from the General a passport, and, leaving Shelbyville on Saturday, 20th June, arrived at Wartrace, the point of junction of the branch road from Shelbyville with the main road to Chattanooga; found myself checked by orders from headquarters that all citizens should leave the

train, as a brigade of soldiers had been unexpectedly ordered to Chattanooga, and thence to East Tennessee, to reinforce General Buckner, to meet a raid of the enemy on Knoxville. I returned by next train to camp, and after spending Sabbath there, left again on Tuesday, and arrived, without further interruption, at Montgomery.

With the exception of my trip to Lynchburg, Va., to meet the Joint Committee of the Southern Presbyterian Church and the United Synod, to which I have referred, I spent my time as usual in travelling from post to post, from hospital to hospital, in prosecution of my duties as commissioner. The most important event of the war, the fall of Vicksburg, occurred on July 4th. This rendered it necessary to remove my children to a more secure place of refuge, inasmuch as there were immediately in circulation flying rumors of the approach of the Federal troops toward Meridian. There were immense crowds of refugees passing through the place, and the trains on the railroads were filled to their utmost capacity, so that I found great difficulty in securing transportation for my family and their baggage. I was successful, however, in getting to Montgomery *via* Mobile, and placing them in care of my brother, James P. Waddel, where they were in perfect safety and comfort. I returned to Mississippi very soon, as the rumors of an eastern advance of General Grant's army proved to be false. A very large number of the Vicksburg soldiers having been released on parole, and among them all their officers in command, an encampment was formed at Enterprise, on the Mobile and Ohio railroad, and there I spent a great deal of my time, and preached much in the camp and in the Presbyterian church, and thus I worked on through the winter of 1863–'64.

I must not omit to mention that Rev. Dr. E. H. Rutherford, having been pastor of the Presbyterian church in Vicksburg previous to the beginning of the siege, remained

in the city during the entire time of its investment by Grant, suffering all the hardships to which the besieged army and the citizens had been subjected, and came out with the soldiers who were on parole. He soon became actively engaged as a missionary chaplain to the troops in camp at Enterprise, at the same time supplying the Presbyterian church at that place.

We were associated in many such works in the camps and hospitals. There were many other chaplains with whom it was my privilege to associate during those times of gloom and trial. Among them I call to mind Rev. Dr. Thomas R. Markham, Rev. Dr. J. H. Bryson, and the brethren, Rev. Dr. Richmond McInnis, and Rev. Dr. H. M. Smith, Rev. D. D. Sanderson, and A. P. Silliman, Rev. S. J. Bingham, and Rev. Dr. W. T. Hall, with many others of our most devoted and prominent ministers, all of whom were faithful and zealous in supplying the religious wants of the army.

The year 1864 began darkly and gloomily, both within me and in the prospects of the country. The first service I was called to perform was to officiate at the marriage of Miss Kate Calhoun to a Lieut. George Jones, of our army. The lady was the daughter of James L. Calhoun, (a nephew of the great J. C. Calhoun,) who had been a pupil of mine in the first school I ever taught, when I was in my nineteenth year, but who was not much younger than I. He now held some office under the Confederacy, having his place of business in Montgomery. The ceremony was solemnized at the town of Tuskeegee, in the presence of a fine assemblage of friends and relatives of the bride, who was a most charming lady.

The next incident that occurred in my private history was that my youngest boy, now just having passed his seventeenth birthday, entered the army of the Confederacy in January, and thus I had furnished to the cause of my native South, in her struggle for independence, my two sons and

an almost innumerable host of young friends and former pupils, among whom was the husband of my eldest daughter, Rev. James D. West, and the affianced of my younger daughter, C. V. Thompson.

The months rolled slowly on through the winter and spring, with one additional incident in my narrative which I propose to record, which, while it was in the line of my work, was exceedingly perilous, and unpleasant at times, until its final and fortunate denouement. About February 1st I left Meridian with a view of paying a visit to North Mississippi, to raise money for army missions, and visit Forrest's division of cavalry, then in camp at Oxford. I arrived at Oxford on the 3rd of February, and made my home with my long-tried and devoted friends, Mr. Rascoe and family, visiting many friends beside, all of whom seemed glad to see me. I preached in Oxford to a crowd, and raised $218.75 for the army mission. Also preached at College Church, and raised for army missions $181, for the Bible cause $200, and for Foreign Missions $60—total at both places, $759,75. I remained in and about Oxford until February 8th. During this interval the town was filled with exciting rumors of the Yankees having captured Jackson and Canton and going on eastward, our troops falling back. It was also reported that a strong column of Federal cavalry was moving out of Memphis. We were told also that the forces under Forrest were to evacuate Oxford, and all the army stores were to be moved, and every one was to abandon Oxford who could get away. Of course, under these circumstances of peril and confusion, nothing could be accomplished by stopping longer there; accordingly, I obtained from a friend a mule, and rode out to the neighborhood of Hopewell Church, and spent the night with Brother Patton, pastor, preached the next day (Tuesday, 9th), and raised $53 for army missions and $10 additional from Brother Patton. On Thursday, 11th, I rode over to Lebanon Church, driven in a buggy by Daniel Mc-

Farland, Jr., then a boy of twelve or fourteen years, now Rev. Dr. McFarland, of Staunton, Va. I preached at Lebanon Church on the 12th of February, and raised $106 for the mission.

I spent the night there, and we were still assailed with rumors of a confused and unsatisfactory nature. On the 13th, by another relay on a borrowed horse, and accompanied by a young friend, I rode over to Pontotoc and spent the night (Saturday) with my afflicted friends, the Miller family, of my murdered friend and brother, Rev. J. H. Miller, having an appointment to preach the next day at 11 o'clock. Early the next morning (Sabbath), just after dressing and coming from my room, I was met by a Confederate artilleryman in the hall, who told me that, having learned that I was at Mrs. Miller's, and supposing that I was not willing to be captured, he had come to warn me to leave Pontotoc as quickly as possible, as he had received reliable information that at New Albany, a small town about nineteen miles above Pontotoc, 12,000 cavalry troops, under a commander who was best known as "Whiskey Smith," had encamped the night before, and would probably reach Pontotoc about 10 o'clock A. M. Of course, I expressed my thanks to my unknown friend for his kindness in giving me this timely warning, and my mind was quickly made up to leave at once. But I had no horse, nor had I made any preparation to obtain one. Making known my decision to the family that I would leave at the earliest moment, and at the same time the fact of my being without a horse or conveyance of any kind whereby to make my escape, the whole difficulty was removed by the quick perception and generous proposal of Miss Mary Miller, the daughter of my friend, whose brutal murder has been recorded in a preceding chapter. To set the matter in its just light, it is worthy of the reader's time and attention to understand the circumstances connected with Miss Miller's conduct on this occa-

sion. Her eldest brother, Edward G. Miller, inheriting the ardent patriotism of his father, and fired with the martial spirit and unflinching courage which characterized his fellow-students of La Grange College, had volunteered in 1861, and joined a company of cavalry; and on occasion of an engagement which occurred between his company and a body of Federals near Moscow, ten miles west of La Grange, on the Memphis and Charleston railroad, young Miller was killed, and his horse and all his accoutrements were, of course, taken possession of by the enemy, as this engagement was disastrous to our forces. The sad intelligence of the death of this beloved young soldier having reached the family, Miss Mary heroically resolved to go to the camp of the enemy at Moscow and recover her brother's remains. She put her resolve into execution as soon as possible, went to the battle-field, and recovered from the commander the remains of her brother, and, by her eloquent appeals, also obtained his horse, saddle, and bridle, and succeeded in having all brought home in safety. The body lies buried by the side of the remains of his father in the cemetery at Pontotoc. The horse, a sacred and cherished memorial of the beloved brother, was taken care of, and it was on this occasion offered to me, in my dire extremity, as the means of my escape from the threatened capture. I shall never lose the sense of profound gratitude to Miss Mary, nor my admiration for her heroic character.

I was thus again, in the kind, protecting providence of God, enabled to escape what I conceived to be imminent peril, and I left Pontotoc, immediately after an early breakfast, for Okolona, the nearest station on the Mobile and Ohio railroad, at which place I proposed to take the train for Meridian. Here, however, I experienced the truth of the proverb, "Man proposes, but God disposes"; for as I approached Okolona I met a solitary horseman, just from the place, and from him I learned that the train I had pro-

posed to take had left Okolona, and that no other train was to be run on the road under present arrangements. He gave as the reason for this state of matters that the telegraph operator at Meridian had just sent his last dispatch over the wires to Okolona previous to his departure, to the effect that the advance of Sherman's army was just entering Meridian as he left.

Again I found myself "at my wit's end," and surely knew not "what next?" or whither to direct my steps. I rode on to the station, nevertheless, and, calling at the residence of an elder of our church, Mr. Shepherd, who received me kindly, I made known to him my pressing strait and my information in regard to the prospective invasion of the country by Smith's cavalry force, expressing my belief that the enemy would reach Okolona that day. He directed me to the house of another elder, Mr. Wiley Dearing, an old friend of mine, who lived four miles in the country, as the safest place of refuge. In the meantime he informed me that a lady at his house was just then expecting to leave for Georgia or South Carolina in a small vehicle or carriage, and that she wished, if possible, to leave next day, if not prevented, and she would be glad of my company and protection. He planned for me to go out at once to Mr. Dearing's and spend the night, and that he (Mr. Shepherd) would keep me informed as to the arrival or non-arrival of the Federal cavalry. If they should fail to come, he would send a horse for me on the next day, and I could then leave in safety. I carried out this plan; rode out and spent the night very pleasantly and very comfortably with my friend, Mr. Dearing, and next day, after leaving Miss Mary Miller's horse, etc., with him, with a letter informing her where the horse would be found, I rode back to Okolona. I found that the expected raid had not reached there, and that the arrangement which I had considered decided, that I should leave with the lady aforesaid, had failed, as she had aban-

doned the idea of leaving. So, once more, I was disappointed as to a way of escape, and the troops I so much dreaded were constantly expected. But the good providence of God was still over and round about me for my protection. I found at Okolona that a Confederate quartermaster's train, which had made Okolona headquarters all along, was preparing to leave and escape the enemy, and were to go east to Aberdeen that night. On calling on the officer in charge, I found, to my great gratification, that one of the men in the train was Captain Street, who had married a lady friend of my daughter, and making known to him my condition, he at once most kindly offered me a fine horse, saddle, and bridle, which I could use as far as Aberdeen. Mailing my letter to Miss Miller (informing her about her horse), I left about ten o'clock P. M., in company with my friend and his wife (who travelled in his buggy), with quite a cavalcade. We did not pause until about one o'clock A. M., having accomplished about ten miles. We remained there in perfect safety until next morning after breakfast, when we renewed our journey uninterruptedly to Aberdeen, which we reached about eleven o'clock A. M. Here we parted, my friend, Captain Street, having orders to proceed no farther on my route, and I gave up his horse, with earnest thanks for his great kindness.

I now began to realize that we were in no great danger of the pursuit I had so much dreaded, but, at the same time, there was the anxiety still resting upon my mind as to my future return to Montgomery, and as to the mode of prosecuting my route eastward.

At Aberdeen I was fortunate in meeting quite a number of old friends who had patronized the University at Oxford, Dr. Sykes, Mr. Randall, Mr. Evans, and others, besides also Ira G. Holloway and Lucien Sykes, former students at Oxford, and I am sure I never was more cordially received at any place in all my life. I found, however, at first,

very great difficulty in securing a plan of prosecuting my onward travel. After seeing my friends, and trying earnestly to get on in some way or other, one expedient after another having failed, I met with a gentleman, Mr. Walton, a citizen of Aberdeen, who had a pair of fine horses and a carriage which he was very anxious to save from the "Yankees." His plan was to send them to his son-in-law, a Dr. Green, who was a surgeon in the Confederate army. He had learned that Dr. Green, with all the Meridian medical staff, had, on the approach of Sherman's forces, made their escape, and taken up their headquarters at Marion, Ala. Still there remained another obstacle to the full and entire carrying out of the plan, and that was to have with me some companion or companions to aid me in the enterprise of driving the horses and taking care of them, for about one hundred miles across the country, and delivering everything safely to Dr. Green. Let me not omit to record another instance of the continual care and kindness of Divine Providence manifested toward me in all these perilous times. There were then in Aberdeen two officers of Gen. Joseph E. Johnson's army, on furlough, very anxious to get away before the enemy should reach there (for it was confidently expected that the forces of Smith would be in Aberdeen sooner or later), and when we met and compared notes we very quickly and successfully arranged to take charge of the entire establishment and deliver it to Dr. Green in Marion, Ala., this point being on the direct route which they must travel back to their command. These gentlemen were a Major Pegram, of Tippah county, Miss., and a Mr. Peck, of Aberdeen. A still more favorable circumstance for us was that the latter gentleman had a servant who would return with him to the army. So we had nothing to do but to make ourselves ready to go on our way rejoicing, in the most comfortable way possible, with a fine family carriage, a pair of fine horses, and a driver. Having stored away

our small amount of baggage in the vehicle, we left Aberdeen on Wednesday about sunset, and drove on over bad, miry roads, and spent the night very comfortably at a farm-house distant some six miles. How thankful was I that we were now evidently safe from pursuit, and that the way was now clear for an uninterrupted retreat from the dreaded foe! Our journey was successfully prosecuted through Pickens county, Ala., *via* Columbus, Miss., having a brief interview in the street of that city with my friend and brother, Rev. J. A. Lyon, D. D., who agreed with me that it was wise in us to place as great a distance as possible between the enemy and our fine establishment! We passed through Clinton, Eutaw, and Greensboro to Marion. As I passed the cemetery in Eutaw I recalled the fact that, just within a few hundred yards, lay buried the ashes of my first-born little boy, which we had laid to rest a quarter century previously, and nature even then claimed for his memory from my troubled heart the tribute due. We reached Marion on Saturday afternoon in perfect safety, and gladly delivered over to Dr. Green the equipage with which we had been entrusted by his father-in-law, Mr. Walton, of Aberdeen.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

FINALE OF THE SHERMAN-SMITH RAID.—RETURN TO MISSISSIPPI WITH MY CHILDREN.—MARRIAGE OF MY YOUNGEST DAUGHTER.—FOURTH MEETING OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY.—CHANGE OF LOCATION IN ARMY WORK.

I MET in Marion all the medical men who were in Meridian when I left there on my expedition of visiting the northern part of Mississippi, the account of which I have given in *extenso* in the preceding chapter. Dr. Isom, and Dr. John Smith, and Dr. Branham were of Oxford previous to the war; and besides them, I met also Dr. Frazier, an old friend, of Tupelo, Miss. I was greatly gratified also to meet again Rev. Dr. Raymond, pastor of the Presbyterian Church in Marion. I took up my quarters in the same building with the medical men, and preached twice on Sabbath, and collected $210 for army missions. I only remained in Marion until Monday morning, 22nd; when on my way to Montgomery, passing through Marion Junction Station, saw our troops in considerable numbers passing on to reinforce General Polk at Demopolis, who, with his army, was awaiting the advance of Sherman from Meridian. From them I learned that General Cheatham's Division was on the way to join General Polk, and accordingly I found this to be so on my arrival at Selma, for all of my boys were there awaiting orders to go by next train on to Demopolis. It was soon ascertained, however, that this expedition was needless, as General Sherman had evacuated Meridian, after burning the little village, and had marched back to Vicksburg. So far as I was able to learn the facts of these movements on the part of the enemy, they were about as

follows: It was the design of General Sherman to march his forces from Vicksburg eastward across the State, and that he, with these troops, would effect a junction at Meridian with a large body of cavalry from Memphis, under Smith, and then both bodies of troops united should continue their march across to Montgomery, and take possession of Alabama and Georgia. The entire plan was defeated by the cavalry under General Forrest, who met Smith in the prairies in the northeastern part of Mississippi, and drove him back, after a disastrous battle, with terrible loss. This being ascertained by Sherman, he left without further attempts at the grand invasion, and the troops which he had led in such formidable array were led back again by him, with the same experience of a certain king of France in the old couplet, of whom it is related that he—

"With twice ten thousand men,
Marched up the hill, and then marched back again."

As there was no further demand in that direction for reinforcements for General Polk's troops, General Cheatham's division was ordered to return to Georgia. Our boys were passing back through Montgomery, and we had pleasant visits from them until they were ordered on their way. They left in high spirits and good health, and we cheered them on to the front, and followed them with our fervent prayers, unconscious of the solemn trials through which we and they were destined to pass before we should be allowed to meet again.

My children had spent about nine months in Montgomery with my brother's family, but although I knew they were not only cordially welcome, but gladly entertained there, with their uncle, aunt and cousins, yet I felt that it would suit better on all hands that they should return to Mississippi, as the enemy had, at this time, ceased to be at all troublesome. I therefore made very comfortable arrange-

ments to have them make their home with Judge West, the father-in-law of my eldest daughter, her husband being in the army. This, I may say, was assuredly among the most secluded and inaccessible retreats, and consequently one of the safest places that could have been selected in the State, as a home for a family, where one might reasonably expect to be secure from raids, and at the same time affording all the comforts and social enjoyments of a most excellent Christian family. Judge West was a very prominent elder of our church, and universally esteemed for his excellent character and devoted piety, and was full of kindness. Here my daughters were welcomed by the judge himself, as well as by the ladies of the family, and in that retired spot they remained quietly until they were invited by Rev. J. H. Alexander, of Kosciusko, a neighboring town, to take part with him in a female academy located there, of which he was principal. During the latter part of their abode at Judge West's hospitable home, on the 25th of January, 1865, Charles V. Thompson, of whom I have written frequently in the preceding part of this memoir, came on a visit to my youngest daughter, on furlough from the army, and they were married after their long engagement. The invitation of the Rev. Mr. Alexander was accepted not long after this event, and they remained in the Academy as teachers, boarding with him, until the close of the war. There I for the present leave them, that I may go back to matters of public interest which occurred in the interim.

As the time approached for the fourth annual meeting of the General Assembly, commissioners began to make their appearance from various Presbyteries in the West, on their way to Charlotte, N. C. There was no commissioner from Arkansas, and Rev. R. F. Bunting was the sole representative of Texas, and this because he was already on the east side of the Mississippi, serving as chaplain in a Texas regiment. There were no commissioners at all from Nashville

Synod, as Tennessse, East and Middle, were overrun by the Federals. Still there were three from the Synod of Memphis, notwithstanding that West Tennessee and North Mississippi were in the hands and under the control of the enemy. We had a membership of sixty-five at Charlotte. We left Montgomery on the 29th of April, and spent the Sabbath in Augusta, Ga.

I must not omit to make mention of a signal escape from a sudden and violent death which I experienced, through the mercy of God, just as I left Montgomery. I was conveyed in a buggy, driven by a rash driver, to the depot, and on approaching the railroad, an unobserved freight train came down just in front of our crossing. At this the horse took fright, whirled suddenly, and would have dashed across and carried us all over a precipice, but by a kind protecting Providence he fell, broke a shaft and a wheel of the buggy, and I stepped out upon the ground in safety. Truly thankful for this preservation, I took my seat on the train, and, in company with other commissioners, we passed successfully through Columbus, Macon, and Augusta, reaching the latter place on Saturday, where we spent Sabbath. We arrived in Charlotte, N. C., on Monday, 2nd of May, and as there still was an interval of two days before the meeting of the Assembly, I availed myself of the opportunity to visit Davidson College, distant about twenty miles. There I spent a pleasant time, in company with Dr. Kirkpatrick, the President of the College, and my former colleague and friend, Prof. J. R. Blake, the exercises of the College being still in operation; and although laboring under the terrible pressure of these fearful war times, it is a wonderful historic fact to her credit, that "Davidson College was one of the few colleges in the Confederacy not closed during the war."[1]

[1] Since writing this sentence, I learn that the University of Alabama was kept in operation during the war, and probably the Military Institutions.

At this meeting of the Assembly, on Thursday, 5th of May, Rev. Dr. John S. Wilson was elected Moderator. The most important measure adopted at this meeting was the union of the Southern Presbyterian Church with the United Synod of the Presbyterian Church. The report of the joint committee of these two bodies was read by the chairman of our committee, Rev. Dr. R. L. Dabney. There was a considerable discussion of the report *pro* and *con*, but with eight dissentients, some more and some less thoroughly opposed, it was passed and ratified.

I spent my time during the sessions of the Assembly at the house of a Captain White, of the Southern army, who was absent with his command; but we were hospitably entertained by Mrs. White, a noble-hearted Christian lady, who was sister-in-law of my classmate and friend, E. J. Erwin, in the University of Georgia, in 1828–'29. It was also a great joy to me that he was present, though not a commissioner to the Assembly, as we had an opportunity of personal intercourse during several days, which was our last meeting, as he did not long survive our separation. We found ourselves greatly changed. We were not only thirty-five years older than when we parted in Athens, Ga., in 1829, but, as we trusted, we had both experienced a still greater change in our spiritual life, having passed from the condition of careless young men to that of Christians, he to serve God as a ruling elder in the church, and I as a minister of the blessed gospel.

On my return west after the adjournment of the Assembly, as I passed through Columbia, S. C., I was informed by Dr. J. L. Wilson, Secretary of Domestic Missions, that I had been appointed commissioner to the Department of the Army, under the command of General Joseph E. Johnston. I stopped, therefore, at Atlanta as I passed, and ascertained that our army was falling back before Sherman; that the two armies were above Marietta, and all the sick and

wounded of our army were every day arriving at that point. I went then to Marietta, and, stopping with Dr. Setze, a friend, whose wife was my niece, I spent a night there, and on the morning of the next day I found, on a freight train, my son-in-law, James D. West, and my son, George, on sick furlough, going to the hospital at Newnan. Charles Thompson, who had been wounded, had also been sent back to Newnan, where he had friends, and was taken care of there. I remained a day with the boys, and after a hurried visit to Montgomery, and arranging business concerns there connected with my change of location, I returned to Newnan, and I learned that my youngest boy (Gray) also had been sent back, worn down and sick, but could not learn to what place he had been sent. After vain efforts to find him, I visited the hospital at La Grange, Ga., and there I found him, well cared for by some of my friends, among them Dr. Evans, surgeon in charge, one of my Aberdeen acquaintances. A brother Presbyterian minister, Rev. T. F. Montgomery, pastor at La Grange, after that removed my boy to his own house; and after I had preached at the hospital, on the 30th of June, I left Gray in good hands, and when he became convalescent, he went back to the army. I returned to Newnan, and found that James West had gone back to the front, but that George was still there. Rev. Dr. Stacey, pastor of the church at Newnan, was conducting a meeting of some interest, and many soldiers there in the hospital were attending, and some of them professed conversion, among whom was my son George, who joined the church at that time and place. I preached a week for Brother Stacey in Newnan, and once at a country church of his twelve miles west of Newnan. I was kindly entertained during my stay with Dr. Calhoun, and after a visit of a week at Marietta, where I waited on the sick and wounded, I had occasion to leave there for a few days. On my return to Marietta I found everything in great confusion. Dr. Setze's family

had left, with whom I had spent my time; his lot had been converted into a cavalry-horse lot, the house abandoned, and in the town the appearance was as if every one who could leave had left and were leaving. This was about July 1st. I remained until the night of the 3rd, when, learning that the place was to be evacuated, I went to headquarters and secured the appointment of agent to go with some government property to Atlanta that afternoon. I took my seat by the open door of a freight car loaded with stores, and as the train did not leave as early as was expected, I was a silent watcher for many hours of the silent but steady march of our army as they made their way to the point of safety beyond the Chattahoochee river, within seven miles of Atlanta. During this time the enemy kept up a sullen shelling of the now empty town and firing their cannon upon the unoccupied works. All reached the place of their encampment in safety, and I arrived in Atlanta about midnight of the 3rd. We learned that Sherman's army entered and took possession of Marietta on the morning of the 4th. General Johnson halted his army on the south bank of the river, and for the time the enemy moved slowly and cautiously down South.

CHAPTER XL.

Sojourn in Atlanta and in Camp.—General Johnson Relieved.—Evacuation of Atlanta.—Stay in Eufaula.—Death of my Son at Jonesboro.—Army Movement Toward Nashville.

I REMAINED in Atlanta about one month watching for opportunities to do something for the boys. It was just before the evacuation of Marietta by our troops that James West and a number of others, being out on a kind of skirmish west of Marietta, in the neighborhood of Kenesaw Mountain, were captured and sent to Johnson's Island as prisoners, and this put an end to their active service. They were not released until the close of the war. I found it almost impossible to do any thing in the way of my chaplaincy and commissioner work in Johnson's army, for the simple reason that they were not stationary long enough at a time for much visitation. I was making my headquarters in Atlanta, and took up my board at a house where one of my former La Grange pupils was boarding. He had been disabled in the army, and was ordered to serve on a military court that was sitting at that time in Atlanta. I shared his bed-room and his bed with him. His name was Wm. M. Ingram, and he was a universal favorite in college, and, surviving the war, became a Presbyterian minister, very acceptable and extensively useful, giving bright promise of a future in the ministry, when he was brought to a premature end of his term of service by a wasting insidious disease. With him I was very much blessed, as a friend and a congenial companion. I was able to go out to the camp every day for a short time, and spent one Sabbath at the headquarters of General Featherston with the Rev. Dr. Thomas R. Mark-

ham, and preached three times, once at Canty's Brigade and twice at Featherston's. While there engaged in preaching, some exciting news was brought into camp about the movements of the enemy. I spent the night there, however, and returned to Atlanta next morning. The first intelligence which we received on getting back was that orders had been received from Richmond relieving General Johnston, and putting General Hood at the head of the department. I have rarely ever witnessed such a distressing and disheartening influence produced by any piece of news as that which followed the removal of General Johnston, manifested in the saddened and gloomy appearance of the officers and private soldiers. At that time the General was assuredly the object of the admiration, confidence and love of the men of that army. The dissatisfaction was universal among the citizens and the whole community and the country.

The court to which I have referred, and with which I was somewhat associated as a boarder, was very soon after this ordered to remove their quarters to Macon. As I saw that there was no further work which I could do at that time, while there was nothing but one retreat after another in progress, I took advantage of the train on which the members of this court were to leave, and took passage for Macon. I hardly knew why. We arrived there on the evening of Friday, July 22nd, and spent that night there. Next morning found me desolate and lonely, in the utmost bewilderment and ignorance as to the course to be pursued under the surrounding circumstances. I knew that the way was blocked up to the Atlanta army, and the railroads were about to be closed as to their running in that direction. I, however, after breakfast, strolled along down to the depot, thinking that I might discover, by the movements of trains, in what direction to shape my course. Just as I reached the station, carpet-bag in hand, I found a train on the eve of departing on a trip to Eufaula, Ala., where a large hos-

pital had been established for our sick and wounded. As an acquaintance, standing on the platform of one of the passenger cars, beckoned to me to get upon the train, I did so. This gentleman was one of a relief committee sent up from South Georgia and Alabama to minister to the soldiers who were in the army from that region such articles of food and clothing as they should need, and he was now returning. My decision was made, without further deliberation, to go to the Eufaula hospital, and there await future developments. I was the more inclined to pay this visit to this place from the fact that a cousin of mine resided there, who had been my playmate, companion, and fellow-student at Athens, Ga., in our youthful days. We reached the place at a late hour that evening. On our way down we passed the place afterwards known by horrible notoriety as the Andersonville prison for the captured soldiers of the Federal army. Even then there were in prison, said to be, thirty thousand of the victims of the cruelty and savage barbarity of the wretch Wirz. He, at the close of the war, was arrested by the Secretary of War of the United States in August, 1865, and tried by a special military commission. He was indicted "for subjecting the prisoners to torture and great suffering, by confining them to unhealthy and unwholesome quarters; by exposing them to the inclemency of the winter, to the dews and burning sun of the summer; by compelling the use of impure water; by furnishing insufficient and unwholesome food; also, for establishing 'the dead line,' and ordering the guard to shoot down any prisoner attempting to cross it; for keeping and using bloodhounds to hunt down prisoners attempting to escape; and for torturing prisoners by confining them in the 'stocks.' Wirz, having been found guilty on these charges, was executed by hanging on November 10, 1865." If half these particulars were true, it must be admitted that he deserved his fate.

I remained at the residence of my cousin (who was teaching a large school in Eufaula) two or three weeks. Here I found a large hospital of Confederate soldiers, which I visited; and as the Presbyterian church of this place was vacant, they engaged my services for their pulpit every Sabbath during my stay there, which covered about three months. About the last of August I had occasion to visit Montgomery, and during the time of my absence the ill-fated battle of Jonesboro', below Atlanta, was fought. Although rumors were abundant on the train of the battle then in progress, yet no particulars could be gathered that were reliable. On my return to Eufaula, at a late hour, after the family had retired, I also retired, and slept till dawn. I was awakened by a heavy knock at my door, and a dispatch was handed me, which I read by the grey light of early morning, containing these dreadful words:

"Your son, Gray, was killed this morning by a fragment of shell."

"[Signed] John Ingram,

"*A. A. A. Gen. of General Cheatham.*"

I knew that others had passed through these great sorrows in those fearful times of soul trials; but for me, I must believe that this was a blow exceeding in terrible severity all my previous trials combined. O, my son! my son! my youngest, my darling boy! Would any sacrifice have been too great could it have shielded thee from such a fate, and saved me from such a calamity? Only seventeen, bright and promising and affectionate! Little, indeed, or rather not at all, did the thought of such a fatal result pass through my mind when, but a few months previously, I gave my unwise consent to his joining his brother and other friends in the army! God only knows the bitterness, the heart-breaking agony of that dreadful morning. He had never made any profession of religion, but the testimony of his friends and kindred in the army, with whom he had held conferences on the subject from time to time during

his brief term of service, gave me ground of hope that he was a Christian. Nothing else could soothe my grief; yet I shall bear the wound upon my very soul down "with sorrow to the grave."

To intensify my bitterness, I had an appointment to preach on that very day in the Eufaula Church. I filled the appointment, I hardly know how. No doubt I need the special pardoning love and mercy of my heavenly Father for dishonor done to the cross of Christ on that day. May I find that mercy on the day yet to come, from Him who gives us these gentle words of tenderness and love, "Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him;" "He knoweth our frame, He remembereth that we are dust." I remained at Eufaula a few days in the hope that I should receive a letter explanatory of, or enlarging the dispatch, but I waited in vain. And as I found the suspense intolerable, and my mind, in its dark and gloomy imaginings, was suggesting all manner of dreadful things that might have occurred in connection with the remains of my boy, I resolved to return to the camp, if possible, and learn the true condition of matters by personal inquiry. On arriving at Macon I met a friend and former neighbor of East Mississippi, who belonged to the army, and I learned from him that my son Gorge, assisted by a young man of his company, who was also from La Grange, had been allowed to prepare a decent coffin for his remains, and they had laid them to rest in the cemetery at or near Jonesboro. This was, indeed, some mitigation of my sorrow, and subject of gratitude to God, as I reflected upon the dreadful treatment to which the bodies of the slain soldiers were sometimes subjected, and from all which his body had been rescued.

As the camp where the defeated army of General Hood rested after the battle was distant not very far above Macon, I pursued my journey to that point, and found my boys, George and Charles Thompson, safe, and glad to welcome me. I

spent several days with them, and preached four times in General Vaughan's Brigade, the last of which was on an appointed fast day, and once in General Lowry's brigade; this officer being a Baptist preacher of Mississippi of high standing, and after the war an honored and esteemed member of the Board of Trustees of the University of Mississippi from 1872 to 1876. Ascertaining that General Hood would soon break up his camp and move with the remnant of his troops to Nashville on the ill-fated expedition, resulting in the entire breaking up of the army and his removal from command, I saw at once that my connection with the commissionership of that army was dissolved, as I had no horse, nor was there any railway transportation, and to accompany the army on foot was a matter of utter impracticability. After a melancholy visit to the grave of my slain soldier boy, I took leave of the boys and returned to Eufaula, arranged all my affairs there, gave up the church, resigned the office of commissioner, and left there about the latter part of October.

CHAPTER XLI.

Appointment to a New Service, and Last Days of the Confederacy. —Gloom and Despondency.—Destitution of the South.

ON arriving in Montgomery I was told that there was in contemplation by the Synod of Alabama the founding of an asylum for the orphans of deceased Confederate soldiers. I was offered the agency of that enterprise by a committee of the Synod, which I accepted; and to illustrate the fearful depreciation of the Confederate finances, whereas just before, while acting as commissioner, my salary had been fixed at $2,500 to $3,000 and expenses, now I was employed at a salary of $600 per month, or $7,200 per annum, and all expenses! My first visit in my agency was to Mobile, where I was kindly received and hospitably entertained, in part by Captain Wheeler, a warm-hearted elder of our church, and partly by Thomas A. Hamilton, Esq., a member of the committee on the asylum. Rev. Dr. Burgett, pastor of Government Street church of Mobile, was very active and zealous in the cause, visiting with me and canvassing among the people. Very little success attended my efforts in that city. I cannot now recall statements made to me by different parties to account for this comparative failure; perhaps it was really owing to the destitution and poverty occasioned by the pressure of the war, which had then been in desolating progress for nearly four years. From Mobile, then, little was collected, and when I reported subsequently to the committee in Montgomery if I could show in cash or subscriptions anything above my bare expenses from that place, I cannot now recall it. But I had a set of jewelry contributed to the cause by Mrs. Dr. Burgett, which I handed over, and a five hundred dollar bill of Confederate currency, handed

me by a gentleman with whom I unexpectedly met on a car, a casual acquaintance from La Grange, Tenn.

I spent my time while in Mobile in presenting the cause in public and in private. I preached in the Government Street church and in the Jackson Street church, and attended prayer-meetings, but collected with small success. As I was engaged in the work on a certain morning, I found my La Grange friend to whom I have just alluded, and on ascertaining what I was engaged in, he simply remarked, "I know the cause is a good one, and I know the man who is acting in it, and so I hand you my mite," or words to that import, and with that he placed in my hand the five hundred dollars. This, to be sure, was worth little intrinsically, but it was, at that time, much the largest contribution I had received, and I felt encouraged and expressed my thanks. I remained in Mobile some days, until the friends of the cause, on consultation, decided that nothing could be done at that time. I returned to Montgomery, and after a brief stay there I visited Selma, and presented the asylum cause with very encouraging success. With the efficient coöperation of the pastor, Rev. A. M. Small, I succeeded in obtaining subscriptions and in cash about $40,000, of which amount the sum of $10,000 was donated by one gentleman in cash. He was editor of a very popular daily paper in Selma.

This was truly satisfactory work, and all that remained to make it a grand success was to have bought cotton with the money, as could have been done, and had been done, by Mr. Whiting in Montgomery. But as there was a shadow of the coming storm just then visible, I left the subscriptions in Selma, in order that I might visit Marion, 28 miles distant, for the purpose of canvassing that place and its surroundings. I was sure of ultimately collecting every dollar of the Selma subscription on returning from this visit. In carrying out my proposed canvass, I laid

the cause before the people of Marion, with the earnest help of Rev. Dr. Raymond, and before the Fairview church, with its devoted pastor, Rev. R. A. Mickle, and Valley Creek church, with the aid of Rev. James Watson; and we were riding a great deal over the country visiting every family where it was supposed we could raise a contribution, but met with very indifferent success. It was just then, as I was about returning to Selma to finish the work which had been so auspiciously begun for collecting the subscriptions already made, when we learned that the little city of Selma was being surrounded by fortifications, expecting an attack, and that every citizen, without distinction, and all able-bodied men were set to work on the entrenchments and breastworks. I could not venture under such circumstances to return. As this was near the close of March, it would have been the surest and most speedy way to my closing the business of raising money or of doing anything else for the country, since on the 2d of April Major-General J. H. Wilson carried the works by assault around Selma, after a short but severe contest with General Forrest. This was a dreadful blow to the country, and thenceforth all was dark and gloomy, and one disaster after another befell the Confederacy until the final consummation, which was reached by the surrender of Lee to Grant at Appomattox, in Virginia, and of Johnston to Sherman in North Carolina in April, 1865. My occupation being now gone, there was nothing left for me save to make my way to Mississippi, join my children, and provide ways and means whereby we could all begin life anew, and place ourselves as nearly as we could *in statu quo ante-bellum*. Having decided to give up the prosecution of my agency, I directed my first efforts to visiting Gainesville, Ala., where two prominent members of the Synodical Committee resided—Rev. Dr. Charles A. Stillman and Jonathan Bliss, Esq., an elder of the church. As I recall the time to which I here refer, when I took my

leave of that part of Alabama, and especially of the town of Selma, where I passed so large a part of my time with such congenial society, and so much enjoyment of genuine hospitality on the part of its excellent people, there rises up the image and memory of that devoted Christian pastor, Rev. A. M. Small. I regarded him then as one of the loveliest characters with whom I had ever associated. His godly life, his fidelity as the pastor of an important and influential people, his patriotic devotion to the cause of his native South, his large and ever-widening hospitality; and all this orignating from an equally large and boundless generosity of heart, so endeared him to every one who knew him, that the mention of his very name was the signal of praise and admiration.

The particular exciting circumstance that gives ground for my notice of this beloved man is that he was one among the numerous victims of this cruel and relentless war, that had no respect for persons. At the time of the assault upon the defences of Selma he was behind the breast-works among the citizens, and when the city fell he was among those who fell. Thus ended the career of one who was in the prime of his young manhood and the bright field of his usefulness, growing in every great element of mental, moral, and spiritual power, beloved by all who knew him, and bewailed by every high-toned heart.

I return from this digression to record other matters of more general interest, but which all partook of the gloomy character and coloring that cast their dark shadowing over the entire South. In fact, I do not consider it out of place to record that this gloomy aspect of public affairs had begun to pervade the Confederacy for some time previous to this epoch, and there was everywhere apparent a despondency that could not be concealed; and although there was an earnest effort on the part of the public journals to light up hope on all possible occasions, yet these efforts were less

and less influential in the minds of the people, and the conclusion was finally reached that all was hopeless, and this was followed by the reality that "all was lost."

The attempt to record, in a brief space, the actual condition of things at this juncture in our history would be an utterly impossible task for any one, and the effort to make such a record would be vain and futile with the material at command. Let it be sufficient to say that, with few exceptions, in cases where the farmers were remote from the seat of war, and secure from raids, or where enterprising commercial men had been successful in running the blockade, and thus carrying out cotton and bringing in gold and greenbacks and provisions, the country was without a currency, and, in many places, without means of living. The order of the Confederate government, that cotton in regions exposed to raids (and there were very few places of that kind) should be burned, in order to prevent the enemy from seizing it, operated disadvantageously to those who obeyed the order, and opened the way for others to disreputable, and, one might say, dishonest dealings. As an illustration: Sometimes, in the interior, there might be found a large crop of cotton, packed and prepared for market, and an armed body of men, who were charged with the business of burning cotton by the government, destroyed this crop, as the owner was law-abiding; while, at the same time, in the same section of the country, a farmer who had a crop in the same condition might meet the band of burners, and, by offering them some amount of money as a bribe, succeed in preserving his cotton, and thus have the opportunity of obtaining a very high price for it, not in Confederate currency, but in "greenbacks," as it was styled, dealing with camp-followers of the Federal army. But the large mass of the Southern people were left by the war in utter destitution. The slaves were freed by the emancipation act, and the consequent want of laborers rendered the rich lands of no present value.

CHAPTER XLII.

Incidents of Personal History.—Release from all Official Duties Growing Out of the War.—Visits to Old Homes.

WHEN I decided to abandon the agency in which I had been employed during three or four months, for the very sufficient reason that nothing could then be accomplished, in consequence of the fact that the country from which the contributions were to be drawn was entirely overrun by a hostile body of troops, I turned my course to the State of Mississippi, my purpose being to retrace my journeyings to my former home. In doing this I made it my first object to visit Gainesville, Ala., and wind up in due form with the committee of the Synod the entire business of the orphan asylum, in so far as I was concerned. I found it by no means an easy matter to obtain necessary transportation, as there was no public way of travel then in operation. But in this state of matters, as I had always had the experience of a kind overruling Providence in every time of need, so now I met with great kindness at the hands of friends, by whose aid I was enabled to go from point to point of my route in comfort and safety to my destination.

From Marion to Greensboro, by the kindness of Mr. Whitsett, an elder of Dr. Raymond's church, I was sent comfortably in a buggy, driven by his servant. There I was met by Rev. J. M. P. Otts, D. D., who took care of me hospitably in the family of Mr. McCrary, his father-in-law. I spent the Sabbath in Greensboro, and preached to a mere handful of frightened ladies, the news from Selma being alarming, and straggling cavalrymen from Forrest's brigade passing west singly and in small squads day and night.

From Greensboro, I passed on Monday to the west side of the river Warrior, by means of a wagon, in which were stored away valuable articles belonging to Mrs. McCrary, and which were to be conveyed to a friend for safe-keeping. At the house of this friend (a Mr. Gully) I spent the night comfortably, and on the next morning I rode over to the house of a former friend, Captain Nott, who resided near Mr. Gully, in that part of Greene county known as "the Fork," *i. e.*, the territory lying between the Warrior and Tombigby rivers. Thence procuring a horse, after a brief delay, I rode on, crossing the Tombigbee river at Jones' Bluff, where I found a large party of refugees (making their escape from a reported raid from above), and so on the west side of the river I made my way to Gainesville, and there I was met with great kindness and entertained with great hospitality by my friend and brother, Rev. C. A. Stillman, D. D., and made his house my home for a week or ten days. During my abode in this place I made a formal report of my agency to Dr. Stillman and Mr. Bliss, the two committeemen. Having made a full and accurate statement of all moneys received, and all subscriptions made, and all my expenses, together with all other disbursements, I deposited with these gentlemen my book of accounts and the cash in hand, which last amounted to the (apparently) large sum of *ten thousand dollars!* But alas! it consisted solely of *Confederate dollars.*

In Gainesville I had the pleasure of meeting the family of Colonel James Brown, who had taken refuge in this place from their home in Oxford, Miss. Colonel Brown had been a member of the Board of Trustees of the University of Mississippi, and therefore we had been associated together there, and always had been warm friends. I was much gratified to meet him and his warm-hearted family, after a long period of separation; under the circumstances it was a sort of green and cheering spot amid the desert of

our environments. After preaching in Gainesville once, and finding that the surrender of the Confederacy was a fact beyond all question, I left that place and made my way to Meridian by a branch road to Gainesville Junction, and thence down the Mobile and Ohio railroad.

I have to record, with regard to the period that elapsed from the reported surrender, on the 9th of April (about which time I left Gainesville), to the middle of the ensuing summer of 1865, that my financial interests were characterized by the most complete condition of *impecuniosity* conceivable. All along through the dreary years of the protracted war, I had never known anything like scarcity, or the want of a dollar at any time, having such funds always in hand as carried me and mine safely and satisfactorily through. But when I left Gainesville, about the middle of April, I remember well that I had in my purse $800 nominally, which was mere worthless paper. Then if any one had been so idiotic as to steal my purse, it would have been found literally true that he had stolen *trash!* As my ultimate destination would most naturally be La Grange, Tenn., whence my highly eccentric travels had begun on December 17, 1862, and as I had matters of private and family concern to look after at various points in the central and northern parts of Mississippi, I was detained in the needed attention to these things, so that I did not even reach La Grange on a brief visit until about the 1st of July; but that was sufficient to fill me with sadness, when, with a single glance, I beheld around me the desolations wrought by the ruthless hand of war. There lay in the dust the remnants of the once massive walls of the college building, its brick used by the ruthless soldiery for huts and chimneys during their occupation of the ill-fated town, and the apparatus and instruments of illustration of scientific truth, and its libraries, in their idiomatic phrase, "confiscated," or destroyed and stolen, and the once promising institution, now without "a

local habitation or a name," vanished and buried "among the things that were!"

My time was passed partly in paying closing visits of brief duration to the places where I had made my war-homes; and among these, not one in this way attracted my presence more strongly, by the many and pleasant seasons of enjoyment afforded me during the toilsome season and sad scenes of the war, than the home of my long-tried friend, Mrs. Evans, of Newton county, Miss. She was a sister of Rev. Richmond McInnis, so long an evangelist of the Presbytery of Central Mississippi and editor of a Presbyterian journal published in New Orleans, just at the opening of the war, who had also conducted a similar journal previously in Jackson, Miss. I had been the pastor of Mrs. Evans from 1842 to 1848, at Mt. Moriah church, when I resided at Montrose church in Jasper county, Miss. It had always been one of my favorite resorts during the time of peace, before the days of war, and it was one of my many pleasant places of rest and refuge during my wandering life of toil and sadness, while hostilities were in progress. I also paid similar visits to Jackson, Miss., and it was on occasion of one of those visits that the exciting intelligence came to us of the assassination of President Lincoln, and this only increased the wild confusion and manifold gloomy forebodings of the community. My principal place of temporary sojourn, however, was Kosciusko, where my daughters were engaged in teaching. I had heard nothing from my son George since he had left Montgomery to join General Johnston's command in North Carolina, which was at the time when the Southern army was making its last forlorn stand against Sherman, after his "march to the sea" and "the burning of Columbia, S. C." I knew that the fighting was over, and naturally, I supposed that George and Mr. Thompson would be returning home, if alive, of which last contingency I was utterly

in the dark. It occurred to me to dispatch to my brother, in Montgomery, for any information he might have on the subject. But as I was penniless, I knew I could not pay for a telegram. As a dernier resort, I laid the case before the operator at one of the stations, by name Monroe, and as he had married the daughter of a friend of mine, he was kind enough to allow me to forward the dispatch. I, however, received no tidings in response, and my message, I imagine, never was received by my brother.

I will record another similar favor received by me in my destitution, and I mention such incidents, which, under other circumstances, might savor of indelicacy, in order to illustrate the providential kindness of God in never leaving me without His favor in time of need, but in raising up friends for me always in my extremities. I had no way of travel save by rail, and wished to visit Oxford, Miss. I had an acquaintance who was ticket agent on the railroad between Meridian and Jackson (the son of my old friend, Judge Watts, of East Mississippi), and, applying to him for a ticket, on the faith of future payment, he also gave me credit for the amount. I add that, in addition to the expression of my heartfelt thanks to both of these gentlemen, I promptly, and not long after, remitted to them, severally, the amount due for the message and the ticket. Being still in a state of great anxiety about George, I borrowed a horse and rode up to Kosciusko, just before or about the time of my intended trip to Oxford. As I passed into the town, I was recognized by a lady of my acquaintance, who, during the war, had been a refugee from Memphis, and who had just returned, after a business trip, to Kosciusko. From her I learned that she had met George in Memphis, on his return from the army, in perfect safety. One may conceive, but I cannot adequately express in words, the joyful emotions of my heart at this news, and my gratitude to my heavenly Father for his unceasing loving kindness to me.

As I sat at dinner with Brother Alexander on that very day, a servant called to me, saying that "a young man at the door wished to see me," and behold, there was the dear boy himself in very deed! Having ascertained in Memphis from Dr. Gray's family, as he there had taken up his abode, that his sisters were in Kosciusko, he had taken the train and come down to find them. There was joy in that house, it may easily be imagined. The evening was spent in free and varied interchange of narratives, of incidents, and adventures occurring during our separation, and we all felt once more comparatively happy. There was still naturally in all our hearts a feeling of subdued sadness, as we recognized one vacancy in our once happy circle, broken now, and no more to be restored on earth. Not long after this, everything of that state of our affairs was radically and permanently reorganized. Mr. C. V. Thompson had returned from the army, and removed my youngest daughter from Kosciusko to his father's house, in Fayette county, Tenn. The fact of his marriage is recorded on page 417 of this memoir. James D. West, who had been captured near Marietta, Ga., in 1864, after an imprisonment on Johnson's Island of more than one year, returned later than the date of these just now mentioned facts, and, stopping in Kosciusko, took part in the school until the close of the session, and then removed his position to my former field of labor, in Jasper county, and took charge of my old churches of Montrose and Mt. Moriah, making his home with my friend Mrs. Evans. I then, with George, made a journey to Oxford first. While there in Oxford, at the home of my excellent friends, H. E. Rascoe and Mrs. J. E. Rascoe, the noble daughter of the first friend I ever made in Oxford, in 1847, Dr. Z. Conkey, I met with a still more remarkable instance of generous kindness at the hands of Mrs. Rascoe. At her request, I succeeded in having, at some store in the place, a fifty-dollar bill of greenback currency exchanged for *two*

twenties and a *ten*. On returning the money to her, she placed one of the twenty-dollar bills in my hands as a gift; so that I might say gratefully, adopting the language of the Psalmist, with my whole heart, "Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life," judging by my past experience, and especially during these latter days of gloom and privation. Surely no one had ever greater reason than I to acknowledge the remarkably kind and abundant supply of noble and thoughtful friends, into whose hearts He had sent the impulses of such generosity as has been manifested toward me.

I had owned a small farm at La Grange, and my servants had been cultivating it during my exile, and as there was no railway in operation toward La Grange beyond Holly Springs, I conveyed a message by some sure method to one of the colored men who had been left on the premises, to the effect that I desired him to send a conveyance down from La Grange to meet George and myself at Holly Springs, and carry us to our old home, designating the day when we should probably reach Holly Springs.

I must be indulged in an attempt to describe our mode of transportation from Oxford to Holly Springs, as it will give the reader some conception of the utter demolition of everything like the facilities and conveniences of passage and locomotion that had resulted from the war, and which before the war had been in successful operation in that region of the country. The distance between the towns of Oxford and Holly Springs is thirty miles by rail. Over the first thirteen miles we rode on a flat car, quite a company of us together, drawn by a very small engine. This placed us on the south bank of the Tallahatchee river. There we were reduced to locomotion on our feet, crossing on a flat ferry-boat, as the railroad bridge had been destroyed, and on the north side of the river we found the track again with a flat-car standing waiting for us, drawn by a single mule! On

this, at the rate of five miles per hour, we performed the remainder of the trip, reaching Holly Springs about 2 o'clock P. M., having been on the way some six hours, a space ordinarily requiring but little more than one by steam. We arrived there in safety after all our difficulties, which really afforded us more amusement than inconvenience.

This visit paid to La Grange found us in Dr. Gray's family once more, after an absence of two years and a half. The interval from our arrival there until my settlement in Oxford is of sufficient interest to admit of its being recorded in a separate chapter.

CHAPTER XLIII.

PRIVATE HISTORY.—ATTENDANCE AT THE MEETING OF THE PRESBYTERY OF MEMPHIS.—MEETING AT HOLLY SPRINGS.—RETURN TO OXFORD, AND SETTLEMENT THERE.

I HAVE recorded something already in reference to my financial deficiencies, and as to the manner of their alleviation. But I must trespass somewhat upon the patience of my reader by some further incidents, which, however trivial they may seem at this distant day of peace and prosperity, loomed up largely to me just in that day of poverty and depression. As I was in need of some articles of comfort, and as George had returned in a somewhat dilapidated condition in respect of raiment, I applied to my brother-in-law, Dr. Gray, for information as to some source whence I could effect a loan of needed funds. He promptly assured me that it could be easily effected in this way: Said he, I have in my care for safekeeping the sum of six hundred dollars, belonging to your servant Wash, being money which he has made by cultivating your farm in cotton, and selling it to the Federals at high prices during your absence, and I know that you can borrow of him whatever you desire. Accordingly, on application to the man, he readily placed in my possession $100, which I proposed, of course, to repay at the earliest possible period.

The meeting of the Presbytery of Memphis, of which I was a member, occurring about the 25th of August, Dr. Gray and I rode to Danceyville, the place of meeting, where I met many of our brethren, and among them, Rev. Philip Thompson, an old friend, who was supplying some country churches in that region. We met, and among the first

things he said, was that he had a message for me, and taking me aside, to my great surprise he handed me *one hundred dollars in gold!* The explanation of this transaction was this: It may be remembered that a body of earnest and devoted friends of the college at La Grange had entered into an obligation to pay the sum of two thousand dollars as a salary for me, to induce me to accept the professorship to which I had been elected by the Synod in 1856. Of this number Dr. Macklin was one, and each of them thus combined, voluntarily agreed to insure me this salary for five years. The contract was honorably fulfilled as long as I was permitted to serve, but my subsequent departure, on compulsion in 1862 from La Grange, brought the matter to an end. In the interim, during the progress of the war, Dr. Macklin had died, and although I had considered that this arrangement was void, and had not expected such a payment for a moment, or had even thought at all on the subject, yet, as Mr. Thompson informed me in our interview, Dr. Macklin had left with Mrs. M., on his dying bed, the solemn injunction to pay to me this amount, which was due by him as his part of the pledged salary, and which would have been paid me, had an opportunity occurred, before I left. This was the fulfillment of Mrs. M.'s commission, according to her husband's last request. The transaction was as unexpected as it was welcome, and gratefully received. To make an end of my gradual recuperation, two more items remain to be added to this list of good things just then occurring. Returning to La Grange I met with a gentleman who was indebted to me for a small sum of money for servant hire before the war, amounting to some sixty dollars or more, who honorably discharged the debt, and then visiting Memphis, I exchanged my gold for currency at the market premium. These operations which I here record in fiscal affairs were not the result of any financial skill on my part (to the possession of which quality I could not

lay the slightest claim), but simply as the regular process of a kind Providence in caring for me. I realized then a feeling of safety and comparative independence, to which I had been a stranger since the fall of the Southern Confederacy.

On my arrival in La Grange, after my visit to Memphis, I sent for Wash, my colored man, from whom I had received $100, and informed him that I was now ready to return the amount I had received from him a few days previously. To my great surprise, he utterly declined to receive one cent of it. He reasoned the case out thus: "I made that money out of your farm, I occupied your houses with my family, and cultivated the land with your mules. You were always a kind master; the money is yours." In thinking over this incident afterwards, two reflections occurred to me growing out of the conduct of this man: 1. That our Northern fellow-citizens would have been surprised at the transaction had they known the circumstances; 2. *This colored man*, in his sense of honor, would have put to shame many a *white man* of high standing in society. I enjoined upon him, when he left, that if he should ever, at any time, become involved in difficulties in his business of farming, to inform me of it; and I am thankful that I had afterwards an opportunity to redeem my promise by responding to an application which he made to me for aid in his embarrassments in farming. Before my final settlement in Oxford, I spent a great deal of the time in visiting in the region above and below that place, and preaching in Grenada, Water Valley, La Grange, Holly Springs, (assisting in the latter place at a protracted meeting for nine days,) and at Danceyville (at Presbytery), at Somerville, Tenn., and at Hickory Withe. After these pleasant labors, spent with friends and with churches in whose pulpits I had preached many times previous to the war, I at last once more found a delightful home in Oxford, Miss. There I re-

newed my labors as a member of the Faculty of the University for nine busy and toilsome years of rarely varied experience, during the period known in the history of the times as the Reconstruction, and, in political parlance, as the "carpet-bag government of the Southern States."

CHAPTER XLIV.

Governor Sharkey's Term of Service.—Oxford as My Home.—Election to the Chancellorship of the University.—Marriage.—Care of the Oxford Church.—Address Before the Legislature.

I WAS now a widower, with only one member of my once large and happy family present with me. Out of eight children, there remained now only three living, four having died in infancy, and one having fallen in the military service of his country; one soldier boy having returned from the war, and my two daughters having left my care to preside over other homes of their own, and render other circles as happy as that in which they once moved. I found a temporary abode with my friends, the dear Rascoe family, where I was made as happy and welcome as one could be in so bereaved circumstances. George, my only surviving son, spent a few weeks among his friends in Tennessee, until the time should arrive for him to join me in Oxford.

The first event of historical interest and importance to the State of Mississippi was the appointment, by the President (Andrew Johnson) of the United States, of that truly great and noble jurist and statesman, Hon. William L. Sharkey, as Provisional Governor of the State. No man of all those whose names stood prominent and eminent among the great and good citizens of the State could, by any possibility, have been found whose appointment would have been so acceptable and universally satisfactory to the people of Mississippi. We felt that surely we had been under the special protection of a divine providence, who had put it in the heart of the then ruler of the country to make

so wise and acceptable an appointment. His administration in other and more general departments of State policy is not mine to dwell upon, but must be assigned to others more competent to do him the justice to which his memory is so richly entitled. It has always been, in my judgment, among the many acts of Governor Sharkey's official service, that one which merits admiration and reflects high honor upon this noble man, that among his first executive orders was a call to the Board of Trustees of the University to convene at Oxford, and reorganize the University, whose exercises had been suspended during four years.

As the Southern States were all in what may be considered state of anarchy, especially in the view of the victorious party, the same measure was inaugurated and adopted in reference to all that had been engaged in what was called the rebellion, viz., Provisional Governors were appointed for every Southern State. But among them all, none had greater reason for self-gratulation than the State of Mississippi. A very serious obstacle in the way of the Board of Trustees to the execution of the Governor's instructions in reference to the reorganization of the University met them at the outset, which was, that the State treasury was empty. In order to remedy this condition of things, an order was issued from headquarters to the proper officers in the various counties, to collect a tax of two dollars per bale on all the cotton in the limits of the State. There was a large quantity of this staple in possession of the planters, and of the amount thus collected, Governor Sharkey had the sum of $6,000 set apart to meet the necessities of the University. Accordingly, in pursuance of the Governor's order, the Board met in Oxford on the 31st of August, and proceeded to elect a Faculty, and provide for the re-opening of the institution at the earliest practicable date. The names of all the members of the Board who were present and participated in the election I cannot now recall, but

there was a quorum competent to transact all the business to which their attention was required. The result of the action of the Board was as follows:

1. They elected a Faculty of only four members, of which for Chancellor, they selected John N. Waddel, D. D.

For Professor of Mathematics, General Claudius W. Sears, M. A.

For Professor of Greek, Rev. John J. Wheat, D. D.

For Professor of Latin, Alexander J. Quinche, A. M.

2. They appropriated the salaries and perquisites to the Faculty as follows: For the chancellor, $2,000 and a residence; for each professor, $1,500 and a residence.

While this amounted to $6,500, and exceeded the appropriation from the State treasury, it was supposed that any possible deficit would be abundantly supplemented by the proceeds of tuition fees. This anticipation was more than realized subsequently.

3. They directed that the exercises of the University should be regularly resumed on the 1st of October, 1865, and this, accordingly, was successfully done. The Trustees, as stated, felt that these salaries were as liberal as, under the circumstances surrounding them, they could venture to appropriate; and this was, indeed, a very much better provision for the Faculty than was expected. But on the opening of the University in October, it was at once brought to view that the patronage would be beyond our most sanguine expectations as to the number of students, as the impoverished condition of the country was such as to justify the anticipation of a diminished attendance of students comparatively. On the other hand, as it became apparent in the progress of affairs, the privation of all educational facilities to which the young men had been subjected by the demands of the country for soldiers to enter the armies of defence, had been felt by them as a heavy misfortune. And now, these facilities being again presented

on their return, tended to arouse in them the most eager and ardent desire and thirst for education. Four long weary years of camp life and war experience had changed many of the survivors of these perils from thoughtless and daring boyhood to reflecting and serious manhood, and the participation in the pursuits of war, in which they had been engaged, had only prepared them for a higher and keener appreciation of the advantages of peace. The average age of the students of the first session of the University after the war was above that which is found among a similar number in ordinary times. This is easily accounted for when it is known that, while the age of admission in 1861 was sixteen, and, in all probability, these identical students would have been applicants for admission at that time, and of that age, there were two reasons preventing this. The first was that the exercises of the University were suspended in consequence of the existence of war. The second was the direct result of the first. These young men, by a large majority, who would have been admitted into the University in other times, volunteered as soldiers for the war. The natural end of this state of things was that, having spent in camp four years, they were candidates for the University classes at the age of twenty, instead of sixteen. It must be recorded here that the long privation they had suffered gave them a far higher appreciation of these advantages now furnished them, and stimulated their minds to a more severe application to study, and diminished proportionally that tendency to frivolity and idleness so generally prevalent among college students. My experience, therefore, of the student-body of the session 1865–'66, was that they were characterized by diligence, devotion and earnestness in study, and orderly, gentlemanly, and exceptional observance of rule. That they were not advanced in the regular curriculum of study is not surprising at all, as they had enjoyed no opportunity for preparation, and this

part of our work must needs be performed by the members of the Faculty. Indeed, the post-bellum work of the University seemed more like the beginning than the resumption of suspended exercises of the University. But we gave our most zealous and conscientious thoughts and labors to the work which we found pressing upon us. Very many of the one hundred and ninety-three young men who made their appearance on our campus were really only beginning the rudiments of language and science, and it was not for a moment to be conceived that we were to put ourselves upon the high ground of advanced professorships, and dismiss worthy young aspirants after knowledge because they were backward and ignorant. We felt it our duty to take them by the hand and raise them from the lower to the higher, from the simpler to the more solid and advanced departments of an education. In passing, I state that, while we were acting thus in obedience to a stern demand of the most imperious obligation of duty, there were not wanting self-styled educators even in Mississippi, who felt called upon to publish criticisms upon us as incompetent for our positions as at the head of the highest institution of learning in the State, betraying our trust and degrading the cause of the higher education. We felt conscious, however, that we were willing to bear the charge thus invidiously brought against us, as we were abundantly sustained by the public sentiment of the State, as well as by the happy results of our earnest and devoted work for our students.

The most advanced class formed during this first session was the Junior Class, and was composed of only five young men. Our Sophomore Class, however, was much larger, consisting of forty-seven in regular enrollment; the rest of the students were at various stages of advancement. We graduated four in 1867, and twenty-four in 1868.

Certain facts in my personal history demand a record just

at this point, as they are inseparable from any proper memoir of my life and labors as an educator and as a minister of the gospel. I will add, that if I was ever enabled, in the providence of God, to exert a wholesome influence over others, it was due, in great measure, to these two facts.

It was a singular fact that all through the troublous times of the war the subject of entering again into the marriage relation not only formed no part of my thoughts, but was really repugnant to my feelings. The idea of assuming additional responsibilities with those already resting upon me always seemed to me preposterous. My daughters were helpless and dependent upon me, and my boys in the army also constituted a source of deep and abiding anxiety. Besides all this, I had no home, nor any place where to receive a wife. In this state of mind and feeling I wore my life on, lonely and sad, until peace was established. Called as I was to the chancellorship of the University, with a home and the means of support for a family furnished to me, the memory of the past brought to me the home joys and social comforts I once enjoyed, and I felt that I should be unhappy and the position I held would be incomplete without some one to share it with me. Just as always has been found in my experience, a kind providence in this case also brought to me the very one who was to fill the vacancy and to restore the long-lost light of my dwelling. I had known the lady thus suggested to me before leaving La Grange, and met her in Memphis on a visit paid to that city after my return. She was Mrs. Harriet A. Snedecor (*neé* Godden), and her home was in Lexington, Miss.; and, without further details, let it suffice to record that, after a delay of five months, we were united in marriage, on the 31st of January, 1866. As I look back through the quarter century which has elapsed from that time, I am sure that our union has been replete with every blessing, and nothing has occurred to mar my enjoyment, so far as she was concerned; and, on the con-

trary, on the occurrence of those inevitable evils to which this world is subject and man is heir in his imperfect state, she has always proved to me the source of comfort and wise counsel, and has shared in all my burdens and shed light on my pathway in my darkest days. Thus, by God's peculiar favor shown to me, I began my third married life under very bright auspices. My son George I now entered as a student in the Sophomore Class, and Mrs. Waddel's only child, a boy of ten years, was placed in a good training school in Oxford. More of this again.

About the time of the opening of the exercises of the University, in 1865, Rev. T. Dwight Witherspoon, who had been ordained and installed pastor of the Oxford Presbyterian church just about one year previous to the war, and who had served the church with great acceptableness, and had inspired the entire community with love and admiration, returned to his home and to his church, after having served as chaplain during the war. His return was hailed with delight by his friends and by all the citizens; but the condition of the church had become greatly changed in numbers as well as financial ability within the four years that had elapsed since his entrance into the military service. I mean to have it understood that he was not only a chaplain, but had previously enlisted as a private in a company that was organized in Oxford, called the "Lamar Rifles," under the command of Captain Green. I have been credibly informed that he took active part in the ranks, and fought as a soldier in the many battles in which his company was engaged. Like all the survivors of these perils and hardships, he found himself in very reduced pecuniary circumstances. As stated above, the situation as to the church was not much better. By one cause or another the membership of the church had become greatly reduced in numbers, as when investigation was made it was ascertained that the maximum did not exceed forty in all. Under such circumstances, it

became necessary for the pastor and the members of the church to seek a dissolution of the relation, and to make other arrangements, though with the greatest reluctance on both sides.

The Second Presbyterian church of the city of Memphis was about this time vacant. During the time of the occupation of that city by the Federal troops the pulpit was filled by Rev. R. C. Grundy, D. D., who had been pastor before the war, and who, being an ardent Union man, was permitted to serve the church, or that portion of it that was left, until he removed to Dayton, Ohio, where he died, on the 4th of July, 1865. Dr. Gray had filled the same pulpit toward the close of the war, but had returned to his La Grange home, so that this important church was now vacant. In a correspondence with Henry Wade, Esq., an elder of that church, a godly and prominent citizen of Memphis, engaged in business there, I stated the facts of the case to him in terms so favorable to Rev. Mr. Witherspoon that they invited him to visit them, and the result was that he was called to the pastorate of the Second church unanimously, and served the church faithfully and successfully for years, and was induced at last to leave Memphis only on account of failing health, which required a residence in a more congenial climate and a less laborious and exacting work. That church has enjoyed the services of talented and eloquent pastors since Dr. Witherspoon's term of service with them expired; but I do not hesitate to record here that no one of them all has ever acquired a more exalted appreciation by the membership of that church of his labors in the pulpit, in his pastoral visitation and sympathetic ministrations, in their joys and their afflictions, than that felt for their beloved and honored pastor, Rev. T. D. Witherspoon. I claim to be a competent witness in this case, as I bore to him the relation of instructor in his university course at Oxford. He was not only a favorite pupil with

me, but this was his status with all his professors and with all his companions. A more lovely character I have never known. He was graduated from the University with the highest honors in the class of 1856, and finished his theological course of study at the Columbia Seminary, in 1859. He has filled the pulpits of some of our most important and prominent churches, and always with the greatest acceptableness and edification of the people of God. He received the honorary degree of D. D. in 1868, and that of LL. D. in 1884, both conferred by his Alma Mater, the University of Mississippi.

The church in Oxford being now vacant by the removal of the pastor to Memphis, they asked me to supply them, which I did, preaching every Sabbath, conducting weekly prayer-meetings, and teaching a Bible class on every Sabbath morning; all of which was voluntary on my part, and in addition to the duties of the office of Chancellor. I may say here that this double work I performed, serving the church with the University for several years, until the church became strong enough to call a pastor, after which I was so strongly solicited by a church near Oxford (I mean the Hopewell church), to which I had ministered before the war, to give them *first*, two Sabbaths of each month, and afterwards three, that I consented, and in this way my time was quite fully occupied.

The exercises of the University continued to go on during the year 1865, and when the Trustees saw the large number of students with which the session opened, they felt justified in increasing the salaries of the Faculty to $2,500 for the Chancellor and $2,000 to professors, and these have been the salaries since.

Shortly after the opening of the University in October, 1865, the Legislature which had been elected on the 2d of October, by order of a convention, called by Provisional Governor Wm. L. Sharkey, met on the 16th and proceeded

to the business of re-organizing the State government, with Benjamin G. Humphreys as Governor. One of their earliest acts, in point of time, was the issuance of a joint invitation to myself, from the Senate and House of Representatives, to deliver an address on "Public Education." This was accordingly accepted, and I delivered the address in the Hall of Representatives, in Jackson, Miss., on the evening of Wednesday, October 25, 1865. My address was published by order of the Legislature.

An outline of the address is as follows:

1. The country is to be congratulated upon the restoration of peace, though still left amid the desolations of the war, and on being now furnished with a grand opportunity for the untrammelled restoration and renovation of all the great interests of the State.

2. Among those interests, none transcend in importance those of education.

3. The establishment of a thorough system of public schools, and this system combined with the reörganization of the University upon an enlarged scheme, will complete the circle of education, as concentric, not antagonistic, but mutually auxiliary, and free to the culture and training of all Mississippians.

4. The order, discipline, and general government of the institutions of the State for literature and science should be parental as nearly as possible, not military, the object and purpose being to train our youth to be citizens, not soldiers.

5. Military academies should be provided for training soldiers; literary and scientific institutions for citizens.

6. The Department of Preparatory Education demands ceaseless and wise consideration, in order that our youth may reap the benefit of the higher learning by preliminary training.

7. Such a system, well-matured and developed, will preclude the necessity of our patronizing the institutions of

those States unfriendly to our customs and interests, to which we have heretofore been tributary, and upon which we have been dependent.

8. The man who devotes his time, talents, energies, and prayers to this grand enterprise of public education, will reap his most precious and enduring reward in the elevation and greatness of the State, and when his career is closed, those who ask for his memorial may well be pointed to the old inscription, "*Si monumentum quæris, circumspice.*"

CHAPTER XLV.

Advance of University Work.—Additions to the Faculty.—Annoyances Threatening Disturbance.—Close of First Session.—Sketches of Some Professors.—Changes of State Government.—Political Trouble in Prospect.

SUCH was the unexpected increase of students that the work required of the Faculty then elected was prospectively becoming burdensome. There was, therefore, plainly presented to the Board of Trustees the necessity of adding to the teaching force, and thus of dividing the labors of the Faculty. So they proceeded to fill the chair of Physics, Astronomy and Civil Engineering by the appointment of General Alexander P. Stewart, who declined the call. General Francis A. Shoup was then elected, and accepted this appointment, and continued as the incumbent of the office until the year 1868. To the chair of English Literature also, Rev. S. G. Burney was elected during the first session, and to the chair of Ethics, in 1866, Hon. L. Q. C. Lamar was called, but this professorship he only occupied one year, when he resigned and accepted the chair of Governmental Science and Law. With this Faculty we succeeded gradually in bringing the various departments of the course into somewhat more orderly combination. We have referred in a preceding part of our sketch to the character of the student-body as being orderly and studious, and so it was. And yet we were not without certain annoyances which were thrust upon us by the authorities at Washington, who regarded it as essential to station a garrison in the towns of the State, to guard against any outbreak of the spirit of rebellion, which was thought to be

only restrained, but not by any means crushed out, or entirely subdued. The troubles which occasionally came upon us from this arrangement, in all probability, would not have taken place had it not been that the garrison was made up of colored soldiers, who were disposed to make unnecessary and wanton interferences with the students whom they met on the sidewalks. On the other hand, unwise as it was, still it was a most natural impulse in the young students to resent such aggressive manifestations of these men. The result was an occasional outbreak, which might have led to serious consequences but for the utmost prudence on the part of the University authorities, and the exertion of official restraint on the part of the commandant of the garrison. With these slight disturbances, which were never allowed to proceed to any serious results, the session proved to be a most gratifying success to all. It was made known to us, in the course of the first session, that a fine class of young men, who constituted the senior class of 1860–'61, had finished their course and would have been graduated at the usual annual Commencement of that year. As the occurrence of the war caused the suspension of all University exercises then, and thus they were prevented from receiving the degree of A. B., to which they were entitled, the Board and Faculty deemed it only just to these young men to grant them the privilege of a public admission to graduation on occasion of the annual commencement prospectively to be held at the close of this session of 1865–'66. This was accordingly granted them, and they or, as many of them as survived the war and presented themselves on that occasion, were regularly graduated and recognized as Bachelors of Arts, and received the usual diploma conferring that degree. This class consisted of 28, and their names are recorded on pages 39 and 40 of the Historical Catalogue. As there had been no public ceremonies at the resumption of the suspended exercises in October, 1865, it was thought

best to have this point of usual respect for ourselves, and for the public, carried into proper execution at the close of the session in the ordinary form observed on such occasions. We inaugurated our exercises by a public assembly at the University chapel, attended by a large and enthusiastic audience, beginning with the usual commencement sermon delivered by Bishop Wilmer on Sabbath previous, and closing on the 28th of July with the inaugural ceremonies of induction of the Faculty into office, on which occasion an address was delivered to the Faculty by Hon. J. W. Clapp on behalf of the Board of Trustees, and a response by the chancellor as the representative of the Faculty.

Every element of prosperity seemed to be now in existence to cheer us, and the first session was brought to a very successful close, and the many friends of the institution regarded the prospects before it as heralding forth a bright career of usefulness and honor to the State and to the world.

Among the additions to the Faculty which, from time to time, were made by the Trustees, the University was highly favored in securing the services in their several departments of three incumbents, who gave great attraction to the University. I have already referred to Hon. L. Q. C. Lamar. I have known this gentleman since the year 1849, or '50, when he was on a visit to his father-in-law, President Longstreet, of the University. He was then in the vigor of his young manhood, a member of the legal profession, with high and honorable prospects of success before him in his future. As he was, at that time, without employment, and seemed favorably impressed with the idea of being connected in some University work, he accepted an invitation to serve in the Department of Mathematics as Adjunct Professor. This position he held until 1852. He subsequently filled the chair of Metaphysics and Ethics; but as he was called to that professorship in 1860, he, of course, vacated

it in the following year, 1861, as the University closed its doors in consequence of the war. He entered the army as an officer high in command, fought through it, and returned in safety. In 1866 he was again made professor in the same department, but as the professorship of Governmental Science and Law was vacant by the death of the first incumbent, Wm. F. Stearns, he was very soon transferred to that department, and there he found himself breathing an atmosphere most congenial to his taste and his great abilities. He occupied this chair with great attractiveness to the young men of the country until the year 1870. My own impression is that Mr. Lamar had, from his earlier manhood, kept steadily in view the career of statesmanship. I remember a casual conversation I held with him during his first years in Oxford, in which, as we spoke of his future, he remarked that he would not be surprised if he should end his life work in the ministry of the Methodist church! My reply was, "No, sir; you will surely pass your life in the world of politics!" I believed just that, and so it has proved to be. He has talents and abilities to fill any position to which he has been called, and I should judge that he has at last attained that lofty seat on the supreme bench of the nation which will be most admirably adapted to the broadest field of usefulness, and which is well fitted to gratify his loftiest aspirations. Long may he hold it!

In the year 1867, when we had been at work resuscitating the University about two years, I received a communication from Dr. L. C. Garland, who had been connected for many years with the University of Alabama as Professor, and afterwards as President, in which he stated the fact that he was disposed to get once more into a position of usefulness in the sphere of instruction, and if there should be a vacancy in his favorite Professorship of Analytical Physics and Astronomy in the University of Mississippi, he would be willing to fill it. I immediately saw that while there was

not *technically* a vacancy, one such as Dr. Garland had a preference for could easily be found. Knowing him, as I did, only by reputation, I yet knew him to be qualified to fill any place in any Faculty of Arts, and the mere fact of his becoming one of us in this institution, I felt would add immensely to the reputation of the University. The Federal troops had visited Tuskaloosa on one of their destructive raids, and burned the splendid buildings and destroyed the magnificent libraries and apparatus of all kinds of the State University. This was a fearful disaster to the State, but if by that misfortune, we at Oxford had the opportunity of securing the services of Landon C. Garland, it was certainly an illustration of the dealings of Providence, whereby He brings great good oftentimes out of great evil. I called on Professor Shoup and stated to him that as he had more heavy work on his hands than he should be burdened with, I came to propose to him that he should consent to give up that part of his duties that related to "Physics and Astronomy," and retain Applied Mathematics. To this proposition he readily gave his consent, and agreed to add to this some light professional subjects of instruction. The Trustees being in session at that very time, in Jackson, I wrote immediately to them and suggested that Dr. Garland's services could be obtained, and showed them how important it was to secure him; and he was at once unanimously elected. On receipt of this intelligence I wrote to Dr. Garland, and urged his removal without any delay beyond that which was necessary, as we needed him on the ground very pressingly. He was with us very soon, and we welcomed him with joyful cordiality. To show the wisdom of this choice, I need only mention his name in Mississippi, Alabama, and in Tennessee, in each of which States he has contributed as largely to the promotion of the higher education as any man living, or dead, has done in this century. Dr. G. has every qualification of a great and

successful teacher. He had learning, and the happy faculty of communicating instruction. He had dignity of bearing, and yet cordiality of social intercourse. He had the art of commanding the profound respect of the student, and yet the graceful urbanity of manner that encourages and invites their entire confidence. All these noble qualities had their crowning glory in that highest of all attainments, the spirit of a devout Christian, which marked his career in public and in private life. The Methodist church demonstrated their practical wisdom in placing him at the head of their greatest literary institution in this South land—Vanderbilt University, at Nashville, Tenn. The Doctor continued to serve the University until 1875, in the chair to which he had been appointed in 1867, and also during the year '75 gave his time to the class in Chemistry and Natural History, filling a temporary vacancy in that department.

One other name occurs to me as worthy of special record, being that of one who, during my term of service, was associated with me in the Faculty—that is Eugene W. Hilgard, Ph. D., Professor of Chemistry and Natural History. He had served the State as its Geologist for some years, but in 1868 he was called to the chair of Chemistry and Natural History, which he filled with eminent success and advantage to the University until he was called to the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor. There he remained only a short time, when he resigned the position to take a professorship in the University of California, which he, at last accounts, was still occupying. Dr. Hilgard, though not born in Germany, was of German extract, his parents being natives of Germany.

I was fully aware from other sources of his attainments as a scientist, yet to those I add the testimony of Dr. F. A. P. Barnard, the eminent President of Columbia College, in the city of New York, who knew and appreciated him highly. He said to me once, "He is one of the finest chem-

ists in America." Dr. H. was entirely devoted to his peculiar subjects, and yet a more genial and cordial friend and associate I have never known. He was a Catholic in his religious views, but he was never an obtrusive bigot. He had no objections to the individual tenets of any of the Protestant churches, provided they were not obtrusively presented to him, but kept on the even tenor of his way, allowing to all others the same privilege.

It was not long after the close of hostilities, and the return of peace in '65, that the Provisional government, under Governor Sharkey, was brought to a close by an order issued by himself on July 1st, that an election should be held on August 7th of delegates to a convention, those being qualified to vote who were legal voters previous to the war, and who had taken "the oath of amnesty," which was required "by the proclamation of the President of May 29." This convention met on the 14th of August, and abolished slavery and repealed the ordinance of secession. On the 2d of October an election of Governor and other State officers, together with Congressmen, was held, which resulted in the choice of Hon. B. G. Humphreys as Governor.

The provision of the law directs that the Governor of the State for the time being shall be President of the Board of Trustees *ex officio;* and with *him* presiding, and a Board of Colleagues thoroughly in sympathy with Southern interests, we had comparatively a comfortable state of things. Still it was not long before we were beginning to be disturbed by the ominous mutterings of a coming storm in our political sky. The Congress of the United States had passed Acts of Reconstruction, and among other particulars in their legislation, "constituted the States of Mississippi and Arkansas, the Fourth Military District, under command of Major-General Ord. For some reason, not recorded, General Ord was directed to turn over his command to General Gillem. Another convention was assembled in

January, 1868, under this military government, which sat for more than four months in Jackson, having adopted a new constitution. On June 4th, General Irwin McDowell took the command of the military district, and he appointed Major-General Adelbert Ames, Provisional Governor, superseding Governor B. G. Humphreys, the choice of the people. The constitution which had been adopted at the late convention was submitted to a vote of the qualified electors of the State, and was rejected by a majority of 7,639 votes. This occurred in 1868, during the military government. By an act of Congress of April 10, 1869, President Grant was authorized to submit this rejected constitution again to a vote of the people. This election occurred in November, 1869, and those clauses of the constitution that were so objectionable on account of disfranchisement, and disqualifying those from holding office who had taken part against the Union in the civil war, being allowed to be decided for or against retention, "the constitution was ratified almost unanimously, and the objectionable clauses were rejected." The next step was that "at the same time James L. Alcorn, a Republican, was elected Governor of Mississippi over Louis Dent, a Conservative, by a vote of 76,186 against 38,097. This was followed by a session of the Legislature in January, 1870, which ratified the Fourteenth and Fifteenth Amendments to the Constitution of the United States relative to slavery: the State was readmitted into the Union by an act of Congress passed on February 23d, and Governor Alcorn was inaugurated on March 10th; the military government ceased, and the civil authorities assumed control."

CHAPTER XLVI.

Under a New Regime.—Some Signs of Diminished Patronage.—Judge Hudson's Letter and the Answer to It.—Governor Alcorn.—New Board Appointed —A Sketch.—Small Attendance.

THIS year, 1870, was characterized by events of much interest and importance, both public and private, as the history of the University was closely connected with the political condition of the State. We found our second year's roll of students in attendance to have increased to 216, and, as above stated, we were able to send out our first graduating class and to bring the session to its end in June, 1867, with a full order of creditable exercises, honorary and regular. The graduates, though few in number (only four), reflected great credit upon the institution in their performances on the rostrum, and in their subsequent history. They were J. C. Bush, of Mobile, Ala., T. G. Bush, now a prominent citizen of Anniston, Ala., G. E. Critz, Starkville, Miss., and J. S. Moore, D. D., now a distinguished divine and pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Sherman, Texas. I may add that the next year, 1868, showed a slight diminution of our list, though the number of graduates in the Literary Department was much increased, being 24; while the Law Class of the preceding session had shown but one graduate (Hon. Charles Bowen Howry), it also had risen to the number of twelve in 1868 who were graduated, the whole number of law students having been 24 during the session. From this time onward until the year 1870–'71 there may be observed a slight decrease in our attendance every year, reaching the minimum 120 in the Arts

Department, and in the Law Class there were but 15. I use this year as my basis of calculation, as I regard it as the year in which our numbers sank lowest, and from which we began to rally again. The cause of this temporary decline in patronage is not far to seek, and will suggest itself to any one who will recall the fact that the University is a State institution, and that the State was now in the hands of alien controllers, with some exceptions. The natural consequence of this state of the case was that the apprehensions of the real citizens of the State were aroused to what they believed to be the danger of action of the powers to force upon the University the reception of colored students. To do ample justice to Governor Alcorn, I take the opportunity to state, from what I deemed reliable evidence, that he had no such intention, and that if all the colored men, women, and children in the State should have petitioned him to sanction such a policy, he would have persistently refused. I was not with him in his political sentiments, but quite the contrary, I am sure. But I believe, and have said openly, that it was a great event in the Providence of God, for the preservation of the University, that he was placed "at the helm of the ship of state" just at that juncture in its history. 1st, He was a Southern man. 2d, He had owned large numbers of negroes, and hence knew their nature and character as a race. 3d, He had more influence with the party then in power than any other man of the North or South. 4th, He was a friend of the South, and knew full well the imminent peril that would rest upon the true interests of the State by favoring this false policy. I will now record something of the inside history of this condition of popular sentiment in the first place, and then I will give facts to show grounds for the above expressed opinion in regard to Governor Alcorn.

It was during the time when the dissatisfaction of the people of Mississippi, under Radical rule in 1870, was grow-

ing more intense and bitter daily, that, just previous to the fall opening of the session, in September, I received a most respectful communication from a distinguished citizen of the State, the Hon. R. S. Hudson, of Yazoo City, in which, after some remarks introductory, by way of preface, he makes the following inquiry:

"Will the Faculty of the University, as now composed, receive or reject an applicant for admission as a student on account of color or race?" He stated that he knew me, and was under no necessity of asking my views, but he desired an explicit statement of the views of my colleagues. He added that the people of the State were greatly excited upon the subject, and he was particularly desirous that I should furnish such a communication in reply as would answer the purpose of extensive publication in the public journals of the State.

As Judge Hudson was a warm friend and patron of the University, I immediately called a meeting of the Faculty, and the only Trustee to whom I could convey a summons, and laid the letter before them for discussion and action. The result was that which will be found in a communication prepared by myself in words following, to-wit:

"UNIVERSITY OF MISSISSIPPI, *September 28th*, 1870.

"HON. R. S. HUDSON:

"DEAR SIR: Your letter of inquiry of 27th inst. is received, and as your object is clearly and candidly expressed, you are entitled to a reply just as clear and candid.

"In answer to your general question, 'Will the Faculty, as now composed, receive or reject an applicant for admission as a student on account of color or race?' we proceed to say that this Faculty would, most assuredly, in deciding the question of admission, be governed by the consideration of the color and race of the applicant. Furthermore, and the more clearly to meet the point which we know you had in view in the inquiry, we state that *should the applicant*

belong to the negro race, we shall, without hesitation, reject him. We presume that this answer will be satisfactory to you, as well as to the "*many others*," who, with you, "await the answer you solicit," and that "this response" will not be found "marked by any evasion, or uncertainty." Here then we might close our reply, but inasmuch as many will have access to our correspondence, who may not be so readily satisfied, we shall briefly, but with as much clearness as possible, present the considerations which, in our judgment, imperiously demand of us the above indicated course.

"1. The University of Mississippi was founded originally, and has been conducted exclusively, in all its past history, *for the education of the white race.* The Congress of the United States, which endowed the institution; the State of Mississippi, which, by its Legislature, accepted the endowment and chartered and fostered the University; the successive Boards of Trustees which have, for a quarter of a century past, directed its affairs; the Faculties which have presided over it, and governed it; and lastly, the citizens of the State who have patronized it; never, for a moment, conceived it possible or proper that a negro should be admitted to its classes, graduated with its honors, or presented with its diplomas.

"2. The Faculty are not invested with the law-making power, and until the Board of Trustees, who possess this prerogative, legislate a change in the relations of the races, the University will continue to be, what it always has been, an institution exclusively for the education of the white race.

"3. We have received not the slightest intimation that such change is contemplated by the Board of Trustees, but, on the contrary, so far as we know, it is their mind and purpose to maintain the institution unchanged in this respect.

"4. We add, what is due to ourselves, as well as to the patrons of the institution, that should such a change be made in the internal regulations of the University as to re-

quire the Faculty to receive and admit applicants of the negro race to the classes, the members of the present Faculty would instantly tender the resignation of the offices they now hold, and surrender the trust to the authorities of the University, as that of which they could not longer conscientiously consent to be the fiduciaries.

"The above is the 'authoritative and reliable response of the Faculty, and the status of each member thereof on this question.' It is subscribed by each member of the Faculty, with the exception of Professor Lyon, who, being absent in a distant part of the country, could not, of course, affix his signature to it at this time. It is due to that gentleman to add, that no one entertains the above sentiments more cordially than he does, and no member of the Faculty would more promptly subscribe this document.

"Since this question was regarded as one of sufficient importance to be propounded to the Faculty, our only regret in connection with the matter is, that it has been delayed until a period immediately before the opening of the session of the institution; since, if our status on this subject were doubtful, it would have been better for the interests involved that this doubt should have been removed at such time as would have enabled parents and guardians to decide for themselves whether or not they could intrust their sons and wards to an institution which is, and has ever been, designed exclusively for the white race.

"Very respectfully,

"JOHN N. WADDEL,

"*Chancellor, in behalf of the Faculty.*"

Before I dismiss this subject, I will state that the above communication was forwarded to Judge Hudson, and by him sent to the public journals of the State, and thus was largely circulated and extensively read by the people of Mississippi, and sufficed to place the University in its appropriate position on this subject, then occupying a large

space in the public mind I had occasion soon after this to visit Jackson, attending a meeting of the Board of Trustees, and I remember a conversation I held with Judge Sharkey, in reference to this matter, in which he voluntarily and very emphatically gave it as his opinion that by that letter to Judge Hudson "the University was saved." I have no doubt of the fact that, if an opposite course had been adopted, the usefulness of the institution would have been destroyed for years, and the condition of the State, demoralized as it was, would have been far worse in every respect. As the matter terminated, we had no trouble on the subject at all, and the Governor wisely settled the point by recommending to the Legislature to appropriate $50,000 for the establishment of a University for the higher education of the colored population, which was done; and, in honor of the Governor, it was chartered as "Alcorn University."

The war had, by its disastrous progress, swept away nearly all the colleges in the State, and among them Oakland College; and after an effort to resuscitate it, made by its friends, it succumbed, and the Presbyterians, who had control of the property, its buildings, and grounds, sold out to the new colored institution, entirely, for $30,000; and the Alcorn University was located there, in Claiborne county, seventy miles southwest of Jackson. At the same time, at the suggestion of the Governor, the Legislature passed an act to grant the like amount to the University of Mississippi for its support. This constituted the source from which the Faculty drew their salaries; but as it was issued from the treasury in the form of State warrants, the intrinsic value in currency varied from $60 to $75 in every $100. Still it is due the authorities that I should say the salaries were reckoned to the Faculty in full payment of the real amount promised: that is to say, that if we received a warrant of the State of one hundred dollars denomination, it was held as paying us only seventy-five, and in this way we lost nothing. I considered one of the points of deep interest to our

prosperity as an institution of learning to be the organization of the Board of Trustees on the proper basis. Accordingly, I addressed the Governor soon after his inauguration, a communication suggesting to him as a wise arrangement that the twelve Trustees who were to constitute the Board (not including the Governor, who should be *ex officio* by law the presiding officer), should be always nominated by the Governor himself to the State Senate, in three classes of four each, whose term of service should expire at regular intervals after appointment. My reason for this suggestion was that the appointment of Trustees had been made by the body of the two houses of the Legislature in convention assembled, and this was attended with a great deal of confusion, and I was afraid that unworthy parties might be appointed. It would be safer a great deal, I thought, to place the nomination in the power of the Governor, and the confirmation in that of the Senate. I do not claim that this suggestion of mine was the moving influence with His Excellency, inducing him to adopt this method. At all events, this plan was adopted, and the result was that a Board of Trustees was appointed, consisting in part of Republicans, and in part of Southern men, which proved to be satisfactory.

I close this chapter by the statement that our attendance of students in the session 1870–'71 ran down to 120. In my communication in answer to Judge Hudson's letter of inquiry, I alluded to the fact that it was too late for our declaration to reach the people of the State in time to affect, in any way, the patronage. It was generally apprehended throughout the State that, to use the expression common in those days, "the University was going to be radicalized," and it required the entire session to pass, and the most prudent and devoted zeal and vigilance on the part of the Faculty, to bring the institution into the confidence of the citizens of Mississippi, which it had enjoyed to so remarkable a degree previously. But we triumphed, by the blessing of a kind Providence, in due time.

During the year 1870, at a meeting of the Trustees, Rev. Jas. A. Lyon, D. D., Pastor of the Presbyterian Church in Columbus, Miss., was elected to fill the chair of Metaphysics, which had been vacated by the resignation of General Shoup, in 1869. Dr. Lyon entered at once upon the discharge of the duties of this chair, and continued in the faithful work of an instructor, and in the additional labors of a minister of the gospel in various neighboring churches, some time in Oxford, and for some time in Grenada, until his resignation in 1881, in consequence of the loss of his health. He did not long survive after his resignation, but lingered on in great feebleness until he closed his life peacefully, on May 15th, 1882, surrounded by his devoted family. Dr. Lyon was a man of no ordinary intellectual ability, and a lofty sense of Christian honor. His quickness of sensibility made him intolerant of the violations of the courtesies and civilities of gentlemanly social life. He was a high-toned Christian gentleman himself, a warm and devoted friend. I have known him to carry his devotion to a friend so far as to really endanger himself. The duties of his chosen chair were his special study, and his favorite pursuit, outside the ministry. My last intercourse with him was through the mail, in July, '81, and consisted of a card, in which, after speaking of his health somewhat hopefully, he closes by remarking that "*Rest—rest* of body, mind and soul, is essential." From this it may be inferred that he had led a most laborious life, and that his sufferings were all traceable to this fact. Dr. Lyon had a call to various positions, and among them I can recall the presidency of the Stewart College (afterwards the Southwestern University) at Clarksville, Tennessee. This occurred in 1869, but he declined in consideration of the earnest devotion of his church in Columbus, of which he was then pastor. He was also called, after he had been in the University for some years, to a professorship in the Danville Theological Seminary, which he also declined.

CHAPTER XLVII.

Return of Confidence in the University on the Part of the People of the State.—Gov. Alcorn.—Respect Shown the Board.—Two Unpleasant Incidents.—The Dormitory System.—Change of The University System.

IT may have been very objectionable to many of the party in power, that this correspondence between the Faculty and Judge Hudson seemed to place the University on such lofty and independent ground in regard to the race problem. But, judging by the evidences which we received on all hands, and from all quarters, the true citizens of the State and the real patrons of the University, not only within the limits of Mississippi, but from other surrounding States, were prompt and cordial in dismissing their apprehensions on the subject of mixed patronage; since the catalogue of the session of 1871–'72 presented as in attendance, 260 students, an increase of more than 100 per cent. as compared with the number in attendance during the preceding session; and in 1872–'73 there were present 302. Indeed, in all the elements of true prosperity, we were gratified to find the institution regaining lost prestige, and doing noble work in training the youth of the land for their future positions in the State and country. I sincerely believe that the policy of Governor Alcorn was directed to the advancement of the best interests of the University at all times, and by his influence with the radical party he restrained whatever tendency might have cropped out to curtail its usefulness. The members of the Board, as has been stated, consisted of an equal number of both parties; and as they were bound to be present on the grounds of the University at the annual meeting in June, during the exercises of Com-

mencement, they were always received with respect by Faculty and students, and the deliberations of the Board were always harmonious. I remember two occasions, however, when there seemed to be appearances of a threatened storm on the part of the radical members of the Board. One of these incidents occurred in 1869, on the day appropriated to the Sophomore Prize Declamation, during Commencement. One of the declaimers delivered a selected piece, which was a violent denunciation of the Congress of the United States, as it then existed, composed of Republicans almost exclusively. One of the Trustees, who had been appointed recently, by Ames, then Provisional Governor, was a Republican, and (at that time the only one of that party) took great offence that this speech should have been allowed to be spoken at all.

It was freely discussed by the Board, and Professor Shoup whose duty it was to supervise the speeches of the students, and to decide what should be spoken and what should be excluded, was harshly criticised. This professor, in an interview with me, declared, that while he might have been unintentionally somewhat careless in his duty of critical censor, at the same time, if he should fall under censure by the Board, he should tender his resignation at once. This he did, but he was allowed by the Board to withdraw it, with the understanding that such speeches were not to be presented again. The professor declined to withdraw his resignation, and left the University.

A similar occurrence took place, in which I myself was innocently under censure, on another Commencement occasion, in 1872, somewhat in this wise: A student, who had submitted his speech to my criticism in the usual course (not a selected speech, but original,) after my having allowed it to pass, inserted a sentence in the body of the production, reflecting, in very disrespectful language, upon the party in power. On this occasion, there probably were

present on the rostrum as many as half a dozen Republican trustees who heard the remark, and were very indignant. I told them that, while I was responsible for all the speeches on such occasions, and was careful to require every improper word on any subject to be erased and omitted, I certainly could not account for the insertion of any such passage and its delivery, as I had no recollection of it when it was passing under my review. I did not deprecate their displeasure, but submitted the case to their decision, as I totally disapproved of the conduct of the speaker. They passed it over; but I learned subsequently that the youth had omitted it in the speech as submitted to me, and inserted it in the speech delivered. These things are mentioned to illustrate the state of feeling then existing in the State. The party in power naturally felt jealous of any disrespect shown them by the community. The students were all young, and they felt restive under the "yoke of bondage," as they considered the government by Northern men. The Faculty were earnestly desirous of peaceful exercise of their authority over the students; and I can testify to the fact that we not only ourselves met the Republican trustees on all occasions with respect and courtesy, but it was our earnest and constant injunction upon all the students, in public and in private, in the chapel, where we daily assembled with the entire student body, and in our private social intercourse with them, that they should conduct themselves with special propriety and respectful demeanor towards these gentlemen, in whose hands the very existence of the University was placed, and that this great interest demanded the sacrifice of all private animosity, and the restraint of every demonstration of ill-will to those who were in authority by legal appointment. It cannot be denied that these were troublous times for the institution, so much so that I felt, at first, almost decided to consider a call to an institution in a distant State. But matters were managed,

under divine guidance, successfully, and we entertained the trustees hospitably when they attended at Commencement, and kept our institution from falling into disrepute with our own Southern fellow-citizens, during the whole of those trying years. There was, however, a tendency of a different nature growing up among our students as the time rolled on. The students who constituted the body in attendance nearest to the days of the re-organization, in 1865, we have described as being disposed to make the wisest and most profitable use of their time and advantages; but they completed their course in due time, and by natural and necessary consequence many of them rose, step by step, to positions of great usefulness and distinction in the church and in the State. In due time a younger class of students entered the University, and while, like all of our boys at that age (from sixteen to twenty) in our institutions of learning, there is a tendency to more or less of disorder, there was no such state of things as exists in many of the colleges and universities of the country, and such as is recorded by Professor La Borde, of the South Carolina College, in his history of that college under its earlier presiding officers, when there was scarcely a year in the history of that institution during some part of which there did not occur a rebellion of the students; yet we had more or less disorder. I think I may safely announce it as my opinion that if orderly and desirable deportment, with quiet and home-like manners, are expected of students in our colleges and universities, the families of the locality furnish a far more successful and desirable place for boarding them than the system of dormitories, which was in use at Oxford. This decision of mine is the result of an experience at two colleges over which it was my lot to preside, where the family system prevailed, contrasted with my eighteen years of connection with the University of Mississippi, where were three large dormitories.

This subject need not be further discussed, as it has already been discussed in my historical sketch of La Grange College in a former chapter of this memoir. Let me merely add on the subject of discipline, in its practical working, that the phrase, "*putting students on their honor*," requires some impartial consideration before it should be discarded as a principle of college government. Carried to the extreme of utter neglect of all enforcement of law, it will prove disastrous; but to lay down, at the outset, the axiom that students are not worthy of the confidence of those entrusted with authority, and to have if understood that rigid sternness is to characterize the intercourse between the two bodies who are to be associated in the joint enterprise of imparting and receiving instruction, tends infallibly to that old antagonism which once held sway between pupil and teacher, and which will give the teacher, in the mind of the pupil, the rôle of a mere police detective. Two things I have discovered to work favorably with bodies of students: 1. Let them be impressed at the outset of their course and association with the Faculty that they are esteemed as gentlemen, Christian gentlemen, and that they shall be so considered and treated until they, by unworthy bearing, unbecoming such a character, prove that they are undeserving of esteem; that the motto of institution must be understood to be, "Liberty without license, and authority without despotism." 2. That it is much easier to prevent a scheme of mischief than to remedy it after it has been developed. To particularize under this head would require minute details of all sorts of incidents that have occurred during my career as a presiding officer. Let it suffice that I simply indicate the cost of success to be that vigilance which may always note the state of public sentiment in such student community, and an ordinary degree of sagacity will often enable the presiding officer to interfere so quietly as to arrest a scheme of this kind without making public the manner in which it was defeated.

The cares of the external and internal management of the University were very onerous during the latter part of my second term of service in connection with it, in the capacity of presiding officer. The system of its administration had been, from the beginning, merely the ordinary close college method of four regular classes—Freshman, Sophomore, Junior, and Senior—to which we had been compelled to subjoin what was called an Irregular class, the student being not obliged to take all the studies prescribed in the curriculum, and not expected to take a degree. This class, not being fully occupied with their comparatively meagre extent of study, gave the Faculty no little trouble in control. In addition to this, we felt that it was absolutely necessary to re-organize our system so as to make the institution such as would entitle it truly to the name of a University, and to keep it abreast of the world of science and letters, or be left behind in this advancing age.

Accordingly, in my annual report to the Board of Trustees, bearing date June 17, 1869, I find the following passage, which explains itself:

"VII. *Tour of Visitation to Other Institutions.* In consequence of the late war, it is obvious that all the Southern institutions have fallen behind in the march of improvement in many respects. Impressed with this fact, I respectfully suggest to the Board the propriety of commissioning me as your agent to visit as many of the colleges and universities, both North and South, as can be reached within the ensuing vacation, with a view to obtain, by personal visits to their faculties, all the information that may be made valuable to our University. The subjects embraced in such an investigation would be modes of instruction, systems of discipline, with all minute details and plans for the more efficient management and accomplishment of university education. Many facts of great importance and value might be elicited by personal conference, which could not

be acquired by correspondence. The amount necessary to be appropriated to the objects of such an agency cannot be ascertained with exactness, but such a sum as may be deemed adequate should be appropriated, a strict record of expenses kept, and only so much expended as might be needed, and all the rest accounted for."

In accordance with this recommendation the following action was taken by the Board at their meeting on June 17, 1869:

"On motion of Mr. West, it was *Resolved*, That the Chancellor of the University be, and he is hereby authorized, to visit as many of the colleges and universities, both North and South, as can be reached during the ensuing vacation, with a view to obtain, by personal visits to their faculties, all the information that may be made valuable to our University.'

Again, on occasion of an adjourned meeting of the Board in September, I presented my report of the tour of observation thus authorized, and the Board received it, accompanied by the following action:

"On motion of Mr. West, *Resolved*, That the report of J. N. Waddel, Chancellor, of September 22d, 1869, is able, instructive, and comprehensive, and furnishes evidence of an efficient and faithful discharge of the responsible duties of his mission.

"*Resolved*, That the sum of three hundred dollars be paid by the Treasurer to the Chancellor, to cover his expenses while in the service of the University during vacation."

In explanation of the last resolution, I add that I rendered, on my return, a strict account of every item of the actual expense incurred, and I very well remember that my account did not much exceed two hundred dollars. But, as I was informed by a member of the Board, they felt that the service rendered entitled me to the sum named in the resolution adopted.

I had submitted the substance of my report to the Fac-

ulty, and it had been fully discussed previous to its being submitted to the Board. I shall not record the entire report, but content myself with a mere epitome of its contents.

After stating that I had visited the University of Georgia, Harvard, the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Amherst College, Yale College, University of the City of New York, Princeton College, Brown University, and the University of Michigan, and that I had failed to visit Columbia College, in New York, on account of the absence of Dr. Barnard in Europe, and was prevented, by circumstances, from visiting Cornell University, I presented for the consideration of the Board what was then the plan of the University of Michigan, and the plan adopted at Harvard University, and some others. The first consists of three general departments: 1, The Department of Science, Literature, and the Arts; 2, The Department of Law; 3, The Department of Medicine and Surgery. But included under the first head are no less than six different courses of study; 1, The Classical course; 2, The Latin and Scientific; 3, The Scientific; 4, The course of Civil Engineering; 5, The course in Mining Engineering; 6, The course in Mechanical Engineering. Besides all these courses, they provide amply for a regular course in Analytical Chemistry.

A student, in order to attain the degree of B. A., must take all the studies of No. 1. In No. 2 Greek is omitted and Modern Languages substituted. In No. 3 both Greek and Latin are omitted, and Science and Modern Languages pursued. Should any student desire a selection of studies, he will be allowed to pursue his choice in any of these departments for such a length of time as he may choose, but he cannot attain a degree.

The other plan is one which, to some extent, accomplishes the combination of the university, or elective scheme, with the close college curriculum. This consists in making the close system obligatory upon the student who is a candidate for the degree of B. A. only to a certain point in the course.

This is attained at the close of one of the classes in some institutions, and at the close of a different class in others. Without giving particulars, it will be sufficient to state that this is a fair description of the second plan, where the compulsory and elective systems are combined.

The only remaining scheme for consideration is the entirely open system in operation at the University of Virginia.

There was some variance in the views and preferences of the members of the Faculty when I read my report to them in full form. The majority favored the plan of the University of Michigan, and it was finally adopted in the University of Mississippi, with such modifications as were deemed best adapted to the circumstances.

It may be stated that very great changes have taken place in the general plans of various institutions of learning, North and South, since the time to which I here refer. In regard to these changes, some of them have proved to be beneficial, and of others there is a diversity of opinion among educators. In some of the very best of our schools of the higher learning co-education has been introduced, with fine effect in certain respects, such as the enlargement of woman's mental culture and intellectual vigor. But some have shown a reluctance to its introduction, and such seem to cling to the *ancienne regime* with great tenacity, wherein the sexes were trained separately with sedulous care. This change has occurred in the institution at Oxford, and seems not to have been attended with any injurious results to the cause of education. There may be, however, some ground for the opinion which I have seen expressed, that this association of the sexes in so close quarters "impaired that delicacy which was woman's adornment." Still, such an improvement as this had not been inaugurated at the time of my connection with the University, and does not fall properly within the limits which I have prescribed to myself as the historian of its progress.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

Burden of Responsibility.—Church and State Institutions.—Attitude of the University Toward Christianity.—Free Tuition.—Work Done by its Graduates.—Historical Address.—Degree of LL. D. Conferred by the University of Georgia.

I HAD felt for some time a pressure of the responsibility that is inseparable from the position which I occupied that was becoming heavier every year. The question of duty was that which I had to decide, and it was to be settled in my own mind, not simply upon the balancing process, of the personal ease, or difficulty of the office to myself, for my convictions had long been settled that this is, or should be, always a secondary consideration. The main point to be considered certainly is in what position are men found capable of the greatest usefulness to those for whom they are laboring. If, in spheres different from that one occupied by them, they are convinced they can exert an influence more salutary to the promotion of truth and virtue, and the advancement of the true interests in morals and culture of those around them, then they are justified in making the exchange. But, unless this can be made manifest to them under an enlightened conscience, it is a betrayal of solemn trust to desert a post of honorable usefulness merely because to hold to it, and discharge its obligations successfully, involves personal discomfort and mental anxiety, the sacrifice of bodily ease and enjoyment. Still there is *conceivable* such a state of things as a combination of one's own freedom from trouble, and, at the same time, a field of greater usefulness in some other department of human effort than that one occupied at the time. It is true that I

had reached the point in my administration of the affairs of the University which seemed to be favorable to its future career. I felt that it might be compared to a ship which, after having been tossed by winds and waves upon a boisterous sea, was now sailing in tranquil waters, and that the same divine Providence which had been at the helm was at hand still to guide and control all the elements, and make the institution a blessing to the church and the world, as He had done in its past history. But two things still presented themselves to my mind in this discussion:

1st. Could I not engage in some other employment that would be attended by as much benefit, and result in as great usefulness to the church and to the world as the work I am now doing in the University, and avoid at the same time the wear and tear of body and mind that accompanies it.

2d. Is it best for me, personally, that I have so close a connection in my work with the political affairs of the State as seems necessary by the fact of the control exercised over the University by the State?

My meditation on this subject did not disturb my mind to such a degree as to bring me to the conclusion that I ought to leave the institution. Still I felt more and more that a release from the burdensome cares and anxieties of office would relieve me greatly. But I was not prepared to see the path of duty with sufficient clearness to take any decisive step, either in one or the other direction, contenting myself with making no mention publicly of my feelings and views, but moving on in the ordinary course of daily duty.

With regard to the relation existing between church and state education, I have had not a little experience in the actual working of these two agencies. The State has the means whereby the very best arrangements can be made to conduct the business of education in the most extensive and enlarged system, so that, if the controlling powers of the

State be imbued with the wisest and best principles that should constitute the great subject of education for the youth of the country, it possesses the *power* to perform the work successfully. But in our republic, the great political principle of a separation of church and state is understood by our people to extend to the exclusion of religion as far as possible from our public school system; and, as our people are divided into many different denominations of Christian churches, there seems to be a jealousy aroused by an apparent favor shown to one or another of these sects, when a representative is put in office in the Faculty from one rather than from another. In order to do away with this state of things, some institutions prefer excluding any form of religious teaching whatever. The churches, on the other hand, have felt bound, in self-defence, to establish schools and colleges of their own. They have, all over the land, good institutions of every church, where their children are trained to accept the doctrines and preferences of their fathers, and religious instruction in form is amply provided for in the curriculum, as a part of the studies called for in every case. But then the churches labor under one of two disadvantages: either they have not the pecuniary resources at command with which to establish such institutions, or the private members of these churches fail to come up with their contributions. There is a lamentable lack of *l'esprit du corps*, among the churches of the South at least.

The University of Mississippi has not been chargeable with any disposition whatever to exclude Christianity from its system of instruction, since the effort attempted by some to exclude the "evidences of Christianity," and the policy of "excluding all ministers from office in the Faculty," were defeated, both of them in the origin of the institution. There is a remarkable fact in its history which ought to be recorded to its credit. It has been the *alma mater* of a large number of our best and most useful ministers of the

gospel, and little or no interference has ever been experienced by any minister who may, from time to time, have held office in its corps of instructors, in his ministerial duties of preaching to his own people.

There are other statements to be made on this subject equally honorable to the University, and which, even in the earlier days of its comparatively contracted pecuniary resources, were made public in its printed code of laws under the heading of provisions for

"FREE STUDENTS.

"1. Students preparing for the ministry of any denomination of Christians will be admitted into each class, without tuition fee, on application to the Faculty; but, whenever the student shall abandon such intention, or shall act in a manner inconsistent therewith, the fees so dispensed with shall be considered due.

"2. Any young man desirous of entering the University, but unable to pay for tuition, will be admitted by the Faculty without fee, on standing the regular examination, and producing certificates of good moral character, and of his inability to pay; such certificates to be signed by some resident minister, or the principal of some academy in the neighborhood from which he comes.

"3. In both cases, strict secrecy will be observed, and and there will be no difference in the treatment of different classes of students.

"4. A student from each senatorial district in the State will be admitted upon the recommendation of the Boards of Police, tuition free. The admission shall be termed a scholarship, and shall be the reward of merit."

I repeat that this provision for free tuition was made at a time when the University was cramped for the means of maintaining the full responsibilities of her position as a school of the higher learning, and for fully meeting the ex-

pectations of the people of the State. But one step after another was gradually taken by the authorities, until ultimately tuition was declared free to all students, not only of the State of Mississippi, but of the world.

Moreover, although a State institution, under all its trials and difficulties, it has so far enjoyed the confidence of the various churches as to have furnished the preliminary training in their literary and scientific course for seventy-three ministers of the gospel (one of whom is a bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, Dr. Galloway), within the first forty years of its existence and operation.

Nor has this institution failed in giving to the world others from its training who have filled honorably the various spheres of usefulness in almost every department of public effort. The Alumni of the University have filled the highest positions in the judiciary of the State, and in the legislative halls, and in all the professions. "Last, though by no means least," her graduates are recorded among the incumbents who successively have filled the place of Trustees, and they have occupied the chairs of instruction in almost every department of her established course. Among these we find one Chancellor, four full Professors, one Acting Professor, seven Adjunct Professors, and thirty tutors; in all forty-three, who were once receiving instruction, and who subsequently were called to occupy the seats whence they so acceptably and honorably imparted it to many others. Long may the University keep its record bright, and be a blessing in the future, as it has been in the past, to both State and church! I feel that I should say thus much in justice to this State institution, whose policy has been known to me from its origin.

Yet, returning to myself, I simply add that, while I had never been trammeled by its authorities in any ministerial work, I felt, as I grew older, that I ought to be more closely identified with my own church. I continued, however, to

work, amid much anxiety and under some discouragements on account of disorders among our students, and with some apprehensions from dissatisfied politicians, until the year 1873–'74.

The Commencement occurring in June, 1873, was the quarter century of the organization of the University. On that occasion (by request of the Board of Trustees the year previous) I delivered a historical discourse to a large audience, on Wednesday, June 25th, on which occasion the following action was taken by the Board of Trustees:

"UNIVERSITY OF MISSISSIPPI,
OXFORD, 1873.

"Wednesday, June 25th, being the twenty-fifth anniversary of the organization of this institution, a historical discourse was delivered, by invitation of the Board of Trustees, by the Chancellor, Rev. John N. Waddel, D. D., after which the Board unanimously adopted the following resolutions:

"*Resolved*, That Chancellor Waddel is entitled to the thanks of every friend of the University for the splendid oration delivered by him on yesterday. That his able and conclusive vindication of the University against the assaults of all its enemies inspires the Board of Trustees with renewed hope of making this noble institution the pride and glory of Mississippians, and their posterity forever.

"*Resolved*, That the Chancellor be respectfully requested to place his oration at our disposal for publication, and that five hundred copies of the same be printed.

"*Resolved*, That there now being new material enough for one volume of the history of the University, our beloved Chancellor be earnestly requested to prepare the same for publication at as early a day as he conveniently can."

I was, of course, gratified by the foregoing reception my discourse met with at the hands of the Board, but my time

was so fully occupied by daily duties which pressed upon me, that I found no time to write the history.

It was at the annual Commencement of this year, in the month of August, that I received from my *alma mater*, the University of Georgia, at Athens, the unsolicited and unexpected honor of Doctor of Laws (LL. D.). This I, of course, regarded as peculiarly complimentary, from the fact that, from the origin of the University in 1801 to the year 1873—just seventy-two years of its existence—I was the seventh instance of its having been conferred. The names opposite to which these initial letters stand recorded on the Centennial Catalogue are the following:

Hon. Wm. H. Crawford, in 1824.
Hon. George McDuffie, in 1843.
Hon. John McPherson Berrien, in 1850.
Hon. Eugenius A. Nisbet, in 1868.
Dr. L. A. Dugas, in 1869.
Hon. L. Q. C. Lamar, in 1870.
Rev. J. N. Waddel, D. D., in 1873.

CHAPTER XLIX.

General Assembly of 1868.—Elected Moderator.—Proceedings.—Educational Convention.—Director of Church University.—Results of Two Meetings.—Meeting of The General Assembly in 1864.—Elected Secretary of Education.—Resignation.

THE reader of these pages must bear in mind that my public life has been of a two-fold character. I have been exercising the somewhat analogous functions of a teacher and a minister of the gospel. It has been found necessary, therefore, that this narrative should, from time to time, be interrupted in its record of my life, as it progressed along one of these lines of work, in order to bring the two together at some synchronous point. I find myself just now at one of those periods, during the year 1874, when, after having been released from official connection with the General Assembly as stated clerk, by resignation, my labors were confined to the University, over which I had been called to preside in 1865, save that I continued to preach at Oxford and at other churches as I found opportunity. If this, then, be a matter of interest, I will recur to the transaction in which I was interested, and in some of which I was an actor during the interval of nine busy years, from 1865 to 1874.

I had the appointment of Commissioner to the General Assembly that met in Baltimore in May, 1868, and I found it a most agreeable recreation to withdraw for a brief space from the heavy and exacting pressure of daily labor, to enjoy once more the society of my esteemed and beloved brethren, and to take again some part in the deliberations of the church.

I left home in Oxford on Monday, May 18, 1868, and reached Baltimore in due time, where I met many of the brethren who had been my associates during the troublous war times, and whom I had not seen since. I was unexpectedly made moderator of the Assembly; and I may be permitted to remark that, while I was not aware of making any very signal blunders in parliamentary law and order, I attribute my moderate success to the fact, under Divine favor, that our church south had then been in her separate existence for so short a period as not to have accumulated business out of which might possibly have arisen complications of interpretation by ecclesiastical lawyers. The Assembly was visited on this occasion by a delegation of ministers from the Synod of Kentucky, the chairman of which was Rev. R. S. Breck, D. D., and my impression is now that Rev. Samuel R. Wilson, D. D., was his associate. Dr. Breck, on the second day of the meeting, "delivered an address conveying the assurance of the kind feeling, sympathy and confidence" of the Synod of Kentucky, to which I, as moderator, responded. The Synod extended an invitation to our body to hold their next meeting in Louisville, Ky. But the Assembly declined to accept it, as it was "judged inexpedient, under present circumstances." Yet a commissioner, with an alternate, was "appointed to convey to the Synod of Kentucky the salutations of the Assembly." Rev. J. A. Lefevre was appointed principal, and Rev. E. W. Bedinger his alternate.

After the usual routine of business was finished, the Assembly adjourned on Wednesday, May 27th, after a pleasant session of just six days, to meet on the third Thursday in May, 1869, in Mobile, Alabama. The number of commissioners present on that occasion was ninety-five, of which number there were fifty ministers and forty-five ruling elders. The total of ministers then belonging to the Southern church was 786; and the membership numbered 76,949.

In 1890, twenty-two years later, there were 1,179 ministers, and of communicants 168,791 were in connection with our Southern church, making an increase of 393 ministers, and 91,849 communicants. We had in 1868, licentiates, 51; candidates, 92. In 1890 we had 66 licentiates and 336 candidates. Some who were present in Baltimore, in active work, have closed their labors on earth, and have entered into their everlasting rest. Of the eighteen who have left us, we number such consecrated and godly-minded workers as John Leighton Wilson and Dr. T. V. Moore, with many as dear to the survivors, but not so prominent in the church. My own eye rests upon two names of peculiar interest to my memory; one is the aged minister of Christ, Rev. David Humphreys, of South Carolina, my first teacher, to whom I have already referred in the first chapter of this memoir. The other is my nephew, Prof. Wm. H. Waddel, of the University of Georgia, an elder-commissioner from Presbytery of Augusta, one of the most accomplished scholars of his time, who died in 1878, just ten years later, of heart affection.

I notice just here, that at the Commencement exercises of the University of Mississippi, there was graduated the second class after the close of the war, consisting of twenty-four, among whom I sadly recall my eldest son, who became a minister, and after a consecrated service of about seven years, passed away, in 1885.

I attended the meeting of the Assembly in 1869, in Mobile, the record of which is found in the printed minutes of that body, Vol. II. My connection with the public history of the church is not on record at all, except as a minister enrolled as S. S. from year to year, at Oxford, Miss., until the year 1874. Previous to that year, however, at a meeting of the General Assembly, held in Louisville, Ky., after the union of the Synod of Kentucky had been perfected with the Southern Assembly in Mobile, an educational convention was

called, to meet in Huntsville, Ala., in 1871; and the Presbyteries were notified to empower their commissioners to act as members of that convention. Of that convention I was empowered to act as a member, in behalf of the Presbytery of Chickasaw. The conception of holding this convention originated with Rev. James A. Lyon, D. D., and the idea at the basis of the convention was to discuss and, if possible, adopt the plan of establishing one grand University for the whole church South, to be under the care of the Presbyterian people. The convention was composed of a number of our ablest ministers and ruling elders, and the whole subject was most thoroughly canvassed. The scheme did not prove acceptable to some of our brethren, upon the ground that they were amply provided in their region of the country with the means of education already, and while wishing Godspeed to those who favored this concert of action, they declined participation in the enterprise. Not regarding this as a defeat, the matter held fast hold upon their minds as something not to be surrendered, but to be developed in full efficiency, even though on a more limited scale. "Cast down," they were, but by no means "destroyed." Of that convention I was honored by being made chairman, and a public address was adopted by the convention and scattered broadcast throughout the southwest, suggesting that contiguous Synods unite, and thus supply, by co-operation, what no single one could furnish alone. This suggestion was industriously and successfully pressed and elaborated by Rev. Dr. Shearer, then President of Stewart College, at Clarksville, Tenn. "A meeting of commissioners from five Synods was held in May, 1873, and a plan was then adopted, and in the autumn of the same year, commissioners were sent from the Synods of Alabama, Arkansas, Memphis, Mississippi and Nashville (and Texas afterwards joined the association), who adopted a plan of union, and all the six Synods agreed upon it; and each one of them appointed two direc-

tors, to meet in January, 1874, and take charge of the enterprise."

Among these, I was chosen a director in 1873, while still Chancellor of the University, without my knowledge, and, accordingly, with the other directors, I attended a meeting in Memphis in January, 1874.

There were many applications before the board at this meeting, for the location of the university proposed to be organized; and Rev. Dr. Breck also was present, urging us to unite with Kentucky in establishing a university in some central locality; but, after a patient hearing of many speakers, the board adjourned, to hold another meeting in May, 1874, at which time they proposed to receive propositions for the location from all who were willing to make them, and to transact any other matters of business that might come before them, to be settled with a view to the organization of the university at the earliest period consistent with the true interests involved. This second meeting was held at the time appointed, in Memphis, and, after a careful examination of all the proposals from various communities, "the board selected Clarksville as the location, and Stewart College, with its funds and appurtenances, as the nucleus of future operations. The former Faculty of Stewart College was continued provisionally, and the institution was kept in operation on the same scale as heretofore, until such time as the way might be open for the formal organization of the university proper. I attended this meeting, also, and took part in all the deliberations. Among other important subjects acted upon by the board at this meeting, the election of a chancellor was proposed, and the unanimous voice of the the members called to this office of trust the Rev. B. M. Palmer, D. D., LL. D., thus manifesting that their minds were inspired with hope and expectation of success in the erection of a university on the most elevated scale.

It was during the month of May, 1874, that at the regu-

lar meeting of the General Assembly in Columbus, Miss., the annual report of the Executive Committee of Education was presented by the Standing Committee of the Assembly in the following language:

"The Secretary (Dr. E. T. Baird) states that, since the organization of the committee, there has been no year of its history which has been attended with so many circumstances to cause anxiety and to produce painful mortification. The year commenced with a deficiency of $2,900." The chairman then continues to report several facts besides this deficiency, the second of which is that "a number of students have left the seminary or college, and resorted to secular business to support themselves." Then, after (in the language of Dr. Baird) stating that "the committee, through circulars issued by the secretary, had exhausted its ability to urge this matter on the attention of the churches," the chairman of the standing committee adds the fourth discouraging fact to be, that, "after all these urgent appeals, there is a deficiency of $4,000."

The recommendations of the standing committee are that, "in view of the whole case," the Assembly should adopt one or the other of the two following courses:

"(1), Abolish the Committee of Education altogether, and throw the support of the candidates upon the Presbyteries; or (2), separate the causes of Education and Publication, elect an additional secretary, and locate him at some central point in the West."

They gave the highest testimonial in the report to Dr. Baird, the secretary, as an "efficient and suitable man for the work of secretary, and expressed the gratification it would afford them "to see his great energies, experience and wisdom fully engaged in this *pre-eminently important* work of beneficiary education."

After the Assembly had selected Memphis as the location of the committee, instead of abolishing it, "the following was adopted":

"*Resolved*, That the following persons be elected the Executive Committee of Education for the ensuing year; Rev. John N. Waddel, D. D., Secretary; James Elder, Treasurer; J. O. Stedmen, D. D., Rev. W. E. Boggs, Rev. E. M. Richardson, Rev. A. Shotwell, M. P. Jarnagin, B. M. Estes, J. B. Griffing, W. W. Armstrong, and A. C. Ewell."

This all occurred during the last session of my term of service as Chancellor of the University of Mississippi. I did not, indeed, seek the office, but I was not entirely taken by surprise, as some such intimations had fallen upon my ear, and had to some extent been passing through my mind. The subject of resigning my office, as I have already stated, had begun to occupy my thoughts, and the question of duty had led me to the throne of grace and wisdom for divine guidance in its proper solution. But, up to the period of June 26th, 1874, I had been able to reach no decision that seemed satisfactory to my judgment on this important matter. The annual Commencement exercises were finished on Thursday, 25th, yet the Board of Trustees had not concluded all the business, but were to hold their last meeting and close up their work on Friday, 26th. I awoke very early on the morning of that day, and realizing the relief which was consequent upon the successful winding up of another toilsome year's work, my heart went up in grateful thanksgiving to the Giver of all good, and in prayer for divine guidance for the future. In what I am about to record, I am aware that I may incur the charge of infatuation, on the part of those who do not hold the same views upon the doctrine of Divine Providence that I hold; but I shall be found to be entirely in congenial accord with every one who believes in the consolatory doctrine of answered prayer. I had a perception just *then*, such as I had felt on only two previous occasions in my life, of a ray of light entering my mind, as I made the decision to tender my resignation; after which I found all my hesitancy and uncertainty at an end.

There was no such feeling as excitement, but a calm and peaceful acquiescence in what I felt convinced was the will of God in regard to my duty. It will serve to heighten the interest of this case that I state the fact that at the Chancellor's annual reception on that occasion, during Commencement week, the Trustees were present, and among them those who belonged to the Republican party. As I sincerely desired to have them feel at home, and enjoy the evening, I made it a point that ought to be observed, to have these gentlemen introduced to the ladies who were present. I, at the same time, took the precaution to ascertain the personal sentiment of the ladies in this regard, and ascertain whether it would be agreeable to them to be presented in this way, and this I did without the slightest intimation to the Trustees themselves. Every lady whom I approached declined very quietly, but very promptly. These gentlemen, (I was informed by a party present in company with them), resented this neglect, and laid the entire blame to my charge, considering it a tacit purpose on my part, and a practical indignity done to themselves. It was just one of those unavoidable occurrences one is called to encounter sometimes in society, which could not be explained without making matters worse; so I said nothing to any one about it. But as I heard of the fact as stated above, I confess that, while under other circumstances their dissatisfaction would not have influenced my action at all, it had the effect of simply confirming my decision already reached, to tender my resignation. This I did immediately on the assembling of the Board at their office, after breakfast. My written resignation was very brief, only conveying to the board the fact in words enough to answer the purpose, without the assignment of any reason for my course.

My resignation was placed in the hands of a special friend of mine (one of the Trustees), and hardly ten minutes had elapsed when I was summoned to appear before them

to explain. My reasons were demanded not in any unfriendly manner at all, but with evident disappointment, and apparent, and (I believe on the part of the majority) real regret and surprise. Protestations of the warmest friendship, and most perfect confidence, were made by members of the Board, and they were manifestly all of them unwilling to accept my resignation. I made a speech to them in which I offered two considerations as my justification for the course pursued: 1, The heavy pressure of responsibility resting upon me in the multiplicity of details of duty in which I had and (from the nature of the case) could have little or no alleviation; 2, The fact that I had been devoting most of my working days to the service of the world at large, and only a few of my years to the service of the church; that I lacked but eight years now of the limit of human life assigned in God's appointment, and I felt that those eight years, and whatever additional years I might have, ought to be spent in doing work for my church. The result was that they resolved to adjourn for one month, and refused, in the meantime, to accept my resignation, with the hope that I would reconsider the subject, and withdraw it. I may as well dispose of this part of my history by recording that, at the appointed time to which they had adjourned, they re-assembled, and finding me still resolute in my purpose, they accepted my resignation, and proceeded to elect to the vacated office, Lieutenant-General Alexander P. Stewart as my successor.

CHAPTER L.

Maturing My Views as to Accepting the Office of Secretary of Education.—Advised Against It.—Formal Acceptance.—Supply of a Church.—A Difference.—Decision of the Question by the Assembly.—Epidemic of Yellow Fever.—Joined the Presbytery of Memphis.

I HAD not decided even *then* to accept the Secretaryship of Education. I, however, felt that it was highly probable that I should come to that conclusion ultimately, as it appeared to me that it opened before me a field of abundant usefulness to the church, and that I should be freed from those peculiar forms of responsibility inherent in college and university work, especially where the institution is the property of the State. I assumed it, as the most natural state of things, that I should find congenial employment in laboring to build up the interests of the Southern church, sustained, as I should be, by my brethren who had called me to the position. It may be just as well for me to state that, in a correspondence held previous to my leaving the University wtih one of my warmest friends, and one of the most judicious advisers—a distinguished minister of our church—it was suggested to me that it might not prove to be so favorable a change of occupation as it seemed to be. He gave as objectionable to any of these secretaryships, that they were, all of them, more or less the subjects of criticism and fault-finding from the churches and ministers throughout the country, and that it would be by no means as free from trouble as I had imagined it to be. Yet, while I felt that he was actuated by the purest motives and the most sincere regard for me, I did not agree with him in his

views; but in August I visited Memphis, and, at a meeting of the newly-appointed Executive Committee of Education, I formally accepted the office of secretary, and removed in November to Memphis, rented a house, and at once entered upon the duties of the office with zeal and earnestness, relying upon the great Head of the church to guide, uphold and sustain me in all my efforts to do His work.

Referring to the action of the Assembly at Columbus, Miss., in May previous, I found that the duties of the secretary were prescribed in language following, viz.: "It shall be the duty of the secretary, in addition to visiting the Presbyteries and Synods for the purpose of raising funds, to act as a medium of communication between our candidates and the Presbyteries, for the purpose of securing prompt and remunerative employment for our candidates during their vacations." (See Minutes of General Assembly for 1874, page 515, paragraph 4, of Report of Standing Committee.) To this I endeavored to apply myself at once, visiting the four Synods of Missouri on October 17th; of Arkansas, on the 24th; of Texas, on the 4th of November; and of Kentucky, on the 12th of November, and making addresses before all of these bodies, I very soon found that the cause of beneficiary education was among the most unpopular of all the four objects of church benevolence. As an illustration of this fact, I made an honest effort at the Assembly of May, 1875, that met in St. Louis, Mo., to prevail upon some of our most eloquent preachers to address the Synod of Missouri on the evening set apart by resolution of the Assembly for a general meeting to discuss the subject, and as I failed utterly to obtain the consent of all I approached to do that service, I had the matter re-considered, and no such meeting was held at all. Nor was any such meeting, for the benefit of that cause, ever held at any session of the General Assembly during my term of service as secretary. Year after year came up to

the Assembly propositions to do away with the Executive Committee of Education entirely, and to relegate the business of beneficiary training and support to the various Presbyteries. This continued as long as I was engaged in the service of the church, and at the meeting of the Assembly in Louisville, Ky., in 1879, which was the last time I ever attended as secretary, there was an effort made by dissatisfied parties to do away with this committee as a separate agency, and combine it with the Executive Committee of Home Missions, under the secretary in charge of the latter. It was not presented before the Assembly, but I mention it to show the difficulties encountered by the Executive Committee of Education. Let me dismiss this subject by referring to the noble and exhaustive report, which was the work of a committee consisting of Rev. Jos. B. Stratton, D. D., Rev. Stuart Robinson, D. D., and Ruling Elder John L. Marye, of Virginia, the object of which was, according to Overture No. 8, "to consider the propriety of abandoning the present scheme of education, and remanding this subject to the Presbyteries." The Committee on Bills and Overtures, in reporting upon this overture, "recommended that, as the overture contemplates a radical change in the policy of the church, a committee of two ministers and one elder be appointed to consider the subject maturely, and to collect the sense of the church by correspondence, and report to the next General Assembly."

This report was written by Dr. J. B. Stratton, and presented to the Assembly at the meeting in Savannah, Ga., in 1876. It was published by order of the Assembly, and will be found in the Appendix, in extenso, on pages 278–285, inclusive. This report had the desired effect, as the Executive Committee is still the accredited agency of the Assembly in conducting the business of beneficiary education, but by no means interfering with the preferences of any Presbytery adopting an independent plan. But other difficulties came

on after awhile, which were wholly unexpected by myself. I will refer to one of them as a matter of history, designing not the slightest reflection upon any of the parties concerned. Soon after my entrance upon the duties of Secretary of Education, I was invited to take charge, as Stated Supply, of a little mission chapel, and to give to it only just that amount of time and attention which could be spared from the duties of the secretaryship. This was distinctly specified, and, with that understanding I agreed to serve the little chapel. But the majority of the committee looked at the matter with very different views, and disapproved of the arrangement. At first, I felt disposed to give up my engagement with the church, but, upon second thought, I decided to preach to them for the time. After a fair trial of the question of conflict between the office and the church, finding that I could perform the two services without neglecting those belonging to the office, I continued to preach on Sabbath, when not away on business of the Executive Committee. My brethren, all except one member of the committee, differed with me, upon the alleged ground that all my time and attention was due to the secretaryship. As it was a question that we could not decide among ourselves, I proposed to the committee to leave it to be decided by the General Assembly, which was to meet in 1876 in Savannah, and this proposition was accepted by the committee. I, in the mean time, proposed to yield $1,000 of the salary fixed by the Executive Committee at my entrance upon the office. The Standing Committee on Education made their report through the chairman, Rev. R. G. Brank, D. D., to the effect that "they do not regard the engagement of the secretary as Stated Supply of a church in the city of Memphis as incompatible with the duties of his office as secretary of the committee." They state, after discussing the subject in all its aspects, that the "committee (the Standing Committee on Education, then reporting) recommend that the action of the

secretary in this matter be approved." This ended that matter.

I state further, that one heavy burden which fell upon the committee was the deficit reported by Dr. Baird, in his account presented to the Assembly at Columbus, in 1874, which amounted to $4,000. Of course this resulted from the fact that the churches failed to furnish the means to pay the candidates the various sums which had been pledged to them by the former committee. We were thus encumbered with a debt at the very outset of our administration, which proved a very heavy burden, with the limited resources at command and in prospect. Yet we braced ourselves to the work, and, although we had, in accordance with the practice of the former committees, to pledge to all candidates in seminary courses $200, and to college students $175, we managed, by Divine favor, to pay a percentage in reduction of the debt, and to send our special beneficiaries enough to carry them through their annual terms of study. We also met with an unexpected event, which proved a signal blessing in our struggles, and it came about in this way:

Previous to the disruption of the church, in 1861, in consequence of the civil war, a devoted elder in Mississippi, Mr. Lusk, of Water Valley, had by his last will, bequeathed to the Boards of the old United Church certain liberal sums of money, and among them he gave a certain amount to the Board of Education, part of which amount had been paid by his executor to the Board before the war. That, of course, arrested all further payments, and the balance of the sum unpaid was claimed by the Northern Board. But, in a letter received from a brother (Rev. S. F. Tenny, of Texas), who was in Philadelphia about the time of our pecuniary straits, I was informed by him that in an interview with the Secretary of the Board of Education of the Northern church, Rev. William Speer, he was informed that a remnant of that legacy of Mr. Lusk was under the control

of the Northern church, and he suggested that, upon the application of our Assembly to the Northern Assembly, in proper legal form, the whole of the balance now due would be turned over to us. The needed arrangements were consummated as soon as possible, and Dr. Speer made the transfer of all the papers to myself, and we placed all in the hands of our church Board of Trustees. The Assembly of 1876 instructed the Trustees "to turn over the legacy of the Lusk estate, amounting to something over $3,000, to the Treasurer of Education, to collect and use for liquidating the existing debt, or otherwise, as the exigencies of the case may require."

This was accordingly done, and the subject may be dismissed with the statement of the fact that this money was collected by the attorney, Hon. J. W. C. Watson, as soon as possible, and paid over to the committee from time to time, and the debt against the committee was gradually reduced, until, at the end of my term of office in 1879, only a small remnant of it remained unliquidated, and ample provision was made to meet that by the balance still due from the Lusk estate.

In closing the record of my connection with the Executive Committee of Education, I feel that, by the gracious mercy of God, the work accomplished was a success, considered in all respects, especially when considered in relation to the gloom that overshadowed its prospects at the time of its location in Memphis, in 1874. It must be borne in mind that the operations of the committee had been conducted under great pressure from financial troubles among the churches, and from an unfortunate want of favor to the general subject of beneficiary education, and from the debt on the committee, which had to be paid to former students, and at the same time from their own obligations to the students under their care. It is cause of great gratitude, when it is considered that these two objects were accomplished in less than five years,

and that over four hundred young students were helped into the gospel ministry. To God alone be all the glory!

As stated in a foregoing page, while I was acting as Secretary of Education, I supplied a church with preaching. This had been, originally, a mission chapel, located on Union street, and came into existence during the pastorate of the popular and beloved Dr. T. D. Witherspoon, and was established as a preaching station by the Second Presbyterian church of Memphis. The building was of the simplest architecture, and wholly destitute of all ornamentation. On the retirement of Dr. Witherspoon it seemed to have been deserted, at least for a time, but ultimately, (I do not know at what time), it was resumed as a place of worship. At the time of my arrival in Memphis, in 1874, it was under the ministry of Rev. A. Shotwell. He removed shortly after that, to St. Louis, and the church was left vacant. I was asked, just then, to fill the pulpit at such times as I could redeem from the actual duties of the secretaryship, which I did for more than eighteen months. I found that when I began to preach there, the membership consisted of about thirty members. The location was not fortunate for increase, but the members, though few in numbers, were zealous, and were anxious to build up the little church, and during the year 1876 (my second year in Memphis), I preached my last sermon in that building, on the 8th of October. It was abandoned in order that the members might take possession of a new and far more eligible house of worship, on the corner of Beale and Lauderdale streets. This house was built by the contributions of a few wealthy members of this congregation, assisted by smaller amounts from others, who contributed according to their ability. It was designed as a lecture and Sabbath-school room, and ample space was left on the large and beautiful lot for the erection of the building which was ultimately to stand as the more capacious house of worship. In the meantime, the first build-

ing, newly finished as above described, was to be used for all purposes of a church, until the plan should be fully carried into effect, by the completion of the church proper. The new house of worship was solemnly dedicated to the service of the Triune God, by all the usual solemnities; the sermon, a masterly effort of spiritual and intellectual power, being preached by Rev. T. D. Witherspoon, D. D., from the text, Ephesians iv. 15, 16. The church has been known, thenceforward, as "the Lauderdale street church," and to it I ministered, as its Stated Supply, until July, 1879. In September, 1878, the yellow fever was declared epidemic in Memphis, and a very general tendency to leave the city was manifested by those citizens who were able to get away.

The membership of the Lauderdale street church, which was about thirty in number while they occupied the mission chapel on Union street, had now increased to 107. But the churches were all soon closed on account, not only of the desertion of the congregations, but also by the consideration of sanatory prudence and caution against exposure on the part of the small number who were still in their homes. Having made up our minds to remain in our place of residence, my wife and I, adopting the plan suggested and pursued by others, secured as a temporary place of residence for sleeping, the country home of our friend, Mr. J. N. Ford, some two or three miles from the city, whence I could come in during the day to visit the members of the congregation, and go out again at evening. We kept up this course until we were driven, by force of circumstances, from one place of refuge to another in the neighborhood by yellow-fever patients being brought to the very house we occupied. I visited the few cases in my congregation who remained and who were taken with the fever, buried two, and assisted in depositing the corpse of one in her burial case. I preached in the Lauderdale street church twice

after the outbreak of the fever, but on the first of these occasions there were not more than thirty, and on the second only thirteen; and so we closed up the church. It was unoccupied, as all the other churches were, during the prevalence of this fearful epidemic. The aspect of the city was truly deplorable and depressing; deserted of the once busy and active inhabitants, its streets once resounding with the hum of business and the rattling and roaring tramp of horses and cars and drays, now silent and still as in the solitude of death. Main street, the great avenue of active life, and the chief mart of city commerce, one might traverse without encountering a familiar face, and such was the awful stillness that the foot-fall of a child might have been heard, as it smote the pavement. Finding no place near to the city for visiting and returning at night, I decided on going out to Germantown on a train that made a daily trip in and out, but just as we had used this mode of accomplishing the object in view, this train ceased to visit Memphis, and that train which bore us to Germantown proved to be the last in that direction for many weary days and weeks. After spending some days with Rev. R. R. Evans and his excellent wife, at Germantown, as I found that I was denied access to Memphis, I decided to leave on an extended visitation of the churches and church courts, in behalf of the cause of Education. Mrs. Waddel and I left on the east-bound train for Georgia, and I visited nine of the churches of that State and Alabama, and attended the meetings of the Presbytery of Cherokee and the Synod of Georgia, at Atlanta. After the subsidence of the fever, and the resumption of railway travel in the direction of our home, we returned to Memphis and settled down once more to regular work, about the middle of November, after an absence of nearly two months. We found the aspect of the city beginning to be brighter, but still there hung over it a lingering gloom naturally consequent upon so terrible a

scourge which had fallen upon the people. There were many families which were mourning for those of their number who had fallen victims to the plague, and few utterly exempt.

The Lauderdale street church had suffered greatly by the epidemic in the number of deaths of its members, and when the church was opened again for worship on the 17th of November, it was solemn and sad indeed. We witnessed the comparatively thin congregation and counted fourteen of the membership whose seats would no more be filled on earth. The church, though greatly weakened by death and some removals, began shortly to recover its lost ground. I continued to supply the pulpit, and to discharge my duties as Secretary of Education during the remainder of the ecclesiastical year, having in the meantime removed my membership from the Presbytery of Chickasaw to that of Memphis, at a meeting held after the end of the fever, when the Presbytery had been, for the first time, permitted to gather together for regular business transactions.

CHAPTER LI.

Resume of Matters.—Correspondence with Dr. Palmer in 1878-'79.—Conflict of Feeling.—Attendance on Meetings of Directory.—Re-organization of Stewart College and Election of the Faculty.

I RECALL just here some facts that occurred during the last years of my connection with the University of Mississippi. I had been appointed as director of the newly outlined, though not yet organized, university, which was under the control of the six Synods of Alabama, Arkansas, Memphis, Mississippi, Nashville, and Texas. I had attended two of the meetings of this Board of Directors, and two very important acts had been passed: First, in locating the institution, and second, in the choice of a Chancellor. The location was decided to be at Clarksville, Tenn., and Rev. Dr. Palmer was made Chancellor by a unanimous vote of the Directory at their meeting in Memphis, in May, 1874. The Presbytery of New Orleans declining to consent to a dissolution of the pastoral relation between Dr. Palmer and the First Presbyterian church of New Orleans, the Board proceeded to institute a provisional government for the institution at Clarksville, by appointing Rev. Dr. Shearer, who was at that time President of Stuart College (the nucleus of the proposed university), agent for the endowment, and electing Rev. Dr. Flinn, of New Orleans, Provisional President. This arrangement continued for some years, and some progress was made in raising funds under the earnest efforts of Dr. Shearer, which would no doubt have been more successful but for the temporary failure of his health. I attended a meeting of the Board in

May, 1875, and another meeting at a later period. But very little progress was made until 1879. In 1878–'79, during some months, a correspondence began between Dr. Palmer and myself upon a projected scheme of his origination, proposing to prevail upon me to become Chancellor of the new University at Clarksville. I found myself very decidedly opposed to even entertaining the proposition with any degree of allowance at all. My reasons for this disinclination (to call it by no stronger name), it is not my purpose to state at all, as they are of such a nature as would draw into public notice matters of a character so personal as to involve relations too sacred to be disturbed. I will mention one principle upon which I have always endeavored to act; it is this: I have never been willing to accept office at all of any kind, when assured that there were *influential* individuals among the voters opposed to me. Furthermore, while insisting upon unanimity of supporters in my discharge of any official duty, should existing opposition proceed from parties of influence, my inclination always has been to abandon the situation, to avoid any dissatisfaction or hostility. This state of feeling may proceed, I doubt not, in part at least, from sensitiveness or pride, or some similar trait of my inner constitution, but I mention it candidly, simply to show the mode of action I chose to pursue from one single standpoint. Suffice it to say that I was never, in all my past history, the subject of such a conflict of feeling as to the decision of any question of duty, as I found myself in regard to this proposition of the chancellorship of the institution at Clarksville. In March, 1879, a meeting was called to take place at Clarksville of a Committee on Organization, previously appointed by the Board of Directors. This committee consisted of Rev. Dr. Palmer, Dr. Shearer, and myself. The result of the deliberations of this committee was the maturing of a plan embracing every particular necessary to the actual working of the proposed

university. This plan was to be reported to the Board of Directors at their annual meeting on the last days of May and the first of June. At the appointed day the Board met, all being present except Rev. Mr. McNair, one of the Directors from Arkansas, making in all eleven members. The following is a full list of the Board as then constituted:

Synod of Alabama.—Rev. C. A. Stillman, D. D., and Thos. A. Hamilton, Esq.

Synod of Arkansas.—Rev. E. McNair, D. D., and Rev. Thos. R. Welch, D. D.

Synod of Memphis.—G. W. Macrae, Esq., and Rev. Jno. N. Waddel, D. D.

Synod of Mississippi.—Rev. B. M. Palmer, D. D., and Rev. Joseph Bardwell, D. D.

Synod of Nashville.—D. N. Kennedy, Esq., and Rev. J. B. Shearer, D. D.

Synod of Texas.—Rev. D. McGregor and Rev. W. K. Marshall, D. D.

Great interest was manifested by the Board in the business of this meeting, as there was to be an entire re-organization, not only of the system of instruction of the institution, but an election of a Faculty also was to be effected on this occasion.

Previous to the present meeting of the Directory, the condition and character of the institution was simply that of the ordinary close college, which was in existence in most parts of the South. This is, perhaps, an appropriate place to furnish a brief historical sketch of the college which formed the nucleus of the Southwestern Presbyterian University. "About the year 1850, the Masonic Fraternity of Tennessee founded in Clarksville the Masonic University of Tennessee, which school was conducted under the Presidency of W. F. Hopkins, T. M. Newell, W. A. Forbes, and Wm. M. Stewart successively until 1855. At this time certain parties in Clarksville, in the name of the Synod of Nash-

ville, purchased the buildings, grounds, etc., and the school was thenceforth known under the name and title of

STEWART COLLEGE,

which name was given in honor of President Wm. M. Stewart, who had been, and continued to be, a most liberal patron and friend of the institution. The Faculty was reorganized under the Presidency of Wm. M. Stewart, and the school was conducted by a Board of Trustees appointed by the Synod of Nashville. He served as President until 1858, when Rev. R. B. McMullen, D. D., was elected to succeed him. Professor Stewart in the meantime continuing his labors as Professor of Natural Sciences. The college was rapidly increasing in funds, appliances, and patronage, when the war came on and the school was of necessity closed

During the war the libraries, cabinets and apparatus were lost, and the buildings were entirely dismantled in the fortunes of war. In 1868 and '70, the buildings were repaired and re-furnished, at a cost of about eight thousand dollars. After some delay, the Faculty was re-organized, with Rev. J. B. Shearer, D. D., as President, assisted by a competent corps of professors. The school grew in favor and popularity more rapidly even than its best friends had expected. Negotiations, looking to concentration of effort over a larger field, were prosecuted diligently, until, in 1875, a new corporation succeeded to the property and funds of Stewart College, under the name and title of the

SOUTHWESTERN PRESBYTERIAN UNIVERSITY.

In Chapter XLIX. of this memoir, some reference to the great subject of enlarging the scheme of church education is made, and the facts of the location of the University and the adoption of Stewart College and its appurtenances as the nucleus of operations for the University, are recorded.

We may also, with propriety, make a concise statement at this point of the course pursued by the College from 1874 to 1879, as that will show both the basis of its operations and the details of its internal work until the College was merged into the University under the new corporation of the Board of Directors, consisting of twelve members, appointed by six Synods.

The Board of Trustees of Stewart College, before the reorganization, who were appointed by the Synod of Nashville, consisted of twenty-eight members, the President of the College being *ex-officio* President of the Board. The Faculty consisted of a President, who instructed in Metaphysics, Logic, and Rhetoric; a Professor of Mathematics, a Professor of Latin, a Professor of Greek, a Professor of Modern Languages, and one of Natural Sciences. The number of students in the year

1870–'71, reached	101	1874–'75, reached	151
1871–'72, "	124	1875–'76, "	131
1872–'73, "	115	1876–'77, "	105
1873–'74, "	125	1877–'78, "	97

In 1878–'79 it seems that no catalogue was published, but it is the impression that the number was not far from seventy. The diminution in the patronage I have never heard explained satisfactorily. But it is always the case that institutions of learning are subjected to variations in the number in attendance from time to time, and there is generally experienced subsequently some difficulty in recovering from such diminished numbers. This was the existing status of Stewart College, then, when the Board of Directors met at Clarksville on May 30, 1879, continuing in session for several days, and arranging all the preliminary work for the opening of the career of the new institution, under the name of the Southwestern Presbyterian University. It will be sufficient to say that, on this occasion, the curriculum

was abolished. There was no longer to be recognized the Freshman, Sophomore, Junior and Senior Classes. Instead of that, "they re-organized the school on the plan of co-ordinate schools and elective courses. There were at first established nine co-ordinate schools, covering the ground usually embraced in the departments of Literature, Art, and Science, and they were: I. The School of Ancient Languages; II. School of Mathematics; III. School of Natural Sciences; IV. School of Philosophy; V. School of Modern Languages; VI. School of English Literature and Rhetoric; VII. School of Biblical Instruction; VIII. School of Commercial Science; IX. School of History. In some of these schools there were three classes, called Junior, Middle, and Senior; in others there were only two, Junior and Senior; and in certain departments under these general schools only one class was formed, just in accordance with the time required to complete the study of that department.

It was, from the origin of the university system, contemplated that professional schools should be added to the organization at the earliest possible period. But the Board did not establish any professional school at their meeting in 1879. Their action in this regard was postponed for several years, and will be recorded at the appropriate time.

Having completed the work of organizing the institution in this way, provision was also made for an elementary department of instruction in Latin, Greek, Higher Arithmetic, Algebra, and Geometry, this department to be under the same discipline and control as that of the other schools of the University.

The second important item of business before the Directory on this occasion was the election of a Faculty. It was at a late hour in the afternoon of Saturday, May 31, 1879, that the Board proceeded to this subject. On the nomination of Dr. J. B. Shearer (who had been the President of Stewart College from 1870), my name was placed before

them, and I was unanimously elected Chancellor of the Southwestern Presbyterian University. I accepted the office in a brief reply to a verbal communication of a committee appointed to inform me of my election. Yet I was by no means in an exultant or cheerful frame of mind, but as I find in my diary recorded, "I was troubled with conflicting feelings."

On Monday, June 2d, the Board finished the election of a Faculty, which resulted as follows:

REV. C. R. HEMPHILL, A. M., *Professor in the School of Ancient Languages.*

JAMES DINWIDDIE, A. M., *Professor in the School of Mathematics.*

JOHN W. CALDWELL, A. M., M. D., *Stewart Professor in the School of Natural Sciences.*

S. J. COFFMANN, *Professor in the School of Modern Languages.*

REV. J. B. SHEARER, D. D., *Professor in the School of English Literature and Rhetoric.*

There was an assignment of the duties of the two remaining Professorships of Biblical Instruction and of Commercial Science to the members of the Faculty, as might seem best. The former chair was filled by Dr. Shearer, and the duties of the latter devolved upon Professor Dinwiddie in case a class should be formed.

On Tuesday evening, at 7 P. M., a previously appointed memorial service was conducted in honor of the late Wm. M. Stewart, deceased, the benefactor and former President of the college. The exercises were interesting, and consisted of—

1st. An appropriate essay, by Professor J. W. Caldwell, M. D.

2d. "Eulogy on the Life and Labors of Professor Stewart," by Professor J. B. Shearer, D. D.

3. A splendid dedicatory discourse of the building, called "Stewart Cabinet Hall," delivered by Rev. B. M. Palmer, D. D., LL. D., in his own inimitable style.

On Wednesday, June 4th, the exercises of the last Commencement of Stewart College were held, when seven students were graduated, and at the close it was announced by Dr. Shearer, who presided, that the exercises of the next session (the first of the new organization), would open for the reception of students on Monday, September 1st, 1879.

CHAPTER LII.

Attendance on the Assembly, May 15, 1879.—Return to Memphis and Preparations to Remove.—Resignation of the Secretaryship and Election of Successor.—Farewell Sermon.—Arrival at Clarksville, and Address to the Six Synods.

THE narrative of my life, as already alluded to and as appears in its progress thus far, is broken up to some extent necessarily by the fact that I have been endeavoring to live a sort of *double* life and to work out *two* diverse careers simultaneously. So it has been a matter of necessity, at times, to dwell entirely upon the incidental events of one of these departments, and to leave those of the other sphere of effort in temporary reserve to bide its time for record. The two forms of work thus have been separated in this way in their course, *apparently*, and only apparently. For it is a fact that, during the times of which my story treats, I have been combining the work of two men, and carrying on both at specific and appointed periods, so that the attention necessary to the discharge of duties belonging to the one should not encroach upon that which should be devoted to the other, and that neither should interfere with, but both, in the end, should prove to be mutually auxiliary.

The events recorded in the preceding chapter embrace the period that elapsed from the latter part of December, 1878, to the 4th of June, 1879. It must not be supposed that during these months I had been thinking and acting solely in connection with the absorbing interests of the institution whose history I have dwelt upon so closely. It is true I had signified my willingness to accept the office of

Chancellor of Southwestern Presbyterian University, but I had not ceased to act as Secretary of Education. On the contrary, I had never been more devoted in my services in that capacity. I had kept up a constant correspondence with the various churches and students, and had prepared the usual annual reports to be presented to the General Assembly. I also attended the meeting of the Assembly held in Louisville, Ky., on May 15th; read my report and gave information to the standing committee, addressed the Assembly on the subject of Education, and heard expressions, from individuals and through the committee, approving of the year's work, and the usual amount of dissatisfaction with the plan of a separate executive committee for this purpose; and had the satisfaction of being able to report to the Assembly the payment of all the pledges to candidates for the current ecclesiastical year, and the reduction of the heavy debt which had been incurred by the preceding committee, from $3,500 to $318, and I had the gratification, further, to be enabled to state that ample provision had been made to meet that small balance.

This was the last meeting of the Assembly which I ever attended in an official capacity, and my reason for declining at that time to surrender the trust which I had held for five years was simply because I had not then fully made up my mind as to my future course. I returned to Memphis after the adjournment of the General Assembly, and spent the time, from the 26th of May till the 16th of June, at home, with the exception of the interval already accounted for in the preceding chapter, when I made my visit to Clarksville, and one to Lexington, Ky., to deliver an address before Sayre Institute. Having accepted the chancellorship at Clarksville, I called a meeting of the Executive Committee of Education for Monday, 16th of June, at which time I presented my resignation of the office of secretary in the words following, viz.:

"*To the Executive Committee of Education, in session, Memphis, Tenn.:*

"JUNE 16, 1879.

"Brethren: I herewith tender to you my resignation of the office of Secretary of Education, which I have held, under successive appointments of the General Assembly, for the past five years. Feeling justified in this course by circumstances which seemed to me clearly to indicate its entire propriety, and which it is not expedient to mention, it only remains that I ask your acceptance of my resignation, and that I assure you of my abiding interest in the cause of beneficiary education.

"The books, correspondence, and archives of the committee, so far as they have come into my possession, shall be turned over at any time to the party properly authorized by the committee to take them in charge. The fullest information in regard to the condition of the cause under your care, so far as its interests have come under the knowledge and control of the secretary, together with any desired instruction as to the method of the office work, will be furnished, with sincere pleasure, by the committee's fellow-servant in Christ Jesus, JOHN N. WADDEL."

N. B.—My term of office expired on the 31st of May, as on that day I accepted another office. The declinature of the office would have been made to the Assembly itself but for the fact that the way was not clear to the mind of the secretary that it was right for him to do so at that time.

The committee met on the 16th, and accepted my resignation, and action was taken to appoint a committee to prepare a paper expressive of the views of the Executive Committee in relation to the resignation, and adjourned to meet again on the 23rd of June, and on that day Rev. E. M. Richardson was elected Secretary of Education. On the

24th the newly-appointed secretary came to my house, and I transferred all the papers from my keeping to his; and thus ended my term of service as Secretary of Education.

My occupation in this line of service to the church having been brought to a close in Memphis, there remained nothing for me to do but to make preparation for removal from that city to my new field of labor; and to that I directed all my attention for the ensuing week. I delivered a farewell discourse to the Lauderdale-street church on Sabbath, June 29th, on 2 Corinthians, xiii. 11, and parted with the people with every manifestation of affection and regret on their part. The feeling which pervaded my soul in turning my back upon Memphis, after a residence of five years, was of a nature made up of combined sadness and relief. I forbear entering into any delineation of my state of mind on the subject, except to say that I was thankful to be assured that I had a warm place in the affection and confidence of many of the best people of the place, and was disposed to consign to silent forgetfulness anything that had marred my peace during my abode and term of service there. We took our departure on Tuesday, July 1st, and, with the payment of a visit to friends on the way for a day and two nights as our only delay, we reached Clarksville at six o'clock P. M. on the 3rd, in peace and safety, "by the good hand of our God upon us."

I recur to the *state of my mind* on this new enterprise, not to give any history of the reasons for its existence, but to bring into view a single fact connected with my experience. It is this: That often, in the contemplation of prospective changes which seemed determined upon in my future, I have felt gloomy, and reluctant to meet them, and anticipated no enjoyment in their realization; but when the time came to meet the demands and requirements of the situation, the way was found clear and smooth, and my fears were removed, and were succeeded by as much true comfort

and success as are allotted to any of God's servants in "this present evil world," with its prevalent imperfectness. It proved so preëminently in the case of my removal to Clarksville and my service there. I may add that it seems to me now, in the retrospect, that I went there under divine guidance, and was enabled to rejoice in the work performed.

On my arrival, as it was during the vacation, and very few of the attachés of the University were present, I was oppressed with a sense of comparative loneliness. There were very few of the usual arrangements for the accommodation of a Faculty provided by the authorities of the University. The members of the Faculty were not furnished with residences; every Professor was obliged to rent or furnish his own house. The case of the Chancellor was no exception to this rule. Some of the Faculty owned the houses and lots they occupied, and others of them rented places which were within convenient distance of the campus. I, with no one to provide for except my wife, secured a small cottage on the premises of Professor Dinwiddie, and boarded with him for the first term of my service. The outlook was not bright for the new enterprise by any means. There had been a diminution of the number of students in attendance for some few sessions past, and there had been no grounds of hope presented that there would be any considerable accessions made very soon. There were many cheering expressions circulated in the public journals of the State by the friends of the institution, and arguments abundant, setting forth the importance of patronizing the new University as a great agency for promoting the interests of sound education. In furtherance of the objects contemplated by the institution, it was thought advisable that I should, in the capacity of Chancellor, issue some address to the public on this occasion. Accordingly, I prepared and furnished for publication in the newspapers the following as an announcement of the Southwestern Presbyterian University:

SALUTATORY.

The undersigned ventures to indulge the hope that he is committing no offence against good taste, or that modesty that becomes his humble pretensions, in presenting his respectful salutations to the constituency of the University on assuming the high and responsible office of Chancellor, to which he was recently elected by the unsolicited and unanimous suffrage of the Board of Directors. In view of the many complimentary comments of the press on this action of the directory, as well as the expressions of personal congratulation received from numerous friends, he can certainly do no less than present his most sincere and profound acknowledgments. Furthermore, he cheerfully pledges, in advance, the devotion of whatever powers and endowments he may possess, and the utilization of his long and varied experience as an educator, to this new and difficult enterprise, with a firm determination to discharge his whole duty to the full extent of his ability, in humble reliance upon the gracious assistance of the great Head of the church to whose glory the institution has been solemnly dedicated. To the 337 ministers and the 3,800 church members under the care of the six Synods which control the University, viz.: Alabama, Arkansas, Memphis, Mississippi, Nashville, and Texas, the directors and the Faculty naturally look for the encouragement arising from the zealous exertion of their moral influence in recommending the institution to the favor of their circles of association for patronage to fill our class-rooms with a large accession of students, and for such material aid as can be extended to increase the permanent endowment fund of the University, whereby its blessings may be perpetuated to successive generations.

II. ADVANTAGES OF LOCATION.

The remoteness of the city of Clarksville from the extremes of our territory has been pressed as an objection to

the location. This is met by the fact that it is accessible by railway from all points, and other facilities of approach are in contemplation at an early day. The healthfulness of Clarksville will challenge comparison with that of any place in all the land. While it is not "the joy of the whole earth," it is certainly "beautiful for situation," reposing upon the hills of Montgomery, embowered among grand old forest trees, and having its base washed by the clear-flowing waters of the Cumberland. It is compactly built, adorned with costly and attractive residences and public buildings, surrounded by large and commodious lots, beautified by green grassy lawns and a rich profusion of shrubbery and flowers. These material surroundings are part, and they are a legitimate part, of the evidences of the high state of culture and refinement of the citizens of the place. Wherever persons who have from time to time sojourned in Clarksville, for a longer or shorter period, have been met, their voluntary testimony has been given to the superiority of the population, their high moral tone, their genial hospitality, their social tendencies, and their consistent religious character. The membership of the various churches is generally large and influential, the houses of worship imposing and commodious, and the pulpits of the city are filled with able, devoted, and successful pastors. The population is estimated at about six thousand, and is increasing. The city is rapidly improving; the burnt district is nearly again occupied by massive structures of a better class and more imposing architecture than those which were destroyed a year or two since. Such is the proper description of the place, physically and morally, to which our friends are invited to send their sons for education.

III. PROSPECTS OF THE UNIVERSITY.

Of course, this is very much a matter of conjecture. All anticipations connected with the subject, to be reliable, must

suppose certain facts as a basis of calculation. Our friends, as they are scattered over all this broad land which stretches from the northern limit of Tennessee to the Gulf, on the south, and from the eastern line of Alabama to the Rio Grande, on the west, must put forth their strenuous efforts in securing students who shall resort to us for instruction and training. Without this prime fundamental consideration of personal effort, and the exertion of personal influence in making known and recommending the institution, we shall struggle hopelessly on, as so many of our schools of so-called higher learning have done. But if our friends will but work energetically, our halls will be very soon crowded with students. The citizens of Clarksville must rally around the University. This, we feel persuaded, they will do. They have done so in times past. They are prepared, with their moral weight and otherwise, to sustain all the efforts of the directory and the Faculty to build up the institution. There is nothing more potent as a factor in securing success to such an enterprise than the favor and kind feelings of the immediately surrounding community. Without it, failure is almost inevitable; with it, everything is encouraging in the future. Now, let this morally weighty, influential community of Clarksville stand by and support the authorities in every good word and work, co-operating with them in every way for the success and good order of the institution, and this will strengthen the hearts of the Faculty and friends, and parents will be re-assured of the safety and moral protection of their sons who may be entrusted to our care. And for the members of the Faculty, who are the immediate guardians of the interests of the University, the honored colleagues of the undersigned, I am persuaded that, with their eminent and tried qualifications as instructors, their experience of many years in the management of schools of learning, and their well-known success amid many opposing circumstances, the best founded hopes may be indulged that

the institution, with God's blessing to accompany their work, may prove a grand success. None of them, it may be asserted, will feel disposed to shrink from the share allotted to them as individuals, and to the body as a unit. The labor imposed upon each is very heavy, but they will be found equal to duty. With fidelity and devotion to work, industry and vigilance, with harmony in co-operation, such as will be reasonably anticipated, it would seem that God's smile of favor would be all that would be required to command success, and Clarksville would be developed into a grand educational centre for all our six Synods, and the blessed influence of Christian culture would extend to all the region round about and beyond.

"Our endowment is respectable, but we hope to increase it. We have a supply of class-room apparatus, mechanical, chemical, astronomical, and electrical, and to these additions will be made. The scientific library is unusually fine, the donation of the late Wm. M. Stewart, and our facilities will be found ample in all respects for imparting a first-class education.

"Send us, therefore, students, and let our work be illustrated in the preparation and sending forth of highly-cultivated Christian citizens in all departments of human effort and usefulness. The University is not designed to be ephemeral, but to be perpetuated, and if its friends respond to its demands and reasonable claims, there seems no reason why it may not become a fountain of usefulness, a nursery of piety, and a source of infinite blessedness for generations yet unborn. John N. Waddel, *Chancellor.*"

The above was published extensively in the newspapers throughout all the adjacent States; and we were very busily engaged during the vacation in writing and answering letters in reference to the approaching session, and in preparing for the reception of students until the 1st of September, on which day the exercises of the University were regularly opened, with something like forty students in attendance.

CHAPTER LIII.

The Epidemic Again.—Number of Students.—The Public School.—The Free Feature of the University.—Character of the Faculty.—The Student-Body Before and After the New Organization.—Discipline and Christian Influence.

WE had scarcely found ourselves fairly settled in our new quarters when the exciting intelligence was flashed along the wires that the city of Memphis was again visited by the yellow-fever, and the trains were crowded with refugees who were fleeing from the epidemic. This interrupted the travel to some extent, and no doubt created some apprehension of danger on the part of many who had thought of sending students to Clarksville. For although the distance between the two places was two hundred miles, yet the communication between them was direct and open. The people of Clarksville were much exercised upon the subject, and held a meeting to consider the question of quarantining against Memphis; and although there was a portion of the citizens in favor of throwing open the town to the refugees, there was a majority who decided against that course, and so the town was placed under strict quarantine regulations. It was in this position that we found ourselves about the middle of July; and although many people from Memphis did make their temporary sojourn in Clarksville, and two military companies of the city of Memphis encamped there during the summer, yet not a case occurred of fever in the city of Clarksville. The panic subsided after a few weeks, and the ravages of the plague were not comparable to those of the summer of 1878, and we settled down with earnestness to our academic labors, and suffered no interruption from the visitation of yellow-fever.

Our catalogue of the first session records the number of students in attendance on all the courses. We were patronized to some extent by all the constituent Synods, and, in addition, by Georgia and Kentucky. They were apportioned as regards the various courses in the languages and sciences to a more enlarged extent than ordinarily is found in new institutions, which was truly a gratifying circumstance in our prospective sphere of labor. There were, even in the School of Philosophy, of which I was placed in charge as my department of instruction, no less than thirty-five. We found our classes also including in their number, in various stages of advancement, ten candidates for the ministry. Yet such was the limited range and defective quality of preparatory schools throughout the entire region of country from which our patronage was drawn, that the Professors in Latin, Greek and Mathematics were obliged to do double duty in training unprepared students in the elements of those schools. This was, however, an advantage of great importance and value to the students themselves, as they were in this way much more thoroughly fitted for the more advanced departments of the University schools, and more intimately familiar with the methods of the professors by daily association with them for at least one additional academic year. The city of Clarksville had in operation then, and also previous to our organization, the public school system, which was well sustained and largely patronized. It was not like many of the schools of the system in other places, which are in active operation for only a limited portion of the year, but its sessions were held through the usual term of the scholastic year. The town originally made a very generous contribution to the Directory as an inducement to locate the University at Clarksville, on this, among other conditions, that the public school should be entitled to ten free scholarships, to be awarded to those students of the public school who should be adjudged entitled

to a scholarship upon examination. This was often conferred upon young men who properly appreciated their opportunity and improved their advantages, but, as is sometimes the case, others thus favored failed to meet the responsibility accompanying the benefaction. Yet there were also among our free students of this class those who reflected credit upon the University in their after course in life.

The free feature of the institution was based upon two other principles in its original establishment, and these became, in process of time, very largely adopted and practiced in the reception of students. One of them was part and parcel of the very nature of our system as a church college, viz.: that all candidates for the ministry of the Presbyterian Church should be trained free of all tuition fees. The other was that all sons of Presbyterian ministers should be admitted free of tuition fees. This last provision is not without reason, as, while it may be accompanied by a diminution of the salaries of the officers of the Faculty, it relieved the authorities of any burden of debt to them, which is often found to be incurred by colleges where fixed salaries are pledged upon the basis of tuition receipts. In the case of the Southwestern Presbyterian University, the number of professorships unendowed were supported by distributing the actual proceeds of the entire tuition fees among the Professors, and this, of course, was subject to fluctuation; but at the same time, out of the general endowment fund, an income was sufficient and secure to pay to each an invariable bonus, which they might confidently rely upon, and would ordinarily enable the Professors to sustain themselves.

The University of Mississippi charges no candidate for the ministry of any church, nor any young man who is desirous to obtain an education, and unable to pay tuition. But it is abundantly able to afford this generosity by its ample endowment lodged in the State treasury; but church colleges and universities are not in circumstances of financial

ability such as those of Mississippi University, and while the latter should have the credit of her generosity, it must be kept in mind that she can well afford it.

On this subject it has always been to me a surprising, and yet a most gratifying fact, that the Southwestern Presbyterian University has been so highly favored as to retain in service for so long a period Professors of such acknowledged ability as those occupying the several chairs of instruction in the Faculty. It is not, by any means, an extravagant estimate of the merit justly accorded to these gentlemen, that they would have been found, respectively, fully equal to any similar position in any of the institutions of the higher learning in the country. I have no doubt that it is due, in part, to the fact that the community in which the University is located is justly reputed as remarkable for its genial courtesy and social feeling, and for its refined and generous bearing toward the University. That this was not the case in its original opening is known to those familiar with the history of the institution. It is not possible to state, probably with absolute certainty, the causes which might have combined to produce a result which, at the first, seemed to argue coldness of interest toward the University on the part of the citizens. And even were it possible, it will not be proper to enter it on record, as it most assuredly no longer exists. The citizens, as is well known, began to take great pride in the institution, and to regard it as an acquisition to the city, every way calculated to attract attention from abroad and add to the population of Clarksville.

Those of the authorities in more immediate charge of the institution were resolved, from the beginning, to devote their best energies to the elevation of its character and the grade of its standard. That they were successful to a most gratifying extent, in the course of time, is a matter of history that is well known to all who had the opportunity to watch the progress of events in the gradual development of the system newly established.

The College, for some years previous to 1879, had lost the confidence of the region from which its support was mainly drawn, as to the character of the student-body. When the University was opened, there was found a mixture, consisting of a goodly proportion of young men of the highest character for morals and intelligence, with young boys who had no proper appreciation of their surroundings, and who were not disposed to be studious or law-abiding. The former consisted of candidates for the ministry and others of sufficient maturity of age and purpose to induce them to make the wisest use of their time and opportunities. The latter were just of the class always found in schools, and even in colleges, who seek their own enjoyment in any pursuit rather than in books and study. The misfortune was that these last were proportionally numerous, and this gave them confidence in their chosen methods. From them proceeded all those petty annoyances in which idle students delight to engage for the purposes of disorder and trouble. "College tricks" of mischief became very common, and the equanimity of the Faculty was often distured at night by shouting noises on the streets. It was nearly always expected that some exhibition of low practical mischief would be presented on the assembling of the Faculty and students at morning prayer in the chapel. This course of things, for the first session, was very discouraging, I must confess, to myself, and almost induced a conviction that I had committed a great error of judgment in undertaking to build up an institution of such material. But I will cease to dwell upon these matters further than to add that, by persistent enforcement of discipline, sometimes of the rigid kind, and at other times of a milder character, but always impartial, and adapted to each case individually, we were gratified to observe a steady and sure, though gradual, improvement and elevation of the character of the student-body, year after year, until after three years of the University had elapsed, such low and vul-

gar habits had disappeared from among the students. While, therefore, we cannot record such a state of conduct existing as approached perfection, yet every observer might have marked the reformation of manners and bearing in their public association with the community from time to time. The annual report of the chancellor to the directory gave the gratifying statement that the year had closed without a case of discipline. Religious instruction entered into the course to a very large extent. The School of the Bible was not among the *electives* at all; it was required of every student, and for the attainment of any of the degrees in the course, it formed an essential prerequisite. To this was added that Sabbath instruction was imparted to every student, and, for this purpose, he was required to attend the Sabbath-school of some evangelical church in the city, at the discretion and choice of the parent or guardian. At an early period in the history of the University a Young Men's Christian Association was formed among the students, consisting of active and associate members, and this proved a signal advantage, contributing to the elevation of the institution and the cultivation of the Christian character of the students.

Our morning worship consisted of music, led by professors who were scientific musicians, who performed on a cabinet organ, and there was among the students a regular choir of singers. The Bible was read and prayer offered. We called no roll, but the students were distributed into classes of ten, and each class assigned to a separate seat in the chapel, with its own monitor, furnished with a card, on which were written the names of his class of ten, and his sole duty was to note absentees, and hand his card on Saturday morning to the presiding officer, and receive a new card for the ensuing week. Hymn-books also were distributed among the students, and it was really enjoyable to be present at prayers on account of the music, in which the large body of them engaged, with perfect decorum.

By this sort of control, continued for some time, and by the personal intercourse which was established between the professors and the students, partaking, as far as was possible, of the family nature, that disposition which seems to have prevailed among the institutions of the times long passed, and which seemed at first also to be very generally characteristic of the students of our first sessions, viz., to look upon the Faculty as antagonistic to the student body in their feelings, to our great gratification, gradually disappeared, and the relations which ultimately obtained between us became most pleasant and confidential.

CHAPTER LIV.

Proceedings and Action of the Board.—Resignation of Professor Dinwiddie.—Election of Professor Massie.—Resignation of Professor Hemphill.—Election of Professor Nicolassen.—Establishment of a Chair and Its Endowment.—Election of Dr. Welch.—Refusal of Presbytery to Dissolve Pastoral Relation.—Dr. Price Elected and Accepting.

THE University continued the even tenor of its way, without any change of a material kind, until Commencement on the first Wednesday, the 2d of June, 1880. The usual preliminary exercises connected with the occasion were all successfully passed through. The directory met on May 28th, and closed their session on Wednesday, June 2d, eight being present. No new or important items occupied the Board, but the chancellor delivered his inaugural address, and he was regularly installed in the office in which he had been acting for a year past, the keys, emblematic of authority, being delivered to him by Rev. Dr. Palmer, accompanied by a brief and cordial address. We closed with a Faculty as full in number as our means of payment would admit at the time, and we had been remarkably successful in collecting the entire income due from students for University charges, amounting to nearly $3,000, to which was added the semi-annual dividend arising from the endowment fund, which was $3,000. We felt, therefore, that we had thus far realized our anticipations of success, and we "thanked God, and took courage."

The Professorship of Mathematics was vacated after Commencement by the resignation of Professor Dinwiddie, and we were called upon unexpectedly to fill this chair,

which could be done *only provisionally* by the Executive Committee, as the Board of Directors had adjourned and could not be assembled at Clarksville conveniently.

We met for this purpose accordingly, and proceeded to read testimonials and discuss the claims of candidates who had been nominated. Out of the following list of names, viz.: D. B. Johnson, of Knoxville; G. B. Halstead, of Princeton; C. C. Norwood, of Georgia, and E. B. Massie, of Charlottesville, Va., we, by a unanimous vote, elected the last named gentleman, Mr. E. B. Massie, Professor of Mathematics.

We, of course, could not object to either of his competitors, as they were all alike entire strangers to us, but the results which have followed the choice of Professor Massie in the history of his connection with the University, and the universal testimony of Faculty, directors, and all the successive bodies of students that have enjoyed the benefit of his instruction, and the influence of his personal and social intercourse with them, would, if ascertained, be that we were certainly wisely guided in our selection, and that we secured "the right man in the right place." The Board ratified this action of the Executive Committee at their next meeting. Two facts may be recorded as occurring during this session which (although in *one* of them I was personally concerned) exerted some influence upon the interest of the University. On the 11th of February of this year I became conscious for the first time of my having symptoms of a disease that has never been entirely remedied or eradicated from my system, although every possible and almost every conceivable effort of an earthly nature has been resorted to by physicians to the present time after the lapse of eight years. I was for five of those years a great sufferer, and yet continued to serve as best I could as Chancellor of the University. The result, however, need not be anticipated, as it will have its record at the proper time in the progress of this narrative.

Another matter claims notice just now bearing directly upon the fortunes of the institution, which was the election of Professor C. R. Hemphill, of our Faculty, to the position of "Associate Professor of Biblical Literature, with the salary of full Professor" (and a year later, on the death of Dr. Howe, he succeeded to the full chair of "Biblical Literature," covering the "Exegesis of the Old and New Testaments, as well as instruction in the Hebrew Language and New Testament Greek") in the Columbia Theological Seminary, his acceptance of the appointment, and his resignation of the Professorship of Ancient Languages in our University. He had filled this chair for three years with signal ability and universal acceptance, and his departure was felt to be a great loss to the University and the community, and especially regretted by the social Faculty circle, which was much devoted to him and his charming family.

The attention of the Board was called at once to the filling of two important chairs; one vacated by the resignation of Professor Hemphill. The occasion for the filling of the other needs a brief explanation.

The professorship of History, English Literature and Elocution had been filled at the re-organization of the University in 1879 by the appointment of Rev. Dr. Shearer, and he had been conducting the instruction in that school, and at the same time he had been charged with teaching the Bible. The work required by these two departments was manifestly too onerous for one incumbent, and it had been the purpose of the Board to appoint an additional professor as soon as the requisite endowment could be secured. Just about this time, Mr. J. J. McComb, near the city of New York, made the generous donation of $30,000 as the basis of a professorship (through Rev. Dr. Palmer) to the University. This being presented at this meeting, the Board proceeded at once to make use of it for the support of the additional chair; and as Dr. Shearer preferred the

chair of Biblical Instruction, it was resolved that he should now be made professor in that school, and that it should be placed in the same grade with those already established. In the meantime they proceeded to fill the chair of History, etc., and rested its support upon the McComb fund just presented. The Board at once then, by a unanimous vote, elected to this position Rev. Thos. R. Welch, D. D., one of the Directors from Arkansas. Dr. W. being present, signified his willingness to accept the appointment subject to the action of the session of the Presbyterian church in Little Rock, of which he was pastor. There were several candidates for the chair of Ancient Languages, and among them gentlemen of eminent qualifications according to highly complimentary and satisfactory testimonials. The election resulted in the choice of G. F. Nicolassen, Ph. D., of Johns Hopkins University. So that our Faculty was now increased in number and efficiency by filling the McComb Professorship. On June 7th the Board met and brought their business to a close by electing Rev. Dr. Welch vice-chancellor. We closed the exercises of the academic year, and dismissed the students for the long summer vacation of three months, to open again on September 1st.

The Board made provision previous to adjournment for meeting any emergency that might occur in case of a refusal, on the part of the Presbytery of Arkansas, to allow Dr. Welch to leave the Little Rock church, by which the executive committee were instructed to elect Dr. Robert Price to the professorship of English Literature. Information was in due time received from Rev. Dr. Craig, who had attended the meeting of the Presbytery as the representative of the directory for the purpose of urging them to dissolve the pastoral relation, and also from Dr. Welch himself, to the effect that the Presbytery refused to consent to the dissolution. These letters were received by me while I was absent from home, on July 31st, at Wankeshaw, whither

I had gone to spend a season for my broken health. I at once wrote to Dr. Lupton at Clarksville, and urged that a meeting of the executive committee be called at once, and that they should carry into effect the instructions of the Board, and elect Dr. Robert Price, of Vicksburg, Miss. This was done by them, and in process of time he accepted the call, and, being released by his Presbytery (Central Mississippi), he resigned the charge of the church in Vicksburg, made his arrangements at once, and effected his removal, arriving at Clarksville on September 8th, and was engaged in regular work on the 11th. Dr. Nicolassen, the newly-elected Professor of Languages, who had arrived on the 30th of August, was at work at a very early period of the session; and as large accessions of new students were arriving daily by every train, the usual degree of pleasant excitement consequent upon the opening of a new session prevailed, and all concerned found themselves very closely engaged in the several departments of work assigned to each in his sphere.

We had very little interruption to our internal progress this entire session, slight cases of discipline only occurring occasionally, easily disposed of without rigid application of correction. The scholarship of the student-body was improved, their deportment much more manly and dignified, and the patronage handsomely increased. I find, on a review of the first four sessions of the University, ending in 1883, that the improvement was steady and gradual in every desirable respect as regards the character of the student body. It is attributable, under the blessing of God, to some extent to the nature of the system of discipline in operation, as already alluded to, and to the additional fact that there was every year an addition of pious students. It is admitted that such an influence as this last is not so effective always as may be expected, and as should be, from the nature of the case. But when we observe that the same

deficiency is discovered to exist in society, and even among the membership of organized churches, it may be accounted for as readily in the one case as in the other. The latter of these cases, used here to illustrate a fact, it would seem, should be under a deeper sense of obligation to elevate and refine public morals, from their more extensive experience, and from their more prominent position, than a body of students occupying a comparatively subordinate position. Yet while the churches are not exerting an universal influence for good, we should find, by their expulsion, or their absence from any community, the disastrous consequences that would immediately follow. Just so the presence of a greater or less infusion of the element of piety into any student body will be the means of a perceptible correspondent and relative elevation and refinement of character of the mass of the students. They are a part of "the salt of the earth," and act as the preservative element.

We find, in the announcement of the year 1886–'87, the statement that Mr. S. B. Steers, of New Orleans, had established a fund of $500 a year as a pious memorial of his son, Edward C. Steers, deceased, to be used, under the direction of the Faculty of the Southwestern Presbyterian University, in aiding candidates for the ministry in the institution, subject to such regulations as may seem wise. I add to this that this amount of $500 was regularly remitted by the donor, Mr. Steers, in prompt quarterly payments during his life. At his death, he, by bequest, left the sum of ten thousand dollars for this purpose, the interest of which sum only is to be used.

Two other distinguished gentlemen, friends of the institution, generously aided in the support of needy candidates for the ministry, provided they were represented by proper authority as promising, as well as needy.

CHAPTER LV.

Divinity School Established.—Election of Professor, and the Chair Endowed.—Dr. Caldwell's Resignation.

IT should be understood, and is here recorded, that in the original organization of the University it was the design of the Board of Directors to enlarge the sphere of its operations, so as to make it what its name would naturally imply, a comprehensive combination of such other schools as the nature of the case demands, and as the means and resources at their control would authorize. Especially was it contemplated that a "School of Divinity," or a "Theological Seminary," should constitute a prominent part of the system. The constantly increasing number of candidates presenting themselves annually for admission into our classes, preparatory to their entrance upon the study of theology, and cognate departments, some of whom were already graduated from the Department of Literature and Science, impressed upon the minds of the members of the Board the urgent importance of carrying out this scheme, and the time seemed propitious for inaugurating the school at the the earliest period possible. Accordingly, at the annual meeting of the Board in 1884, it was decided unanimously to add a theological school to this University. In pursuance of this purpose, the following action was taken:

"1. The School of Theology shall be a component part of the University, in the same manner and under the same regulations, and under the same general supervision of the Chancellor, as the other schools now existing.

"2. The instruction in Theology, Didactic, Historic and Polemic, is assigned to the Professor of Theology: the He-

brew and New Testament Greek, is placed under the charge of Dr. J. B. Shearer; Church History, under that of Dr. Price; Church Polity, under that of Dr. Waddel; and Dr. J. W. Lupton is requested to give instruction in Pastoral Theology.

"This general outline is intended to give to the professor of theology the assurance of the support he will need in the office of instruction. It may be modified to any extent by conference between himself and the Faculty of the University, when he shall take the work in hand to which he is chosen.

"The School of Theology will be open for the reception of students September 1st, 1885."

The Board at once felt the necessity of placing this great trust in the hands of the right man as professor, and by a common impulse a committee was appointed to wait on Dr. Palmer, and ascertain his views as to acceptance of the professorship. He very clearly and unequivocally declined to entertain the idea. On Monday, June 2d, the Board proceeded to an election of a professor of theology, which resulted in the choice of Rev. R. L. Dabney, D. D. By order of the Board I wrote a long and earnest letter to Dr. Dabney, which was signed by Dr. Palmer, Dr. Welch, and myself, and entrusted to Dr. Marshall to deliver to the Doctor personally. On June 21st, I received a long, kind, and yet decisive letter from Dr. Dabney, declining the professorship to which he had been elected. This was greatly to our disappointment, but we were now called upon to devise a method by which this difficulty could be met, so as to fill the chair in time for the session of 1885. At a meeting of the executive committee, held on September 24th, at which Dr. Palmer was present, the question was discussed—first, as to the propriety of conducting an election by correspondence; and, second, by nominating a candidate and addressing a circu-

lar to each director individually, requesting him to note by letter his approval or disapproval. After much discussion, the name of Rev. Dr. J. R. Wilson was presented as the nominee for the chair of Theology, and a circular was agreed upon, a copy of which was to be forwarded by mail to each director for his consideration. This was done, and in due course of time answers were received from all, indicating, by a large majority, their acceptance of Dr. Wilson as professor of theology. He was written to officially and informed of his election, and signified his willingness to accept the appointment. Thus we were enabled to announce through our catalogue that the School of Theology would form a prominent department of the University at the opening of the session 1885, with Dr. Wilson as principal professor. There was not a dollar of endowment provided at the time, but the Board appointed Rev. R. F. Bunting, D. D., agent for the purpose of raising the funds for that purpose, and Dr. Bunting entered at once upon the work assigned him. In the meantime, provisional pledges were secured in the six Synods, from friends, to ensure the payment of the salary of the professor until such time should elapse as might be necessary when the endowment would be completed, invested and productive. We may dismiss this matter by stating that the blessing of God crowned the enterprise with perfect success, and that the chair in due time was fully established.

It is a most gratifying fact, that the establishment of this department of the University at so early a period in the history of the University was realized under circumstances so entirely satisfactory. When we remember that there was not in the treasury of the University one dollar which might be devoted to the support of the Divinity School, nor, at its inauguration, any pledges from any source that such support should be furnished; and yet that the Board of Directors had the strong conviction that induced them to go for-

ward in the work; it was verily no other than an act of faith in the God of infinite wisdom and love, under whose guidance the institution had thus far been so signally sustained, and had been built up in honor and usefulness to his church. This is the true secret of all success, and it is cause of grateful remembrance, on a review of this part of the Board's administration, that this strong and fervent faith in God was inspired into their hearts and strengthened them to go forward in the work. And now, when we look into the progress of events in connection with that period which has elapsed since the actual opening of the Divinity School, our conviction of the propriety of its organization is well assured by the fruits which have resulted in the completion of the theological courses of so many young brethren, and their prompt entrance upon the work of preaching the gospel in various parts of our Southern Zion.

The resignation of Dr. John W. Caldwell of the chair of Natural Sciences, which he had filled acceptably for many years, rendered it necessary that we should take steps at an early period to supply, as far as possible, the vacancy thus occurring. The executive committee in this case, not deeming it advisable to go into even a provisional election of a professor who should be recommended to the Board for confirmation at their annual meeting, were fortunate in finding that the duties of the chair could be discharged for the remainder of the session by Professor E. B. Massie, who was not only fully qualified, but kind enough to undertake the additional labor of instruction that would be necessary until the close of the session.

The resignation of Dr. Caldwell was felt by the Faculty to be a serious loss to the University, and a series of resolutions were passed by them of the most complimentary character, expressive of their sense of his high and valuable services and usefulness to the University, as well as their sincere regret in the loss that they would sustain of the so-

ciety of himself, and that of his refined and esteemed family, from our circle of association. Dr. Caldwell was very soon placed in a position of commanding influence and usefulness as Professor of Chemistry and Geology, and curator of the Museum in Tulane University, New Orleans. Beyond the exercises usually occurring at Commencement, which were creditable in 1883, nothing of remarkable interest is recorded, except the matters already referred to above.

Thus ended the fifth session of the University, during which period much material action, mainly preparatory, had been transacted by the authorities, and the actual execution was reserved for 1884–'85.

At the annual meeting of directors, on May 30th to June 3rd, inclusive, the vacancy in the Stewart professorship, occasioned by the resignation of Professor J. W. Caldwell, was filled by the appointment of Professor James A. Lyon, Ph. D., by a unanimous vote of the Board. Dr. Lyon was a son of the Rev. J. A. Lyon, D. D., and was a graduate of Nassau Hall, Princeton, New Jersey, where he had held a high grade as a student, and at the time of graduation had awarded to him a fellowship for superior mathematical attainments. He had filled a chair in Highland University, in the State of Kansas, and in a collegiate institute of high repute at York, Pa., and at the time of his election to the chair at Clarksville he held the professorship of Physical Science in the Washington and Jefferson College, of Pennsylvania. Dr. Lyon accepted the call, and entered upon the duties of the chair at the opening of the session, September, 1885.

CHAPTER LVI.

ORGANIZATION OF THE DIVINITY AND ACADEMIC SCHOOLS.—FIRST CLASS.—SKETCH OF DR. WELCH.

WE opened under the enlarged system established and inaugurated by the Board September 8th under the following Faculties in the Academic and Divinity Schools:

ACADEMIC FACULTY.

JOHN N. WADDEL, D. D., LL. D., *Chancellor, Professor in the School of Philosophy.*

REV. J. B. SHEARER, D. D., *Professor in the School of Biblical Instruction.*

S. J. COFFMAN, A. M., *Professor in the School of Modern Languages.*

E. B. MASSIE, A. M., *Professor in the School of Mathematics.*

G. F. NICOLASSEN, A. M., Ph. D., *Professor in the School of Ancient Languages.*

REV. ROBERT PRICE, D. D., *McComb Professor in the School of History, English Literature, History and Rhetoric.*

J. A. LYON, A. M., Ph. D., *Stewart Professor in the School of Natural Sciences.*

N. SMYLIE, A. B., *Assistant Professor in several Schools.*

FACULTY OF THE DIVINITY SCHOOL.

REV. J. N. WADDEL, D. D., LL. D., *Chancellor, Professor of Church Polity.*

REV. JOSEPH R. WILSON, D. D., *Professor of Theology and Homiletics.*

REV. J. B. SHEARER, D. D., LL. D., *Professor of Hebrew and New Testament Greek.*

REV. ROBERT PRICE, D. D., *Professor of Ecclesiastical History.*

REV. J. W. LUPTON, D. D., *Professor of Practical Theology.*

In all, there were twenty-one candidates for the ministry pursuing the preparatory studies, and there were sixteen who constituted the first class of the Divinity School. This

was the beginning of this department, and was the only professional course as yet established. It closed this first session with most satisfactory results. The scheme adopted contemplates the simple principle that its various schools are in reality but one, and the government and departments bear the same relation to the University as do those of the academic schools. The two Faculties and the discipline are one. The chancellor is the chief executive and the presiding officer of the whole. During the progress of this session the institution was called, in the providence of God, to a great affliction in the loss of Rev. Dr. Welch, a prominent and most efficient member of the Board of Directors from the beginning of the institution, and who, at the time of his death, was vice-president of the Board. Some notice of such a man, it would seem, would very naturally accompany the history of the University to which, while living, he was so devoted, and whose interests he served so long and so efficiently.

The writer of this sketch had known Dr. Welch during the preceding thirty years of his life, and for a great part of that time had enjoyed most intimate associations with him. At the period of his untimely and unexpected death he had attained his three-score years. He was an alumnus of Centre College, of forty years' standing, in its day of prosperity, received his theological training at New Albany, Indiana, and had been an ordained minister of the gospel during thirty-four years. After a brief term of service with the church in Helena, Ark., he was called to the pastorate of the First church, in Little Rock. Here, for nearly a quarter century, he labored with untiring devotion, and the result was that the strong attachment which he felt for the people was met, on their part, by a responsive devotion and love for him. In all their spiritual interests he was their trusted guide and counsellor. To him they resorted for advice in perplexing questions of duty, and always found him pre-

pared to direct them, careful to impress upon them always that in all their troubles and afflictions, while he was a sympathizing friend, they must trace all their deliverances to the God of all comfort. Sound and orthodox in his creed, he was instructive and faithful in his pulpit ministrations. Thoroughly skilled as a presbyter, he was an acknowledged leader in all questions of church polity, and was remarkable for his executive ability. Hence it was not a matter of surprise that his reputation for the possession of these valuable qualities led to his election as Moderator of the Southern General Assembly in 1872. He stood in the front rank of the ministerial corps of his Synod and Presbytery, and was recognized as a man of such practical wisdom as won for him universal confidence in regard to the public interests of the State and nation.

In this connection the writer recalls an interesting statement made by one who had spent some time in Little Rock, and was familiar with the condition of affairs in the State during the troublous times of reconstruction, strikingly illustrative of the modest, wise, and unobtrusive influence of Dr. Welch upon public affairs. A congressional committee had been appointed to visit the State, with a view of investigating the condition of feeling of the people toward the Government of the United States, and to report the result to Congress as a basis of legislation. The chairman of that committee visited Dr. Welch's church as a worshipper. Observing him as a stranger, Dr. Welch accosted him courteously, as was his custom, assuring him of a cordial welcome, and inviting him to attend divine service, with the certainty that he should always be shown to a comfortable seat whenever he might attend. Disarmed by such unexpected attention, evidently disinterested, the stranger laid aside all prejudice, and during his stay in Little Rock sought opportunity to obtain from Dr. Welch the needed information upon the subject of his mission. This was furnished

by Dr. Welch in a manner that carried conviction of its truthfulness along with it, and, in connection with other influences, led to the preparation and presentation of such a report by that committee as to defeat entirely the object of the bitter partisans who had organized the movement, and ultimately resulted in a peaceful settlement of all public trouble. This fact is given as an illustration of the wise and judicious influence exerted by Dr. Welch, not only as a Christian minister, but as a Christian patriot.

His term of active service in Little Rock was brought to a close by alarming symptoms of declining health, which imperatively demanded a cessation of ministerial labor and a residence in a more genial climate. His capacity for accurate business matters suggested to influential friends in government circles the idea of a temporary appointment to some office, the duties of which would not be onerous, and the location healthful. Accordingly, the appointment of United States Consul at the city of Hamilton, Ontario, Canada, tendered to him and accepted, seemed to promise all that was desired; and for nearly a year there was the most gratifying prospect of a complete restoration of health. Notwithstanding the almost constant service rendered by him to the Presbyterian people of that city in preaching to their large congregations, he continued to improve, and his friends were cheered by confident hopes that he would ultimately regain his health, and live to perform many years' service to the church and to the world. The insidious disease of the heart still lurked in the system, and only awaited occasion to complete its fatal work. At a most unexpected and sudden moment, at eleven o'clock of the night of Thursday, March 25th, "the silver cord was loosed, the golden bowl was broken, the pitcher was broken at the fountain, and the wheel broken at the cistern," and the mysteriously-wrought machinery was brought to a full stop.

The work of life was done; the burden was laid down;

the servant of God was called from labor to rest, having been faithful in every station assigned him in the providence of God; having filled every relation binding him to others; having met every obligation growing out of those relations, he had won the universal confidence of all with whom he had been associated. A devoted husband; a generous and affectionate kinsman; an upright, wise, and loyal citizen; an instructive and scriptural minister of the gospel; a man of most liberal spirit in all matters of Christian benevolence; in a word, a man of God. He will long be missed and regretted in all these positions and relations. The church mourns the departure of one of her most efficient and trusted servants. The College at Batesville, Ark., and the University at Clarksville, Tenn., of whose boards of trust he had been a prominent and valued member from their origin, have sustained an almost irreparable loss. It would seem that all over the Southwest, which was the scene of his life-work, the cry will spontaneously go up, "Help, Lord, for the godly man ceaseth, for the faithful fail from among the children of God."

CHAPTER LVII.

Filling Vacancies on the Board.—Withdrawal from the Board by Synod of Texas.—Sketches.—Failing Health and Resignation of Chancellor.—Election of Dr. Hersman, and Inauguration Exercises.

THE Synod of Arkansas proceeded to fill the vacancy in the Board, which was caused by the death of Dr. Welch, by the election of Rev. W. A. Sample, D. D., and the vacancy caused by the removal to Texas of Rev. Dr. Raymond, of Alabama, was filled by the appointment of Rev. J. M. P. Otts, as the representative of that Synod on the Board. It was during the session of 1886–'87, at the fall meeting of the Synod of Texas, that this body resolved to sever its connection with the Southwestern Presbyterian University. Accordingly, on the roll of the Board, as published in the catalogue of that session, the number of co-operating Synods is reduced from six to five. The names of two most beloved and highly-esteemed directors, and two whose ardent devotion and zealous, active work for its prosperity had never been excelled, appear no more recorded upon our annual catalogue. Their absence from the annual meetings of the Board was a conspicuous event in our history, as it was known to all our friends that, on no occasion of the assembly of the directors had either of them ever been absent, save when unable to attend by reason of sickness, and this had occurred on only a single occasion, in the case of Rev. Dr. King; while, in the experience of the venerable Dr. W. K. Marshall, dating his membership from the very origin of the institution, his attendance at Clarksville was never known to fail. These gentlemen were sur-

rendered by us with the deepest regret, for the additional reason that their wisdom and experience contributed greatly to the establishment of those grand fundamental principles which lie at the basis of true Christian education, to which, indeed, this institution is so largely indebted for its solid prosperity. A singular fact may be noted in this connection, that neither of the directors from Alabama last elected was ever present at any meeting of the Board, occasioned by providential events and circumstances beyond their control.

The University attained its highest number of attendant students during the session of 1886–'87, the catalogue for this session exhibiting a total of one hundred and fifty. Of these, there were twenty-one divinity students, being an increase of five on the class of the preceding session. The Faculty of Arts was only so far changed as to have elected Mr. F. W. Morton, of Virginia, to fill the chair of adjunct in the departments vacated by the resignation of Professor Smylie.

My health continued to grow more and more feeble during all the years that had passed from 1882, at which time the first symptoms of decline began to manifest themselves. I had visited during the vacations Waukesha Springs, and placed myself under the special medical treatment of distinguished physicians in various parts of the country, and had used many remedies which were recommended, but all to no purpose; and this course of suffering continued for five sessions without the suspension of my official duties or my absence from the University during the term. Often, however, I found myself suffering much pain while in the discharge of the needed work of my department. This condition of things continued until the opening of the session of 1887-'88, when, after a struggle of about five weeks with the disease which I had fought for five years, I was forced to succumb.

On the 30th of September, 1887, awaking from a troubled sleep, I found myself so prostrate with fever and utter physical inability, I abandoned all effort to work. Calling in our friend and family physician, Dr. McCauley, I was, from that day to the 25th of October, under his treatment for catarrh in a most aggravated form. On consultation with Dr. Wright, Dr. McCauley decided that I should at once withdraw from all work and responsibility in connection with the University, and that I should pass the winter in some Southern climate. To this decision I submitted, with the approval of the friends and colleagues most interested in the matter. As I learned subsequently, however, that my disease was incurable, in the opinion of the attending physicians, and that while they admitted the possibility of an improvement in my case from change of climate, at the same time they asserted, with some positiveness, that should I be sufficiently improved to resume work, the consequence of such a step on my part would be inevitable relapse and fatal termination. Confiding implicitly in their views, as to their wisdom and skill, on consultation with my devoted wife, I determined to tender to the Board of Directors my resignation of the office of chancellor, to take effect on January 1st, or at the close of the current session, as might seem best for the interests of the University.

The following is a copy of the resignation, one of the copies having been prepared and forwarded to each director:

"Clarksville, *October* 11, 1887.

"Dear Brother: It is well known to the directors that my mind for several years has been much occupied with the severance of my connection with this institution. My present failure of health makes it imperative that I should present to the Board individually the facts in the case, and I desire them to make known to me their views on this sub-

ject as speedily as possible. After making an honest effort during the month of September to fulfill the duties and obligations of my office, I find myself prostrated and unable to perform any duty. The Faculty, at the suggestion of my physicians, have divided my duties among them so that my teaching and clerical duties are being carried on by them.

"Two physicians, in whose judgment I have confidence, decide that it is important in my condition that I should spend the winter in a climate less rigorous than this; and it is also their opinion that should I recover sufficiently to resume my duties, I would again succumb. It is clearly my duty, under such circumstances, to tender my resignation, to take effect in January, or at the end of the sessional year, according to your wish. I leave the choice of these alternatives to you, as it was the expressed wish of several members of the Board, that, even in case of failure of health, I should continue my connection with the institution during the sessional year.

"And now, in the Providence of God, I feel it my duty to tender my resignation, to take effect at such time as you may indicate. Respectfully and truly,

"JNO. N. WADDEL."

To this I received answers from the directors, accepting my resignation, which took effect at the close of the current session in June, 1888. On the 28th of October we arrived in Pensacola, Fla., and there, in the house and with the family of C. V. Thompson, who had married my youngest daughter, and had resided there for several years, we spent the winter, and left there on April 23, 1888. During these five or six months, I had been for the greater part of the time utterly prostrate in health. Under the blessing of God, upon the faithful and skilful nursing of my devoted wife, and the genial influence of the climate, my health began to exhibit evidence of gradual improvement. On the

23d of April, 1888, we turned our faces northward, and leaving Pensacola, reached Clarksville, after slight delay in visiting friends on the way, on May 1st.

In the interval, at a special meeting of the Board of Directors held on March 21st, my resignation, which had been assented to individually, was formally accepted by the assembled Board, to take effect in June. At this meeting, the Rev. C. C. Hersman, D. D., was unanimously chosen chancellor, which he accepted. The period from May 1st to July 1st, we spent in Clarksville. The only event worthy of historical record occurring during these two months was the annual Commencement, which occupied the five days from June 2d to 6th inclusive. The Board met and transacted the usual routine business on Saturday, 2d. On Sabbath evening, after an address of great eloquence by Dr. Palmer, listened to with profound attention by an immense audience in the Presbyterian church, on the "Centennial Memorial of the Origin of our Church in the United States;" a collection, or rather a subscription, was taken, which resulted in the sum of $6,000, as reported, for the additional endowment and general benefit of the Southwestern Presbyterian University. On the evening of Wednesday, 6th, after the usual exercises on Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday mornings had been performed by speakers and others, the regular inauguration of the chancellor-elect, Dr. C. C. Hersman, was publicly attended to, and the keys of office, emblematic of his authority, were delivered to him, accompanied by a brief address from myself, to which Dr. H. responded in an elaborate discourse on "Denominational Education."

I may be excused, I trust, for alluding to the following occurrence which closed the exercises of the evening, and with them, at the same time, brought the Commencement occasion to an end. As I sat on the rostrum after the inaugural address of Dr. H. had been delivered, to my great

surprise, I was personally addressed by Dr. Palmer in a speech of few but striking "thoughts that breathed, and words that burned," which was accompanied by the unveiling of a portrait of myself. This whole occurrence had been successfully concealed from me, and from the first conception of it to the actual execution of the plan, I was kept profoundly in the dark. The portrait was executed and presented to the University, wholly at the expense of the artist, Mr. W. J. McCormick, of Clarksville. Thus ended my public connection with the Southwestern Presbyterian University, and since that occasion I have occupied the position of one among its warmest friends, and this humble place I shall continue to fill so long as my life may endure.

CHAPTER LVIII.

General Review.—What is a Christian Institution?—Closing Reflections on the Subject of Education.

UPON a review of the history of the Southwestern Presbyterian University there will be found one peculiarity belonging to it as an institution of learning, which cannot be claimed to the same extent by any other school of its class within my knowledge. Its character and designation as a Christian school, and under the control and direction of the church, does not distinguish it from others in the South, which are entitled to the same description. But while all of them are understood to give to their general scope and design a genuine stamp of Christian instruction that pervades the course of study, the method of discipline, and the end in view, and while it is true that to a certain degree the Bible in some of these institutions is a text-book, I am not aware that in any of them the study of the Bible constitutes a regularly organized course of compulsory study, just as extensively as any other study prescribed in the various departments. While the institution is organized upon the plan of coördinate schools and elective courses, the Biblical Department is as prominent a school as any one of the eight into which the University is distributed. Moreover, while students are allowed to elect the course that they prefer, it is a fundamental rule that every student must enter the School of "Biblical Instruction;" and while in the courses pursued by candidates for the various degrees, provision is made whereby other studies may be omitted, it is a rigid exaction that the regular completion of the entire Bible course shall be made by a candi-

date for any degree whatever conferred by the University. In further statement of details on this point, it is to be noted that the Bible course embraces three classes, each requiring a full session for its completion, and each class is required to meet the professor three hours weekly.

It will appear then, from this review, that the University, whose history I have been striving to present, may indeed claim, without arrogating anything extravagant in its pretensions, to be a genuine Christian school of learning, and that the Bible constitutes a regular text-book required to be provided by every student who enters and matriculates.

It would seem a very natural decision reached by every Christian parent in this day, when there is such widespread agitation going on in our country of the question of the exclusion of the Bible from our public schools, that this institution would be the chosen and safe place to which to entrust their children, where they can, without any danger, receive a Christian training. I repeat that no reflection is intended upon the many excellent sister institutions of our church by these statements. But it seems only justice that the extent to which the Bible is taught in this University should be brought fully before the Christian public.

In my retirement from personal connection with the educational interests of the country, I trust I may not be considered as presumptuously obtruding my views, somewhat more *in extenso*, upon this great subject, to which I have devoted so large a portion of my life, now somewhat protracted.

To those who can look back with the writer for more than half a century, there is nothing that is more remarkable in this review than the progress made in the system of public education in all parts of the country. This statement covers the ground in every respect, and embraces every particular which enters into this progress as an element. In the extent of the system, in the advanced state especially of the

instruction in science in all departments consequent upon the immense discoveries in all spheres of knowledge during the half century, now not far from its close, there is enough to excite the astonishment of every intelligent observer and of every reader of the past. This enlargement of the field of scientific education has grown to such an extent as to force upon some of our oldest and most prominent educators the discussion of the question of the elective system, and to resort to some expedient whereby only those studies introducing men to the more practical pursuits of life shall be assigned the chief place in the undergraduate course, and the classical languages either excluded or substituted by the modern languages. This has been done to considerable extent in the Southwestern Presbyterian University; and yet the ancient classical languages hold a large and important place in the course prescribed, and quite a goodly proportion of the students elect those old languages among those in their chosen schedule of study. It is, however, a great stimulus to this, that the full course in classical literature is required of all candidates for the degree of M. A. and B. A., and in B. Ph. the Latin language is required to some extent. Altogether, the course of study in the colleges and universities has been wonderfully enlarged and extended, and doubtless much improved and elevated. The number of students who are now receiving a finished education, fitting them for the varied callings of life, is vastly increased. But we are by no means at the point of advancement to which we ought to aspire. Many of our best men are opposed to the multiplication of colleges and seminaries of learning, upon the ground that they are multiplied beyond the actual necessity of the country, and that it would be infinitely better that we should combine the various smaller institutions into one large University for the whole country. This view, it will be remembered, was put forward in 1861 by some of our educators, but, as we have seen, was effec-

tually opposed by others. In the case of the Southwestern Presbyterian University, the field was narrowed down to the limits of six Southwestern Synods; and the history of its progress and patronage demonstrates clearly that these limits are in an apparent process of curtailment, and that the extent of its territory of patronage is yet to be contracted, and the source of strength and support is to be found nearer home. Texas has withdrawn from the directory, and it had a perfect right so to do, having its own institutions. Arkansas may be induced to do the same; and so may Alabama, not because of any want of kindly, fraternal spirit, so much as a feeling, which is natural, and wellnigh universal, that each Synod should foster and promote its own institutions that are nearer to them. The fact is, that a mere cursory glance at the catalogue of the Southwestern Presbyterian University will convince any reader that the patronage comes mainly, *even now*, from the States of Tennessee and Mississippi, included in the Synods of Nashville, Memphis, and Mississippi. The motive that prompts and sustains such a tendency may be called by some selfish, but there are two facts that are closely connected with it which give it plausibility at least. One is, that by increasing the number of educational institutions you increase the number of educated citizens, inasmuch as these institutions are brought within reach of a greater number of persons who live near their location, thus curtailing the expenses of travel and of board. The other is, that it is the true interest of every good citizen to advance the education of his own immediate community or State.

Under such circumstances, the immediate region over which the Clarksville institution exerts an influence should rally to its support, and enable its working friends to carry into effect the great system of Christian education, of which it is one of the genuine representatives and zealous advocates. Thankful for patronage and friendly interest mani-

fested from other and distant States and communities, this University must look mainly to its own immediate region for co-operation and patronage. Nor is it too much to say, in behalf of the institution, that it has done in the past a great work for the church and the State, and is still engaged in its mission of diffusing the blessed influence of Christian education wherever its alumni have found their homes. Its roll of ministerial representatives in the gospel presents over fifty promising workers; and if those who were sent forth from Stewart College, the nucleus of the Southwestern Presbyterian University, be added, the number will be found to reach more than sixty. They fill many churches of nine or ten of our Southern States. Six others have taken their lives in their hands, and have gone to the foreign field; and two of them have laid down their lives in the work of preaching the gospel to the heathen. The patronage has been found, on the best attainable estimate, to have averaged, in twenty years, one hundred and sixteen in attendance annually; the smallest number in any session reaching seventy-one, and the largest attaining one hundred and fifty.

At the close of my term of service the institution was under promising prospects of constant advance in usefulness, both in the school of divinity, and of literature, science, and art; and were its material and financial status that which its high claims merit, its value would be equal to that of the foremost of the land.

And now, in my retirement from the long and laborious work to which my life has been devoted, I would fain take kind leave of that public with which I have been associated for more than half a century. Looking back over these busy years, while I readily recall many occurrences that were sad, and many errors of judgment, and many of those weaknesses inseparable from human nature, I should be recreant to every sentiment of gratitude to God, and to the many noble and excellent friends who, under his guid-

ance, and as His instruments of loving-kindness and tender mercy, have given me their sympathy, did I not ackowledge their wise counsel, and their valued, effective and influential aid during my entire career. My brethren in the ministry, and laity of the church; my pupils, of whom so many have succeeded in filling the highest positions of honor and usefulness in church and State; constituted the varied circles crowded with those who always held high place in my heart's warm affections and exalted esteem. To them have I turned in days of darkness, confident of that aid I needed in consolation and counsel; and in those times of brightness when my humble efforts were crowned with success, equally confident of their partial congratulations and approval—a confidence never too sanguine and never disappointed.

Even in the instances of private, domestic affliction, which my heavenly Father has sent in his loving providential dealings with me—dark and inscrutable as they seemed at the time of their occurrence—I was not forgotten by my devoted friends. Let me subjoin a voluntary tribute to my soldier boy, whose untimely end is recorded in the body of this memoir, on page 425. It is from the pen of my friend and former colleague, Professor J. R. Blake, of South Carolina:

In Memoriam.

Killed by a fragment of shell from the enemy, at Jonesboro', Ga., on the 1st day of September, 1864,

JOHN GRAY WADDEL,

youngest son of Rev. J. N. Waddel, D. D. The deceased was born in Jasper county, Miss., on the 21st of January, 1847, and enlisted as a volunteer in the Army of Tennessee, on the 23d of January, 1864, being then just seventeen years old. In the ardor of his youthful enthusiasm, stimulated by a generous love for his suffering country, he cheerfully forsook the endearments of his loved family circle for the hardships and trials of the camp, resolved to sacrifice, if need be, life itself in defence of the truth and the right; and manfully did he

execute this youthful resolution. Amid all the trials of this perilous position he illustrated the model soldier. Quick and sprightly in his intellect, amiable and gentle in his disposition, generous and noble in his impulses, he was beloved by all who knew him ; and to his bereaved family and friends, a recollection, dearer than all else, is that he was a child of the covenant, dedicated to God in his infancy, and though he had not joined the church, he left satisfactory evidence that he had made his peace with God.

To his honored parent we offer our tenderest Christian sympathies. Bereft as he is of wife, and home, and property, he is now called to mourn the loss of his youngest born--his Benjamin. Out of the depths of this desolation may be seen the goodness and mercy of God in appointing unto his darling boy thus to die—to die young, that his life might be comparatively spotless and pure ; to die a sacrifice to his country, that his name might be loved and honored ; to die a Christian, that he might secure the crown of endless felicity. J. R. B.

A like grief I was called to endure long after the close of the civil war, in the loss of my only surviving son, George, who, after having passed through that fearful war scourge which occasioned the desolation, physical and moral, and, to a certain extent, spiritual, of our country, at the age of twenty-one entered the Sophomore Class of the University, in 1865, at the beginning of my administration as chancellor, and was graduated in the class of 1868. He had made a profession of religion during the war, in camp, and had connected himself with the Presbyterian church. After graduation, he first turned his attention to teaching, in which occupation he did not long continue to take much interest, as he preferred a more active life; and, being fond of engineering, he entered upon that sort of business, under my friend and former colleague, Colonel J. L. Meigs, chief engineer of the Memphis and Little Rock railroad, in Arkansas. Losing his health, he left the line of the railroad, and took position in the office under Col. Meigs, in Memphis, and subsequently superintended bridge-building on the Paducah and Memphis railroad. Work on all these roads being suspended, he joined a small company of young men who went to Texas to

get into some employment. While he resided there, and undergoing much privation of various kinds, I was much surprised to receive from him a most remarkable letter, detailing the exercises of his mind under what he was convinced was a call to the gospel ministry. Our correspondence on this subject consisted of an earnest injunction, on my part, to him, to study this solemn question prayerfully and deliberately, and pointing out to him the various topics upon which he should conduct this self-examination to make his decision in view of the responsibility he owed to the all-seeing Master. The result was that he was soon after received as a candidate for the ministry, under care of the Presbytery of West Texas, spent two sessions as a theological student in Union Seminary; and having been licensed to preach by his Presbytery, while at the Seminary he spent many Sabbaths preaching at vacant points. He left the Seminary in March, 1878, and passed through Memphis on his way to Texas to meet his Presbytery. He spent a Sabbath and preached in the Lauderdale-street church, to which I was then ministering. He was ordained at that spring meeting of West Texas Presbytery; married Miss Fannie Brownson, of Victoria, and at once removed to San Saba, as his first place of residence, as an evangelist. He remained in Texas some years, and removed, by invitation, to some feeble churches in Arkansas, where he led a most laborious life as an evangelist for two years. Thence he was invited and accepted the call to Batesville, Ark., and took part in the instruction of the Arkansas College, under the presidency of Dr. Long, and, at the same time, was stated supply of the church in that place. While he was residing there, in the month of November he was attacked with the disease that ended his life. In a visit which I was permitted to pay him in January, I advised him to spend the winter in Florida, which he did. On his way he spent a short time in New Orleans, and my brethren, Drs. Palmer and Markham, paid

him every attention. The eminent surgeon, Dr. Richardson, calling by the request of his pastor, Dr. Palmer, and examining the case, pronounced it to be malignant tumor of the intestines, from which he could not recover; that death might occur at any time, but that he might live, at most, a year longer. A relative of his wife, who wrote me an account of his case, reported that on the announcement of this opinion of the physician, he simply remarked, calmly, "Well, I am in the hands of my Saviour; let Him do with me what seemeth to Him good." He reached Pensacola safely, and, after spending six weeks or more with his sister, Mrs. Thompson, the wife of Charles V. Thompson, his war associate and friend, with varied symptoms of alternate ease and suffering, he sank so rapidly that I received a dispatch from Mr. Thompson to the effect that I must come at once if I desired to see him alive. I was then living at Clarksville, and, leaving by the earliest train, I reached his bedside in time to spend five days with him, as he had rallied from the sinking spell. He had no idea of recovery whatever, but was in constant expectation of the final summons. We had precious seasons of communion, by conversation and reading the blessed Word. I found in him no appearance of reluctance to depart, no alarm at the prospect of death; but while there was no appearance of rapture or exultation, all was calm and peaceful acquiescence in God's will. So it continued until Sabbath morning at one o'clock, when he breathed his life sweetly and quietly away, to enter into his eternal rest.

Many and precious were the testimonials of affectionate regard and high esteem which I received from his friends and associates who knew and loved him while living, and lamented him, now departed. I select from them two, one from his beloved and admired theological teacher, Dr. R. L. Dabney; the other from his classmate in the University of Mississippi, the eminent Bishop C. B. Galloway:

DR. DABNEY'S LETTER.

UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS, *April* 26, 1885.

Rev. John N. Waddel, D. D.:

DEAR BROTHER: It was with mingled grief and surprise that I read of the occasion of your sad visit to Pensacola. I had not heard of your son's sickness, and I had been thinking of him only as prospering in that onward career of health, influence, and increasing strength which I had learned to associate with him in Texas. He was a cherished and valued pupil. I have before me, with perfect distinctness, his gentle, manly, modest, and Christian deportment, and his solid attainments. The teacher ought to die before the pupil. He was young and strong; I am becoming old and shattered. Did we not have the assurance of our heavenly Teacher's wisdom and love, the cutting off of such lives would be mysteries too painful to endure. But He has said, by our Christ, "What I do thou knowest not now, but thou shalt know hereafter." I need hardly say that you have my most profound sympathies in your trial. . . . . .

Faithfully yours, etc.,

[Signed] R. L. DABNEY.

BISHOP GALLOWAY'S LETTER.

NEW ORLEANS, LA., *April* 23, 1885.

MY DEAR FRIEND AND BROTHER: In looking over my exchanges this evening, my eye falls upon a sad announcement in the columns of the *Southwestern Presbyterian* from your pen. Alas! how inscrutable the Providence, that one so vigorous and useful should thus early fall on sleep. George, as you know, was my classmate, and one of my most intimate friends. His unswerving friendship, genial spirit, kindness of disposition, sparkling humor, and manly honor are among the prized memories of my University days. We all recognized in him superior ability, though infirm health prevented constant attention to study. It gave me great pleasure to

hear of his entering the ministry, and to learn of his growing usefulness and success. But the grave has disappointed fondest expectations. That he passed so peacefully into "the valley of the shadow" is the divinest comfort. We can suffer bereavement when attempered with such sweet consolation. I sympathize tenderly in your sorrow; but for you the separation will not be long. And in tendering some feeble words of condolence, I want to thank my dear old chancellor for a thousand blessings vouchsafed to me through his words and example. . . . . .

Your friend and former student,

[Signed] Charles B. Galloway.

But it is time for me to close these reminiscences, and to leave on record my best wishes for the temporal, spiritual, and eternal welfare of all those who have said, thought, and done so many kind things to me, about me, and for me and mine during my sojourn in this world, in the multiplied and varied fields of labor and scenes of association which, in God's gracious providence, have been assigned to me as my lot in life. No longer engaged in presiding over institutions of learning and directing their operations for the advancement of the education of the young men of the land, I am still enabled to dwell in quiet enjoyment of much that may render life desirable and valuable, even to advanced age. I thank the gracious Giver of every good and perfect gift that there is yet vouchsafed to me the ability to preach, in an humble way, the blessed gospel of the Son of God, and to pray, with earnest heart and devout spirit, for the conversion of sinners, and for the growth in grace and the edification of the church. Surely should I bless God that I have been permitted to behold the wondrous advance of the world in every department of Christian civilization; in science, statesmanship, invention, discovery, and, above all, the opening of "the dark places of the earth, which are full of

the habitations of cruelty," and the shedding into them of the light of divine truth, borne by the hands of the thousands of devoted missionaries of the cross. Never was there such a day of good things witnessed on this earth before! While, therefore, the powers of darkness are awake, and massing their forces for a fearful warfare against the truth, and wickedness "is abroad in terrible array," yet it is the trust unshaken of the soldier of the cross, that when the conflict is joined the issue is not doubtful, but the victory shall be declared in the destruction of the enemy and in the establishment of "the new heavens and the new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness!"

APPENDIX.

No. 1.

CORRESPONDENCE ON THE SUBJECT OF THE PROFESSORSHIP OF PASTORAL THEOLOGY AND CHURCH POLITY IN THE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY AT DANVILLE, KY.

A.

BUFFALO, *May* 30, 1854.

Rev. John N. Waddel, D. D.:

REV. AND DEAR SIR: The undersigned have gratification to inform you that, as a committee appointed by the General Assembly, we have been selected to certify you that, on the 29th inst., you were unanimously elected (one vote only to the contrary) by that venerable body to fill the chair of Church Government and Pastoral Theology in the Theological Seminary at Danville, Ky. We take great pleasure in transmitting to you the above intelligence, and cannot but indulge the fondly cherished hope that you will gratify your brethren of the Assembly, and those of the Southwest generally, in accepting the exalted station to which you have been so unanimously called.

Your brethren in the Lord,

[Signed] JOHN T. EDGAR,
R. B. MCMULLIN,
C. S. PALMORE.

B.

The undersigned members of the General Assembly met at Buffalo from the Presbyteries of the Southwest, feel great gratification at, and contributed to the election of Rev. Dr. J. N. Waddel to the professorship of Pastoral Theology and Church Polity in the Theological Seminary at Danville, Ky. We feel great personal interest in his acceptance of the

office tendered him with so much unanimity, and trust that he will take the call of the church as the call of Divine Providence, and consent to accept, with other dear brethren already in the institution, a part of the responsibility and gratification of building up a great seminary in the Southwest. And in order that he may feel an assurance of all necessary support, we express the conviction that the necessary endowment for the support of this professorship may soon be collected in those departments of the church which we represent, and we further add that we will contribute to this object by all the influence we can exert.

[Signed]

JOHN T. EDGAR, } *Presbytery of Nashville.*
WILL WILLIAMS, }
ALEXANDER SMITH, *Presbytery of Maury.*
R. R. EVANS, *Presbytery of Memphis.*
JAHLEEL WOODBRIDGE, *Presbytery of Louisiana.*
H. M. PAINTER, *Presbytery of Mississippi.*
J. E. C. DOREMUS, *Presbytery of Louisiana.*
R. B. MCMULLIN, *Presbytery of Knoxville.*
J. H. LORANCE, *Presbytery of Tuscumbia.*
J. M. COCHRAN, *Presbytery of West Texas.*
S. J. P. ANDERSON, *Presbytery of St Louis.*
W. H. PAWLING, *Independence, Mo.*
JAMES PARK, *Presbytery of Holston.*

C.

INDIVIDUAL COMMUNICATIONS ON THE SAME TOPIC.

NASHVILLE, *June* 22, 1854.

Rev. Dr. Waddel:

MY DEAR BROTHER: I reached home last evening, and hasten to acknowledge your communication to me of the 13th inst. I am sorry that, owing to my detention in Kentucky, and consequent delay in reaching home, I have been prevented from responding to your letter to me until this date. It would have afforded still greater pleasure than I have felt on arriving at my home, to have received from you an answer to the official note which I forwarded to you from Buffalo, more satisfying than the one I have received, viz., that you felt it your duty to accept the professorship tendered to you so unanimously by your brethren at Buffalo. Yes, so unanimously, for in all my life I have never known

an instance of more united and harmonious sentiment and action, touching any matter connected with the church or government of God's Providence. But perhaps I ought not to have expected a more favorable reply than the one you have so promptly and kindly sent me.

Be assured, my dear brother, that not only myself, but all your brethren in the Southwest, are ardently desirous that you will feel it your duty, in the providence of God, to fill the chair in the seminary, which thus far has been so signally prosperous and promising.

In a convention held by a large number of brethren, anterior to your nomination in the Assembly, an almost unanimous expression was given by them all that you, of all men in our portion of Zion, were the man best endowed and best qualified to fill the station then to be filled by your assembled brethren at Buffalo.

It seemed to me, as it did to them, that an expression so harmonious, and so unanimous, ought to be considered by you as an unequivocal call from the Great Head of our beloved church for your services in one of his schools of the prophets. But I will not doubt that, upon more mature reflection, you will feel constrained, after making more frequent supplications to the throne of grace for direction, to accede to the wishes of your brethren.

May God bring you to such a decision as shall be for His own glory and the best interests of the seminary, established under his superintending providence. Please let me hear from you as soon as your mind will allow you, in regard to the question of your acceptance, in order that I may make known through the press to your brethren, whether their choice of you has met your sanction, or otherwise.

In haste, but very truly and affectionately, your brother in Christ,

John T. Edgar.

From Dr. Humphrey.

Steamer Fashion, near Cairo, Ill.,
June 1, 1854.

Rev. Jno. N. Waddel, D. D,:

Rev. and Dear Sir: Just before my departure from Louisville for St. Louis, I received the intelligence of your election to a professorship in the Danville Theological Seminary

by the General Assembly. Permit me to say in this hurried way, that this action of the Assembly has been taken, not only with the concurrence, but under the advice of the immediate friends of the seminary, including the Faculty, directors, etc. For myself, I assure you of a warm welcome should the providence of God open the way for your removal to Danville. You will have in detail from Dr. Breckenridge the position of the whole affair. The endowment of the professorship to which you are elected is to be raised in the Southwest. The only question was, whether you should be appointed in advance of the endowment, or after it was secured. The Assembly, it seems, has judged it best to make the appointment now, with the belief, no doubt. that your election would secure the endowment forthwith.

I hope, my dear sir, that you will be led, in the providence of God, to go to Danville, and take part in the great and hopeful work we have in hand. I have received only a telegraphic notice of your election, with no particulars. This fact, and the confusion of a steamboat, must excuse the meagreness of this note.

I shall return to Louisville in the course of three weeks, when I shall be happy to hear from you.

Very truly and respectfully,

EDWARD P. HUMPHREY.

FROM DR. EDGAR.

NASHVILLE, *July* 10, 1854.

Dr. Waddel:

MY DEAR BROTHER: Yours of the 29th ultimo reached me last night, and I hasten this morning to acknowledge its reception. I should be very sorry if you thought, from my last to you (containing the official announcement of Dr. Edgar as Moderator of the Assembly), that I wished you to come to a decision as to your filling our vacant chair at Danville before the most mature deliberation on your part had taken place. No, my dear brother, if anything I wrote left such an impression on your mind, rest assured it was not so intended, but was the result of my anxiety to have an answer from you, which I might soon publish, telling my brethren that you had accepted your appointment, thus giving joy in both our Synods, Kentucky and Nashville. I shall take no steps in the matter until I hear from you again,

when I hope to be able to say to all concerned that you have accepted the chair assigned you.

In haste, but affectionately yours, J. T. Edgar.

No. 2.

Correspondence on the Occasion of my Resignation of the Chancellorship of the University of Mississippi.

A.

Resolutions of the Board of Trustees.

Oxford, *July* 27, 1874.

Whereas the Rev. John N. Waddel, D. D., LL. D., for nine years the honored Chancellor of the University of Mississippi, did, on the 26th ultimo, tender to the Board of Trustees the resignation of his office; and whereas, in compliance with the earnest entreaty of the Board, he has kept his final decision under consideration for the space of one month, with no change of purpose, and without consenting to revoke said resignation: therefore,

Resolved, 1, That the Board feel constrained, however much they regret his decision, to accept his resignation.

Resolved, 2, That we hereby express our high appreciation of the great moral worth, and of the learning, talents, and executive ability, of the retiring chancellor.

Resolved, 3, That we tender to him our most hearty thanks for the able and efficient manner in which he has for so many years presided over the University, and discharged the delicate and responsible duties of his office.

Resolved, 4, That we hereby express our sincere wish that his steps may be guided in the paths of usefulness and honor in the future, as in the past.

B.

Dr. Garland's Note Accompanying the Resolutions of the Faculty on the Same Occasion.

University of Mississippi, *October* 9, 1874.

Dr. Waddel:

My Dear Sir: I take much pleasure in forwarding to you the accompanying extract from the journal of the Faculty.

Allow me to add that no expression of the Faculty, *collectively*, can convey to you the regret that I *individually* feel in parting with you. With the prayer that God may render your life long and useful and happy, I am truly yours,

[Signed] L. C. GARLAND,
Secretary of the Faculty.

RESOLUTIONS OF THE FACULTY OF THE UNIVERSITY.

The committee appointed to report a minute in reference to the retiring Chancellor beg leave to submit the following action:

Whereas the Rev. John N. Waddel, D. D., LL. D., the honored Chancellor of the University, and the executive organ of the Faculty, did, on the 26th of June last, tender to the Board of Trustees his resignation of the office of Chancellor, which he had so long and so honorably filled; and whereas the trustees, after earnest endeavors to prevail on said Chancellor to withdraw his resignation, did accept the same, so that he is now no longer a member of this Faculty: therefore,

Resolved, 1, That we hereby express our high appreciation of the ability and faithfulness with which our late Chancellor discharged his delicate and arduous duties.

Resolved, 2, That it is with sincere regret that we part with one with whom we have been so long and so pleasantly associated in the management of the educational interests of the University.

Resolved, 3, That our late presiding officer has our best wishes for his future usefulness and happiness.

Respectfully submitted,

[Signed] JAMES A. LYON,
J. L. JOHNSON,
F. A. JUNY,
Committee.

On motion, the above report was unanimously approved and ordered to be spread upon the journal, and the secretary instructed to furnish a copy of the same to Dr. J. N. Waddel.

UNIVERSITY OF MISSISSIPPI, *October* 9, 1874.

I do hereby certify that the above is a true copy from the journal of the Faculty.

[Signed] L. C. GARLAND, *Recording Secretary*

RESOLUTIONS OF THE STUDENTS OF THE MISSISSIPPI UNIVERSITY, ADOPTED ON THE SAME OCCASION.

REV. JOHN N. WADDEL, D. D., LL. D.

The committee appointed at a previous meeting of the students of the University of Mississippi to report suitable resolutions relative to the departure of our late Chancellor submitted the following preamble and resolutions, which were unanimously adopted, viz.:

Whereas our beloved Chancellor, Rev. John N. Waddel, D. D., LL. D., has seen fit to resign the position of Chancellor of the University, over which he has so long and faithfully presided; and whereas the said Chancellor did, on the 10th instant, take formal leave of us all in a short address, replete with affectionate and wise counsel: therefore, be it

Resolved, 1, That we deeply regret the loss from this institution of so good and great a man.

Resolved, 2, That we take great pleasure in recording the fact that Dr. Waddel has been to us not only an able and faithful instructor, but a loving and affectionate father.

Resolved, 3, That we do hereby tender to Dr. Waddel the most cordial feelings of friendship and high esteem with which we have ever regarded him, and which will remain undiminished and unchanged.

Resolved, 4, That we take this method to convey to Dr. Waddel our heartfelt wishes for the long continuance of his health, success, and happiness, as well as that of his family, and that the blessing of a kind Providence may attend him in the new field of operations to which he has been invited, and which he has accepted.

Resolved, 5, That copies of these resolutions be transmitted to Dr. Waddel, General A. P. Stewart (his successor), the trustees, and the Faculty, and that the journals of Memphis, Tenn., and of this State, friendly to the institution and to the cause of education in general, be requested to publish the same.

[Signed] E. E. BIGGER, LEWIS GREEN, JR.,
CHARLES H. LEONARD, LOUIS L. MCINNIS,
WM. ADDISON ALEXANDER, JOHN F. RIVES, JR.,
SAM'L A. WITHERSPOON,

Committee.

University of Mississippi, October 13, 1874.

No. 3.

It is recorded in the latter pages of the body of this memoir that I transmitted the communication of my resignation of Chancellor of the Southwestern Presbyterian University to individual members of the directory on the 11th of October, 1887, and this course I pursued because the necessity for it occurred at a season of the year when it would have been exceedingly difficult to bring the members of the Board together at Clarksville, and I felt bound to make known the fact without delay. Some of the Board being at hand, to them I could communicate this decision personally, but others were absent from home; hence I have but a part of the replies which I had expected. The formal acceptance of my resignation was not made known to me officially until late in March, 1888, after the Board had held a special meeting to select a successor. In the interim I received the following letters from individual directors, who were then in office, which I propose to insert, as somewhat more personal than a formal and official reply to my paper, and cherished among my most precious memorials of private association and friendship.

PRIVATE LETTERS RECEIVED FROM INDIVIDUAL MEMBERS OF THE DIRECTORY ON THE OCCASION OF MY RESIGNATION OF THE OFFICE OF CHANCELLOR OF THE SOUTHWESTERN PRESBYTERIAN UNIVERSITY.

A.

LETTER FROM REV. B. M. PALMER, D. D., LL. D.

NEW ORLEANS, LA., *October* 31, 1887.

MY DEAR DR. WADDEL: I have just returned home from a trip to New York, and find your letter of the 11th, so painful in its contents. I had sincerely hoped that your anticipations of failing health would not be realized, and that you would be spared to the University at least a few years longer. But if the fatal necessity is upon you of resigning your important and responsible office as Chancellor, we can only mourn while we submit to a decree which we have no power to resist. . . . . And now, venerable and dear brother, how shall I express the sorrow which I feel in the contemplation of your withdrawal. It is not so much for you I mourn as for ourselves. If "the house of your tabernacle"

be tumbling into ruin, you have the better portion beyond, "the house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens." But how can we do without you? The answer on your lips will be, that "no man is necessary to the Lord's work," and that "He who raised you up can supply the gap." Be it so; but who does not dread the transfer, with all the uncertainty of the change, added to our sense of personal loss and bereavement? May God's blessing rest upon your head and heart in this hour of common affliction to you and to us, and give us both grace to accept His will as the final expression of his goodness and love!

Ever affectionately and truly yours,

[Signed] B. M. Palmer.

B.

Letter from Rev. J. N. Craig, D. D.

Atlanta, Ga., *October* 14, 1887.

Dr. Waddel:

My Dear Brother: Yours of 11th inst. is to hand. I am very sorry to hear of your indisposition, and that you feel called upon to lay your resignation before the Board. Allow me a few words personally—no flattery, of course. No man has any capacity but that which God has *given*, and no man will use his gifts aright unless God leads him to do so by His grace. But I thank God for the capacity and the grace which he He has bestowed upon you, and for the long, useful, and honorable life He has permitted you to lead. My acquaintance with you has been one of the blessings and one of the joys of my life. My only boy is in your institution. If the Lord will make him to be such as yourself, I could not desire more.

I hope your usefulness is yet to last for a considerable time, but the Lord will order and scheme for you as He sees to be best; and whatever awaits you will surely be of the "all things" which are working together for your good. . . . . In any, and in all events, my best wishes and my sincere prayers will follow you and Mrs. Waddel. May our Father give her grace for her future, whatever it may be.

Sincerely your friend,

[Signed] J. N. Craig.

C

LETTER FROM G. W. MACRAE, ESQ.

MEMPHIS, TENN., *October* 13, 1887.
300 FRONT STREET.

Rev. John N. Waddel, Clarksville, Tenn.:

DEAR DOCTOR: Frequent reports of your serious illness have reached me during the past ten days, and have given me much concern. Your letter of the 11th inst., received this morning, seems to confirm the truth of them. It grieves me to be obliged to consider the matter of your resignation at all, sensible as I am of the value of your name and services to the institution. And yet I know you would not offer it unless, after careful deliberation, you believed it to be your duty to do so.

Rest and recreation will, no doubt, do much to restore your health and strength. I have no doubt that a sojourn during the winter months in a warmer climate will be of much service to you, and I think you should avail yourself of it. I hope you may soon be well enough to make the trip. With best wishes, and with the hope that you may be restored and spared many years among us,

I remain your friend and brother,

[Signed] G. W. MACRAE.

D.

LETTER FROM REV. JOSEPH BARDWELL, D. D.

YAZOO CITY, MISS., *October* 14, 1887.

Rev. J. N. Waddel, D. D., Clarksville, Tenn.:

MY DEAR BROTHER: Your letter of the 11th reached me to-day. I am truly sorry to hear of the feeble state of your health, and deeply sympathize with you. As to your resignation, I am prepared to say for myself, that I desire to keep that matter in abeyance for the present. Let it lie over at least till the end of the sessional term. I am unwilling to have you sever your connection with the University at least prior to the meeting of the Board. And even then, I would fain hope the necessity may not require it.

By all means follow the advice of your physicians and seek a less rigorous climate for the winter.

In a few words, I desire your connection with the Univer-

sity to continue through the present sessional term. . . . . If, in the Providence of God, the necessity shall be laid upon us next June to consider your resignation, we will then endeavor to meet the responsibility, asking for divine guidance.

I assure you, my dear brother, you will carry with you the affection and sympathy and prayers of every member of the Board. May the Great Head of the church direct and bless you and yours,

Sincerely and fraternally,

[Signed] Joseph Bardwell.

Communications from the Board of Directors at a Special Meeting held March 21, 1888.

A.

Official Note from the Secretary of the Board.

Clarksville, *March* 23, 1888.

Rev. J. N. Waddel, D. D.:

My Dear Brother: I wired you this morning the action of the Board, that Dr. Hersman was unanimously elected Chancellor, and Dr. Shearer vice chancellor; they also named the theological chair "The Palmer Professorship of Theology," and unanimously adopted the paper of which I enclose a copy, expressive of their feelings on accepting your resignation. We were all glad to hear of your improved health, and will be glad to see, and will expect you at the time you name. Your resignation was accepted to take effect after June Commencement, and your salary continues to that date. Kind regards to Mrs. Waddel.

Yours very truly,

[Signed] D. N. Kennedy, *Secretary.*

B.

Report of a Committee Appointed to Prepare a Minute upon the Resignation of Rev. Dr. J. N. Waddel as Chancellor of the Southwestern Presbyterian University.

In accepting the resignation of the chancellorship of the Southwestern Presbyterian University by Rev. John N.

Waddel, D. D., LL. D., the Board of Directors desire to put on record their sense of loss in this bereavement, and at the same time to express their gratitude to God that this institution has been permitted to enjoy his valued services during the most critical, because the forming period, of its history. It was a most gracious providence when the University was first established and launched upon its career, that this venerable teacher, whose whole life had been devoted to the higher education of young men, as by ancestral association he had been bound to it, even from his birth, should be at hand to guide it on its earliest career.

During the nine years in which he has presided over its fortunes, his administration has been exceptionally successful and fortunate, leaving upon it the impression of his own character and influence, by which, as we hope, it will be distinguished through coming time. And if the declining health, which compels the resignation, should prove to be the disrobing for the eternal rest, we congratulate our brother that his last work on earth should be so conspicuously his best work rendered to the church of God, in that educational sphere to which he has been consecrated throughout life.

Painful and sad as this separation may be to him, and to us, and irreparable as the loss may now appear to this institution, we cannot but rejoice in the grateful applause with which his long and useful life closes on earth.

Successive generations will rise up to bless his memory, of those whom he has trained for honor and usefulness, whilst the greater reward awaits him in the benediction of the last day, "Well done good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord!" In entering this minute in these records, and in transmitting a copy to Dr. Waddel, this Board tender to him their respectful and loving sympathy in all the bodily distress with which humanity is so generally ordained to terminate, as well as to assure him of the lasting remembrance with which his name will be cherished, as it is embalmed in the history of the University.

Our constant and fervent prayer is that his end may be peace, and his reward great in the kingdom of heaven.

[Signed]

D. N. KENNEDY, *Secretary.*

Note of Professor G. F. Nicolassen, Secretary of the Faculty, Accompanying a Copy of the Action of that Body on Occasion of the Resignation of the Chancellor.

Clarksville, *April* 5, 1888.

My Dear Dr. Waddel: It affords me very great pleasure to send you a copy of the paper adopted by the Faculty this afternoon. It was drawn up by Dr. Price, and cordially endorsed by us all. The minute will be entered on our record book, and a copy will be sent to the church and town papers.

Very truly, [Signed] G. F. Nicolassen.

C.

Action of the Faculty of the Southwestern Presbyterian University.

In view of the retirement of Dr. J. N. Waddel from the chancellorship of this institution, we desire, as a Faculty, to place on record an expression of our regret at the dissolution of the relations which have so happily subsisted between him and us during a number of years, our high esteem for him as an executive officer and instructor, and our love for him as a friend.

The obligations of this institution to Dr. Waddel cannot be fully estimated. Coming into office, as he did, at the commencement of its organization as a University, he has done much towards developing its system and imparting to it an elevated Christian spirit. His extraordinary influence over young men has been largely the cause of the high standard of morality and college honor which has been maintained by the student body, while his great reputation throughout the whole South has secured the confidence of the public in the worth and success of the institution. To him, as the presiding officer and our associate in the Faculty, we feel that we owe, in no small measure, the unbroken harmony which has prevailed in our body. His unassuming, just, and conciliatory bearing would have rendered dissensions impossible, even if the occasion for them had arisen.

As he retires from us, to spend, as we trust, a season of rest, well-earned by his laborious and useful life, we delight to render him this unanimous tribute of our veneration and affection, and to pray that he may yet live to enjoy many years of comfort and of usefulness.

[Signed] G. F. Nicolassen, *Secretary.*

D.

ACTION OF THE STUDENTS OF THE SOUTHWESTERN PRESBYTERIAN UNIVERSITY ON THE OCCURRENCE OF THE SEVENTY-FIFTH BIRTHDAY OF THE CHANCELLOR.

It became known among the students that the 2nd day of April, 1887, would mark the seventy-fifth anniversary of the birthday of Rev. J. N. Waddel, D. D. In accordance with a resolution adopted by the student body, which was kept profoundly secret from him, they agreed that immediately after morning prayer in the chapel Dr. Waddel should be addressed by a representative student, congratulated upon the occasion, and presented with a magnificent copy of the Bible in the name of the students. The chancellor having officiated as usual in leading the devotions of the Faculty and student body, was, in a most unexpected manner, addressed by Mr. W. L. Frierson, a student of high standing, from Shelbyville, Tenn., as follows:

"REVEREND SIR: On behalf of the student body, it is my pleasure this morning to extend to you our congratulations that you have so happily witnessed the close of your seventy-fifth year; that you have attained to three-quarters of a century of life, and of a life, too, which stands before us as a mirror, before which we may fitly trim and adorn the characters we are building.

"If, sir, it will gratify you to know in what high esteem you are held by the students over whom you are called to preside; if the good-will of boys can afford you any pleasure, then I am happy to say that no man could possess, in a higher degree, our love, confidence, and respect than do you. We feel toward you not merely that respect which gray hairs always command of youth, but, in addition to this, that admiration which only a noble life and a godly example can inspire. In your fair and impartial treatment of all students; in the confidence you have reposed in us; in your forbearance in the class-room, and in the general management of the institution, we have had all that the most exacting could ask. We have always found you ready and anxious to aid in our pleasure so far as consistent with our good. And when, occasionally, it has seemed best to deny us our requests, we have felt that we should yield without a murmur, reposing, as we did, full confidence in

your wisdom, and knowing full well that your action was prompted by your deep interest in our welfare. In the kindly warnings and friendly advice which you have given us in private; in the many hospitalities shown us by you and your good wife; in the hearty welcome which you have always accorded us at your home, we have recognized a father's influence. By your course, sir, you have awakened in every heart here chords of love and sympathy, which vibrate at the very mention of your name.

"In bringing a testimonial of our regard, it seems to us that the most appropriate, and that which we knew you would most highly prize, was this Book of Books, upon which, as a foundation, you have erected the towering superstructure of a Christian life, the rock upon which, we believe, the only true and enduring hopes of all ages have rested. Now, sir, I have the honor to present to you, in the name of the students, this memento, accompanied by the best wishes of our one hundred and fifty students for every day of life that yet remains for you."

Response of Dr. Waddel.

"Sir: In responding to your beautiful and eloquent address, my first remark is that this occasion is to me a complete surprise. On entering upon the regular duties of the day, I had not the slightest anticipation of such an event as has just transpired. Allow me to add that, on this very account, it is all the more to be cherished and prized. To you, young gentlemen, I have further to say that, for the emotions now struggling within, I find no adequate utterance. I cannot command language adequate to convey a true representation of the feelings which your kindness has inspired. Yet you will accept my simple and unadorned declaration that I am deeply penetrated with a grateful appreciation of the delicate thoughtfulness that gave rise to the conception of this method of observing my birthday. The graceful propriety with which the whole scene has been presented cannot fail to elicit the gratification of all present. Permit me to say, however, that "you do me honor overmuch" in the beautifully-expressed and highly-finished compliments paid me by your gifted speaker; and yet I am not sufficiently unselfish to decline accepting them, since to me they are replete with priceless value as declarations of your own

convictions. They shall be laid away in memory as treasures not to be surrendered, and among my most valued possessions.

"Let me add, that among the most kindly utterances given to-day, there is one which I honestly claim as but just to myself; that is, when speaking of my intercourse with my pupils, it was said that the characteristic of my treatment of them was uniform kindness. The larger portion of my life, now somewhat protracted, has been devoted to the practical business of teaching. From my eighteenth year almost to this day I have been associated with young men and boys. So closely have I been connected with that class that I may say, without exaggeration, that we have become, in a sense, identified. My sympathies are with them; I have come to comprehend their nature, and they have learned to appreciate my mode of thought and action in our mutual relations. Hence, as I have advanced in this line of life, I have become more and more convinced of the truthfulness and propriety of the motto often uttered from this rostrum, which accords to the student 'the largest liberty consistent with the recognition of authority,' or, to express it in fewer words, 'Liberty without license, and authority without despotism.'

"I will add, that if there does appear to be any wisdom or skill in my administration of the affairs of the institution, I hasten to point out to you the true secret of my success. Well do I remember the expression used by an eminent Georgian, long years ago, in reference to President Nott, of Union College, N. Y. Dr. Nott presided over that institution for a half century with wonderful success. That you may appreciate the force of my illustration, you must know that Union College, in those days, was considered the 'Botany Bay' for such students as could not be governed elsewhere. The gentleman who made the remark was an alumnus of that institution, and he asserted that "Dr. Nott governed Union College by prayer." I can safely say that for any success which has attended my administration, I sincerely and humbly believe that to gracious answers to prayer I am entirely indebted. Its interests, more general or minute, have formed the burden of my thoughts by day and by night. Realizing, as I do at all times, my own inability unaided, to devise that which is wise and for the best

interests of the institution, this great enterprise of Christian education, I have earnestly and habitually sought and obtained the help that has brought to us the present measure of success.

"In conclusion, I thank you for the peculiar form in which you have chosen to embody your affectionate observance of this memorial era of my life—the blessed volume of inspiration—the book of books—the one, of all others, most worthy to be prized. Most heartily and truly do I thank God that, of your number, so large a proportion are praying Christian men!

"And now, as I close these remarks, I have a request to make of you. I make it of my highly-esteemed colleagues. I make it of you, my kind-hearted and attached pupils. Give me an interest in your prayers!

"May the blessing of Almighty God, our heavenly Father, rest upon you all, both in this life and in that which is to come! Amen."

On pages 551 and 552 of this memoir, it is recorded that the ceremonies of the inauguration of the chancellor-elect, Dr. C. C. Hersman, were conducted in regular form. It is further stated that, after the conclusion of these interesting exercises, a portrait of myself was unveiled, accompanied by an address delivered in his own inimitable style by Dr. B. M. Palmer.

ADDRESS.

"LADIES AND GENTLEMEN: The pleasing duty is assigned me of drawing aside this veil and of presenting to the University, in the name of the artist, W. J. MacCormac, that which will be disclosed to view. You recognize the likeness, and I am sure that, in your grateful applause, the kind donor will find his sufficient reward.

"Two faces now hang upon these walls. In the first is revived the memory of the past; the first effort to plant here an institution of learning, to lay the foundation, hidden perhaps beneath the soil, upon which has been reared the proud superstructure we now behold. In the second is presented the realization of the early hopes—the young bud of promise expanding into the bloom of our present prosperity and enlargement. The time will come (God grant that it

be not too soon) when another picture will here be hung—the historic link between these two—presenting the face and form of one to whose wise counsel and unselfish devotion, more than to those of any living man, the transformation of Stewart College into the Southwestern Presbyterian University was accomplished:

"VENERABLE AND DEAR SIR: There are men whom we could wish to live forever, yet it would be cruel selfishness to detain you always from the world beyond the stars—

> 'Where the saints of all ages in fellowship meet,
> And the smile of the Lord is the feast of the soul;'

but we are obliged to say that we part from you to-night, in your official relations, with unspeakable sadness. Gladly as we welcome your successor, and sincerely as we pledge loyalty to him as the chieftain under whose banner we are to be led, still it pains us to the heart to see the robe of office removed from your shoulders to those of another.

"Gentlemen of the Board, and friends of the University, it was an auspicious day for Clarksville when we laid our hands upon this apostle of education in the Southwest—this Nestor among the Greeks; and we bear the willing testimony that his administration during the past nine years has been one of exceptional success.

"Dr. Waddel, after more than fifty years of active service, the infirmities of declining age induce you to seek the Tusculum where, in dignified repose, you may end your days. You are sitting in the glow of your life's sunset. Three times, in journeying to and fro between Clarksville and my distant home, I have gazed upon the splendor with which the king of day often sinks to rest. Gathering the curtains around his bed, he threw upon those clouds such a glow of mingled purple and gold as ravished the eye. The mountain cloud flung its gigantic form against the sky; along its crest and down its slope was a border of burnished gold, while the deeper blue of its body was transformed by the radiance into the richest purple, such as priest or emperor never wore. Above, around the whole, colors of brilliant hue inflamed the sky, until, in the rapture of the soul, one could but exclaim, 'Surely, this is the gate of the palace of the eternal king.'

"So, my brother, as troops of friends gather around you to-day, you may see in their admiring love the reflection of your own useful and fortunate life. The shade of your

venerated father rises before my thought, surrounded by the shades of statesmen and orators—the Calhouns, the McDuffies, the Longstreets—who shaped the age just before our own; and around your living form assemble the living forms of those who now fill the places of trust, and are shaping the destiny of the present. It is not given to many men to know that they belong to history; to read upon her scroll, beneath the fame of an illustrious sire, the resplendent fame of an equally illustrious son. It is not often given to men, amid the applauses of earth, to ascend and be with the immortals. May God in heaven, my friend and brother, bless you with peace even to the end, and give to us both to drink together of the river of life from beneath His throne!"

THE LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

THE LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 020 949 887 A